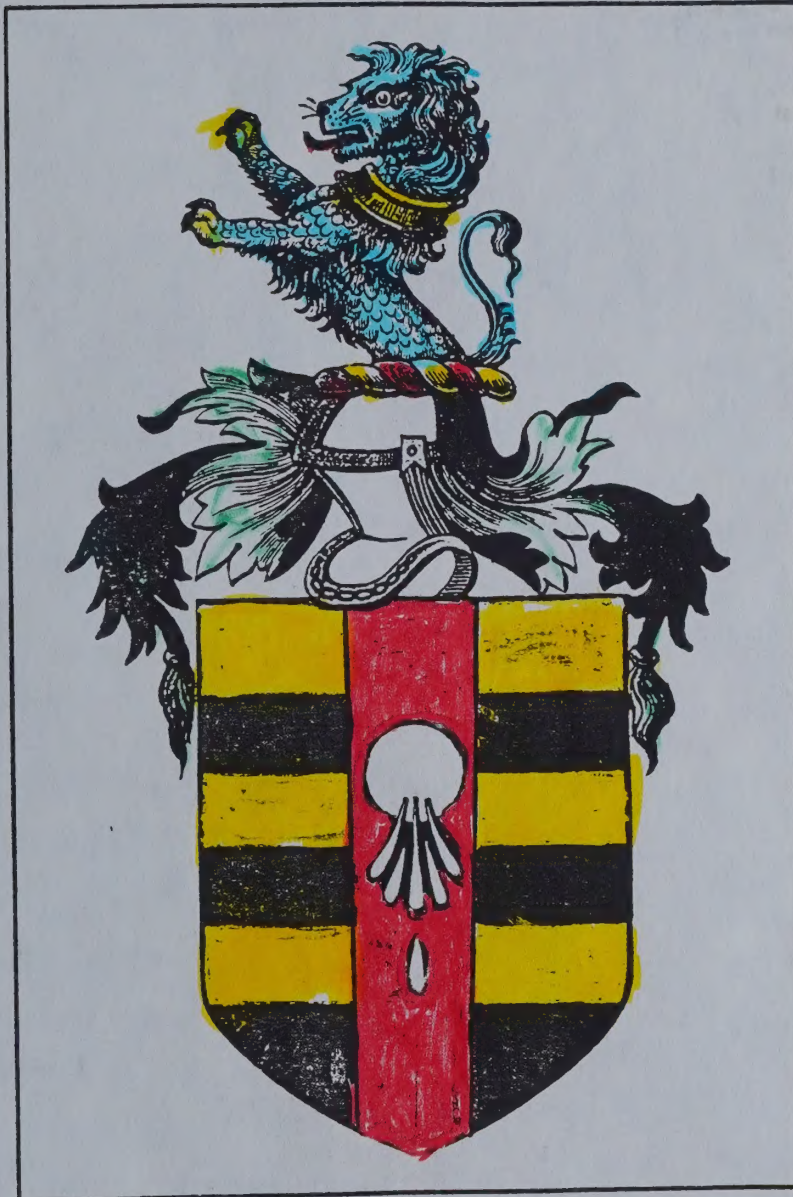


ANCESTORS AND DESCENDANTS of
REV. DWIGHT DODGE (1798-1869)
of KINGSTON, MISSOURI

by Norma Hansen Zaniewski¹¹



VOLUME ONE
Dodge Family

100



36

12 $\frac{3}{4}$

~~2~~ ~~4~~ 8 ~~3~~

2 4 4

25 $\frac{1}{4}$

25 $\frac{6}{4} =$

28 $\frac{3}{4}$ on no

18 $\frac{3}{4}$ on so

first pg -
4. elementary "

022 P3 son of
Sir John Champney

P71 - P1 - front

P72 P1 - front last
line, "as a tree"

104 - 1834

11 - new second

56 P5 - Charlotte's

husband, not Abel

89 - chat - appendix



The Author and her Great-Grandmother, Emma Adelia Dodge Dunn

The central figure of this book is the Reverend Dwight Dodge (1798-1869) who migrated to Missouri in 1846 with his family. The expert on the Dodge family in America was and probably always will be Dr. Joseph Thompson Dodge, who wrote the comprehensive genealogy a century ago. He knew only a little bit about Dwight, but had much data about those who came before. The task here is to tell about those later people whom the genealogist was not familiar with, after first reviewing those particular Dodges in Dwight's own ancestral line.

The logical beginning of any family history starts with the earliest known progenitor, who is ancestor of them all. The Dodges have selected the venerable ancient baron, Sir Peter Dodge, for this role. Feeling that others would share my frustration because all of the other books speak about Sir Peter with awe, but don't tell anything about him except to repeat what is stated in the patent for the Dodge coat of arms, a little emementary research was done to come up with material for a section about him and his place in history. It was fun doing it, but that is only a little frosting for the cake.

Having such a marvellous resource as the genealogy, it was rather simple to extract Dwight's ancestors from it. Many other periodicals and books were consulted to come up with material supplementing what others had to say about our own direct ancestors and their siblings. Because the old genealogy covers so many Dodges, any one individual, no matter how interesting, tends to get lost in the crowd. Conversely, when the story of each family unit is followed by that which comes after it (omitting the others) an interesting progressive pattern emerges. A case in point shows the progression. Our Puritan ancestor, Richard Dodge II, a prosperous farmer living not far from ancient Salem, owned a cider mill and a negro slave named Mingo. Two hundred years later his great-great-great-great grandson Billy Dodge was wounded in the Civil War fighting against slavery.

To make a project like this feasible, one has to have source material. Writer has three good ones which have not been used by anyone else before, as far as I know. The last one to be listed was the true inspiration for this book.

(1) The first and easiest pool of information to explain, is that I have been able to figure out the identities of most of the other ancestors were (not bearing the Dodge surname) of Reverend Dwight Dodge. The missing ancestors are the families or progenitors of William Chubb born about 1684 and Abigail Smith born about 1734. Dwight was born 1798 in Sturbridge, Massachusetts, raised in New Hampshire, had his children in New York Finger Lakes region and migrated to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1846. Such a man could not help but be interesting. Some of his ancestors were fascinating. Many of those families go back into medieval England.

DODGE FAMILY

Short family histories will be presented for each of those lines. They will be brief because otherwise this work would be overwhelmed, but source material will be listed in every case, should anyone reading them want to learn more.

(2) The second source is an unpublished genealogy in scrapbook form kept up for at least a generation by my mother's third cousin, a charming man named George Dodge who lived in Hamilton, Missouri. He did not have access to resources now available in large cities like microfilm copies of censuses, reference books, or the data at Latter Day Saint stake family history centers, yet what a collection of data he had!

He visited libraries during trips to New York and Minneapolis and, before the advent of Xerox machines he painstakingly hand copied the patent for the coat of arms, Richard I's will, first names and the children's names for each successive generation. More importantly, he kept a collection of articles clipped from newspapers in his home town every time anyone even remotely related or married to a Dodge was mentioned, which was often. Many clippings concerned social events, but there were also marriage and death notices, also excerpts from the county history. He had a treasured copy of Rev. Dwight Dodge's obituary.

George worked in the public a long time. He often met near-relatives and must have asked about who married whom and about the families. Sometimes the informants garbled names or were confused. He had the presence of mind to put it on paper anyway, so we can check it out. An older cousin who belonged to a patriotic society based on heritage gave him valuable information which might otherwise have been lost. Sometimes she or other informants conjectured in assigning wrong parents to a few early 19th century cousins, but you could tell he was beginning to catch on, though he had a trusting nature. Like myself, he sought but was unable to find answers to some problems, such as who were the spouses and children of the two sisters (Dwight's children) who migrated to California. I wish someone with the answers to that could see this and contact me!

George intended to keep his book in order but often got carried away, jotting note upon note on already typed pages whenever people told him things, while it was still fresh in his mind. Because of that, it took a little effort to search out the information most useful for this book--but well worth it, since many of his entries are of things I never would have found out any other way.

This gracious and charming Dodge gentleman permitted my brother, sister, and me, whom he scarcely knew except that we were part Dodge, too, to take his precious book and photocopy it, just because we were so interested in those same ancestors. He probably felt lost until it was returned safely to him.

These things must be done. The only way to do this is to have a complete and thorough investigation of the situation. This will require the cooperation of all concerned parties. It is essential that the investigation be conducted in a fair and impartial manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action.

The investigation will be conducted by a committee of representatives from all concerned parties. The committee will be responsible for gathering all relevant information and for conducting a thorough analysis of the situation. The committee will also be responsible for recommending appropriate actions to be taken. It is essential that the committee be given the necessary resources and authority to carry out its duties.

The investigation will be conducted in a confidential manner. It is essential that the information gathered during the investigation be kept confidential. This will ensure that the investigation is conducted in a fair and impartial manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action. It is essential that the investigation be conducted in a timely manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action.

The investigation will be conducted in a fair and impartial manner. It is essential that the investigation be conducted in a fair and impartial manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action. It is essential that the investigation be conducted in a timely manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action.

The investigation will be conducted in a fair and impartial manner. It is essential that the investigation be conducted in a fair and impartial manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action. It is essential that the investigation be conducted in a timely manner. The results of the investigation will be used to determine the appropriate course of action.

DODGE FAMILY

Because of the limited scope of this narrative, only a fraction of George's large collection of data can be used. I hope his book is being kept safe, and wish it could be made available to the public, though something like that would be up to his immediate family. My book is about the ancestors and about Dwight's children, not about descendants as his is, except to wind up the story with mention of my own direct line. His book would make a nice supplement to be used in connection with this, since this follows only the daughter, Emma, and he followed her brothers and sisters, particularly her oldest brother Silas. He also has other little treats, such as brief genealogies of his Hull and Alvord lines. We are so grateful to George!

(3) Third and last, are my precious pages of the Dodge Family Bible and the unwritten family stories and traditions that have been kept alive in our family over these many years, and which I am afraid will soon be lost for all time unless I pass them on in writing. They have been told and retold so many times it is possible they have lost details in the telling. Who is to say if they have come down exactly as they started out? The point is to preserve what there is to remember. I wish I had listened better when I was a child, but people just don't.....

I suppose not every family has so many tales that go back a century and a half, though undoubtedly some do. By way of explaining this, Dwight's widow, Lydia (Pearce) Dodge and youngest daughter, Emma, (whom I remember--my great grandmother) never tired of telling about how things were in New York or in early Caldwell County. My grandmother absorbed all that like a sponge. She adored her grandmother, Lydia, who lived next door and died when she was twelve. You'd have to meet my grandmother to understand it better, but for some reason she thought she had to talk a lot to be a good hostess, and the conversation often drifted to the lives of her ancestors. Not only that, but Emma told those stories to my mother, Ada, who at age 90 is still repeating the stories, too.

I left home early and moved to another state. Whenever I return to the scenes of my childhood, sometimes they are gone--like the one-room elementary school I attended, houses I grew up in, people, and even entire small communities have vanished. I'm all for progress if it is for the best, but it is sad to know that soon the old places and the old stories about those loved ones will fade away never to be remembered again. Maybe if I can save even a few inconsequential memories someone will read them someday and traces of their lives will not pass into oblivion. The hour groweth late.

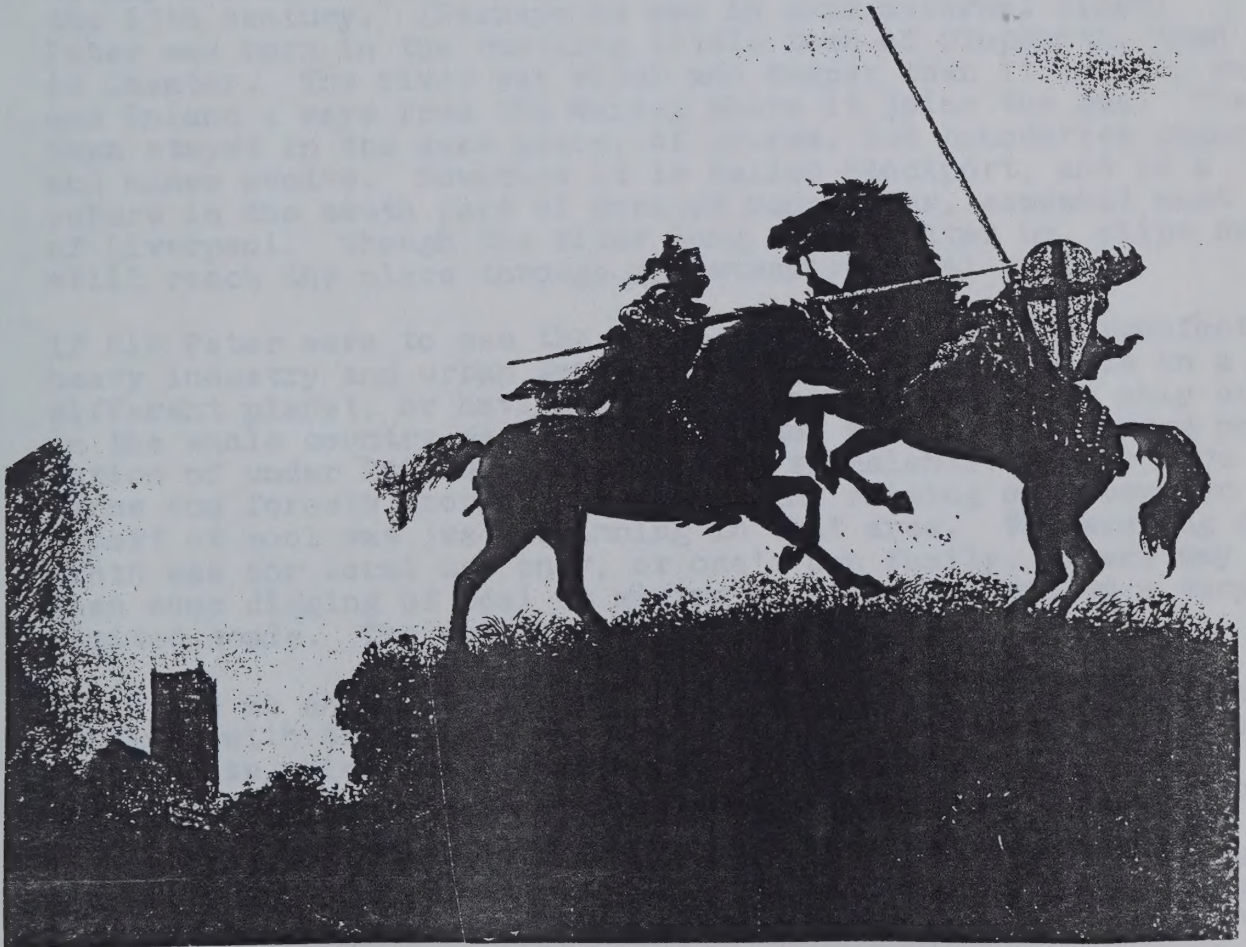
DODGE FAMILY

THE LEGEND OF SIR PETER DODGE

This part is dedicated to my grandson Nate who, even as a toddler, was fascinated by the idea of having his very own medieval knight ancestor, the Baron Sir Peter Dodge, and also to all the other youngsters privileged to share this marvellous legacy.

Just who was "Baron Pierre Doidge" (his French name) who fought so valiantly for his King? You won't find him in any history book, so this is a simple little historical attempt to answer that question. You grownups who want to get straight to the genealogy part can skip this part if you want to. It is not must reading.

If Sir Peter were to appear miraculously before our very eyes, we could ask him. Problem is, likely you would have such a hard time trying to understand him you might give up. He spoke an earlier version of "Middle English." The language we speak today had not yet evolved but if you want to get an idea, you might go to the library and get a copy of "Canterbury Tales" by Chaucer. He spoke a more northerly and even earlier dialect a hundred years before, but he and the people in the book could have conversed easily. The pictures will give you an idea of what they wore.



THE HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

The history of the United States is a story of growth and change. It begins with the first settlers who came to the continent, and continues through the years of exploration, settlement, and the struggle for independence. The story is one of a people who have built a nation of freedom and opportunity, and who have fought to defend those values against all enemies.

The early years of the United States were marked by a period of rapid expansion. The country grew from a small collection of colonies to a vast nation that stretched across the continent. This growth was driven by a combination of factors, including the desire for land, the search for new markets, and the need for a strong central government.

As the United States grew, it also became more diverse. People from many different backgrounds and cultures came to live in the new nation, and their presence helped to shape the country's identity. This diversity was a source of strength, as it allowed the United States to draw on the talents and skills of people from all over the world.

Despite the challenges it faced, the United States emerged as a powerful nation. It was a nation that stood for freedom and democracy, and that was willing to fight to defend those values. This commitment to freedom and democracy has been one of the defining characteristics of the United States ever since.



DODGE FAMILY

The English language is based on ancient Saxon, Danish, Celtic, Latin and Norman French--or on the tongues of whoever invaded the island. It is still changing. Some of the words you use are different from those of your grandparents. Though England is only a small island country, the people there even today sometimes have difficulty understanding one another. In parts of the northeast some people use words left over from the Vikings and in Cornwall from the Celts. Whatever dialect Peter spoke, you may be sure he also spoke Norman French, for he was an ambitious man.

How sad that we could not really understand Sir Peter! But we still would love to know what he looked like. Was he tall or short, blonde, brunette or redhead? It is said redheads were scrappy people back then--maybe he was a redhead with strong muscles. We do know he wore a heavy metal suit of armor, and his shield was emblazoned with his own coat-of-arms, the one you see on the cover of this book. He rode a huge war horse. It had to be huge to carry all that weight. Alongside him was an honor-guard carrying the Dodge coat-of-arms on a very large battle flag that could be seen far away.

Since scholars seem to think the name "Dodge" is of Saxon origin, he may not have been a Norman but the people in power were in the 13th century. (Perhaps he was in some maternal line?) Peter was born in the bustling little town of Stopworth, then in Chester. The river was wider and deeper than it is now, and was inland a ways from the Mersey where it joins the sea. The town stayed in the same place, of course, but boundaries change and names evolve. Nowadays it is called Stockport, and is a suburb in the south part of Greater Manchester, somewhat east of Liverpool. Though the river long since silted up, ships can still reach the place through an extensive canal system.

If Sir Peter were to see the place today with all the manufacturing, heavy industry and urban sprawl, he might suspect he was on a different planet, or having a surrealistic dream. The only city in the whole country was far-away London with its congested population of under 200,000, some of them transients. There were farms and forests around Stopworth. The raising of sheep for export of wool was just beginning in that area. The weaving of cloth was for local use only, or one's own family. There may have been some digging of coal or mining of minerals, but on a very limited scale. The countryside was pretty.

Peter was an enterprising man. His family would have been somewhat involved with trade, for Stopworth was a place where ships brought merchandise which was exchanged with the local people for the area's products. But Dodges have always loved agriculture, so that may have been their primary occupation. However, to get ahead in the Middle Ages one had to be prepared to lead one's own tenants and serfs into battle when the monarch or overlord asked. Might made right. Law and order in the modern sense existed nowhere in the world.

The English language is based on a mixture of Latin, Greek, and other sources. It is a very rich language, and it is one of the most important languages in the world. It is the language of science, of literature, and of the most advanced cultures. It is the language of the future, and it is the language of the present. It is the language of the world, and it is the language of the human race.

It is a language that is constantly evolving, and it is a language that is constantly being enriched. It is a language that is constantly being used, and it is a language that is constantly being loved. It is a language that is constantly being taught, and it is a language that is constantly being learned. It is a language that is constantly being spoken, and it is a language that is constantly being written. It is a language that is constantly being read, and it is a language that is constantly being heard. It is a language that is constantly being seen, and it is a language that is constantly being felt. It is a language that is constantly being thought, and it is a language that is constantly being dreamed. It is a language that is constantly being lived, and it is a language that is constantly being loved.

It is a language that is constantly being used, and it is a language that is constantly being loved. It is a language that is constantly being taught, and it is a language that is constantly being learned. It is a language that is constantly being spoken, and it is a language that is constantly being written. It is a language that is constantly being read, and it is a language that is constantly being heard. It is a language that is constantly being seen, and it is a language that is constantly being felt. It is a language that is constantly being thought, and it is a language that is constantly being dreamed. It is a language that is constantly being lived, and it is a language that is constantly being loved.

It is a language that is constantly being used, and it is a language that is constantly being loved. It is a language that is constantly being taught, and it is a language that is constantly being learned. It is a language that is constantly being spoken, and it is a language that is constantly being written. It is a language that is constantly being read, and it is a language that is constantly being heard. It is a language that is constantly being seen, and it is a language that is constantly being felt. It is a language that is constantly being thought, and it is a language that is constantly being dreamed. It is a language that is constantly being lived, and it is a language that is constantly being loved.

It is a language that is constantly being used, and it is a language that is constantly being loved. It is a language that is constantly being taught, and it is a language that is constantly being learned. It is a language that is constantly being spoken, and it is a language that is constantly being written. It is a language that is constantly being read, and it is a language that is constantly being heard. It is a language that is constantly being seen, and it is a language that is constantly being felt. It is a language that is constantly being thought, and it is a language that is constantly being dreamed. It is a language that is constantly being lived, and it is a language that is constantly being loved.

DODGE FAMILY

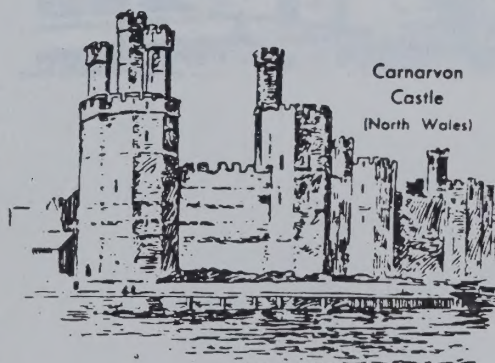
When Peter was a young man King Edward I, his beloved monarch, was fighting to conquer Wales not so very far to the west. Nothing in the records suggests our young Knight ancestor went there to help out, but maybe he did, living so close. Somewhere he acquired the skills to become a fine military leader. The battles of the English in Northern Wales were quite successful. Many of the grand old castles they built during the conquest, and to retain power, are still standing there, a marvel for all to see.

From that time onward, Wales is part of England. As a gesture to calm the Welsh, King Edward made his son and intended heir "Prince of Wales," and so it has been ever since.

Soon after the victories in Wales, King Edward I, "Hammer of the Scots" needed soldiers and leaders to fight "the evil Balliol" so he could rule Scotland. Naturally our Hero volunteered. Besides being so patriotic, he could make a big name for himself. Also, to the victor went the spoils of war.

Sir Peter led his men in battle during the fierce and bloody sieges of Dunbar and Berwick in Scotland. In fact, they fought hard and bravely and won a number of battles. Sir Peter was "conspicuous for the advancement and good content" of his sovereign Lord, King Edward I "and in recompense of said service, and by his special grace," the King "awarded to Peter Dodge and to his heirs forever, the Lordship of Podenhughe, with the Barony of Coldingham, in the Kingdom of Scotland." What a wonderful honor!

We don't know if Peter stayed there to take up his Barony or not. It really wasn't safe there, as the wars went on--and on--and on for hundreds of years. Things are different now, of course. And it has been said that there are a few people named Dodge still living on the borders in that very area. Of course other people, bearing Sir Peter's arms, did remain in and around Stopworth.



DODGE FAMILY

Ancient Podenhughe no longer exists. Berwick and Dunbar are right there on the map of Scotland, so you can see Sir Peter's army must have been quite successful to conquer such a chunk of territory for England for a while, though the Scots won it back some time later. Melrose Abbey figured in the fighting, and its ruins are still there, its beauty marred in much later fighting in other wars.

If details of the battles were written down they hve since been destroyed in the fighting and looting. Most of the people living there were illiterate. Since the territory later returned to Scotland, what stories there are about those battles are told from the Scots' point of view.

Of course the Scots did not jump for joy because they lost the battles, but you can see from Sir Walter Scott's poem that Sir Peter was magnanimous in victory, for he spared the life of Sir Richard Smaylhome of Coldingham, allowing him and his wife to escape to the safety of Melrose Abbey. It also shows that Sir Peter got to be Baron of Coldingham by defeating this man in battle.



CHICAGO HIST. SOC.

Walter Scott

Ruins of historic Melrose Abbey in Scotland

EWING GALLOWAY



DODGE FAMILY

Sir Walter Scott was fascinated with folk ballads of the Scottish border from the time he was a youngster and began a life-long avocation of collecting them and learning the local history which lay behind them in an ancient War-ravaged, desolate area where nobody could read or write except an occasional cleric in one of the local monasteries. Even those records were usually destroyed by war and looting.

The old Celts there were not literate but they were bright and (witness modern Ireland) they never forgot an ancient grudge. Bards and troubadours were trained as a special class who memorized events from their point of view, and even genealogical lines, and preserved them in song.

Soon after his marriage in 1797, Scott was appointed "sheriff-dispute" of Selkirke. The position gave him wide access to research in the area, the people, and the ancient ballads. Of course, he put it all in writing. He came to realize that in order to preserve his findings they would have to be published. To attract broad appeal he did polish them up to take off the rough spots. Hopefully, he did not polish too much.

EVE OF ST. JOHN

His arms shone full bright; - in the beacon's red light
His plume, it was scarlet and blue;
On his shield was a hound, in a silver leash bound
And his crest was a branch of the yew.
Yet hear but my word, my noble Lord!
For I heard her name his name;
And that lady bright, she called the knight
Sir Richard of Coldingham.

- - - - -
The varying light deceived thy sight;
And the wild winds drowned the name;
For the Dryburgh bells ring, and the white monks do sing
for Sir Richard of Coldingham.
There is a nun in Dryburgh bower
Ne'er looks upon the Sun,
There is a Monk in Melrose Tower
He speaketh word to none.
That Nun, who ne'er beholds the day
That Monk who speaks to none,
That Nun, was Smaylhome's Lady Gay,
That Monk the bold Baron.

Sir Walter Scott

The first thing I saw when I stepped out of the car was a bright, sunny day. The air was warm and the sun was shining brightly. I looked around and saw a large, open field with some trees in the distance. I felt a sense of freedom and peace. I took a deep breath and smiled. This was exactly what I needed. I had been so stressed and busy lately, and this was a perfect escape. I walked slowly, enjoying the feel of the grass under my feet. The birds were singing, and the wind was gentle. It was a beautiful day, and I was so lucky to be here.

The old lady across the street was looking at me. She had a kind, weathered face and a warm smile. She waved her hand and called out to me. I stopped and looked back at her. She was an elderly woman, but she had a youthful spirit. She told me that she had lived in this house for many years and that she loved the neighborhood. She said that the people here were friendly and that the air was clean. I thanked her and continued on my way. She was a nice person, and I felt good to have met her.

When I got to the store, I saw a sign that said "Fresh Produce". I went in and saw a variety of fruits and vegetables. There were apples, oranges, bananas, and many different types of vegetables. I picked up a few items and went to the checkout. The cashier was a young woman with a friendly smile. She scanned my items and gave me a receipt. I paid for my groceries and left the store. I felt satisfied with my purchase and happy to be back home.

END OF STORY

His name was John. He was a young man with a bright smile and a kind heart. He was a student at the local university and was studying for his degree. He was a member of the student council and was very active in his school. He was also a member of the sports team and was a very good athlete. He was a popular person and had many friends. He was a very nice person and was always willing to help others. He was a very good person and was a very good friend.

The young lady was looking at him. She was a beautiful young woman with long, dark hair and a bright smile. She was a student at the same university as John and was also a member of the student council. She was a very nice person and was always willing to help others. She was a very good person and was a very good friend. She was a very beautiful young woman and was a very good person. She was a very good friend and was a very nice person.

DODGE FAMILY



Stockport is in the left center area of this modern map of England. The Scottish border area where Sir Peter fought is a little bit up the coast from Berwick-upon-Tweed shown at top, near Edinburgh, Scotland.

DODGE FAMILY

Map of border area showing places near Edinburgh in southeastern Scotland where Sir Peter Dodge and his forces won the battles.



DODGE FAMILY

King Edward and Baliol. You can skip this section if you like. This is just a little over-simplified sketch of what led up to the wars on the Scottish Borders in which Sir Peter Dodge became involved.

Edward I inherited the throne of England and Normandy in 1272, roughly 200 years after his ancestor, William the Conqueror, came over from Falaise. He was in Sicily on his way back from the last of the Crusades with King Louis IX of France when he received the news of his father's death. At age 33, he had already waged a successful battle to put down an uprising against his father, Henry III; journeyed to the Holy Land to fight; and toured the Mediterranean. He was in no great hurry to assume the crown he knew would be waiting for him or the burdens of the reforms his father had begun, knowing that this would be an enormous task if he wanted to do it right. It took him two years to get back.

Then Edward went about establishing a much improved system of justice and a complicated code of laws, also many governmental reforms which were quite remarkable when you consider that his grandfather had been the notorious King John who had been forced to sign the Magna Charta. (All of this was a few hundred years too early in history for anyone to consider the "little guy," however.) He did improve the government.

In a few years he was interrupted by a serious uprising of the restless Welsh, who had always resented having an English king as overlord. It took a long time and a lot of hard fighting to crush the resistance in Wales, during which time he had many huge and spectacular castles built, especially on the north seacoast of that country, to rule and to defend his conquests. Some of them are in remarkable condition to this day.

From the start, England wanted to own Scotland. Royal marriages helped maintain the peace for a long time, until little Margaret, "Maid of Norway" (1283-1290) became Queen of Scotland. The child was grand-daughter of King Alexander III of Scotland and a lineal descendant of William the Lion. Alexander named her heiress-presumptive of the throne when she was a year old. He died two years later and she was made queen under the regency. In an attempt to unite the two thrones, King Edward I of England arranged to have her betrothed to his own little son Edward II Prince of Wales, one year younger.

When Queen Margaret was seven years old, it was decided it would be nice for the young couple to meet, and that Margaret should journey to England to see her intended. Enroute she died of mysterious causes. Her death precipitated civil strife in Scotland over who should succeed her on the throne. There was a mad scramble of claimants.

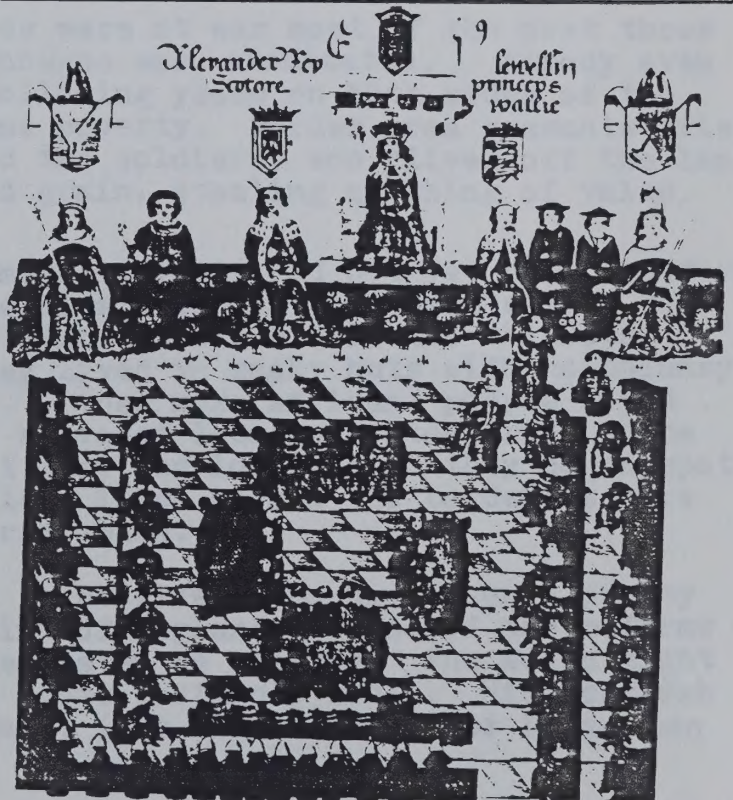
DODGE FAMILY

Edward was disappointed that the two kingdoms would not be united by a royal marriage. However, he was not the type to let opportunity pass him by. He appointed himself arbiter in the dispute between the claimants, hearing all the sides. Actually he was searching for one he could dominate. He knew he must act quickly.

One of the claimants was John de Baliol, Jr., scion of an old Anglo-Norman family starting with Guido de Baliol who came with William the Conqueror. They owned huge estates in Durham and Northumberland near the border. John, Sr., founded Baliol College, one of the earliest of those comprising Oxford University. He claimed the throne through his maternal grandmother, who was descended from William the Lion's older brother. If that sounds sort of convoluted, it should be stated that relatives of Scotch monarchs usually did not live long, often meeting mysterious ends. Margaret had been the last of Alexander's descendants.



Left-Statue of Edward I as weeper at a funeral. Below-Edward meets his Parliament (notice Alexander III of Scotland and Llewelyn, Prince of North Wales).



DODGE FAMILY

Robert Bruce, Sir William Wallace, and others also were after the throne, but Edward thought Baliol would be the easiest to control, and chose him on the condition that he swear allegiance to Edward as overlord. Baliol was then crowned at Scone Abbey in the year 1292.

Edward I became a busybody, meddling in Scottish concerns. Soon the people chafed under that state of affairs. When the situation became intolerable Baliol revolted. He was imprisoned and compelled to abdicate. Edward then claimed sovereignty over Scotland for himself. He removed the Stone of Destiny on which Scottish kings had always been crowned from the Scone Palace and had it installed in Westminster Abbey.

Balliol died in Castle Gaillard in Normandy in 1299. About the time of his expulsion, it is said that Sir Pierre Dodge of Stopworth, County Chester, England was proclaimed to have shown great valor at the siege of Berwick and Dunbar in the service of King Edward I of England, and that he defeated the local Scottish Baron, Sir Richard Smaylhome of Coldingham, and usurped his lands as spoils of war, in lieu of a salary. He then became "Lord of Podenhughe and Baron of Coldingham." If his coat-of-arms were not awarded to him at that time (probably he already had them) at least they were taken favorable notice of and recorded by the heralds. The Dodge arms are among the oldest in the records.

After that the two countries were at war most of the next three centuries. Evidently Podenhughe was eradicated. Nobody even knows where it was. The following years on both sides of the border were times of extreme poverty. Border area peasants tried to hide from the barons and the soldiers, who "lived off the land" by eating their animals and grain, stealing anything of value.

The trees of the great primeval forests had not yet been destroyed so people hid in them, less afraid of the wild beasts than the even wilder thieves and cut-throats who hid in the thickets. Crime went unpunished. They lived in smoky huts with no chimneys, dirt floors, no sanitation. Other more affluent people lived in cold stone dwellings in elevated locations, too crude to be called castles but at least they had lookouts so they could spot approaching danger. The bleak lives of all the borderers were made worse still by the border wars.

Just so you know, Edward I is considered to have been a pretty good king from the standpoint of England because of the reforms he made, and of the justice system he started. The Welsh might argue about that, and the Scots certainly would. His Scottish victories were only temporary. (The land Baron Peter Dodge won reverted to Scotland.)

DODGE FAMILY

In the next generation Robert the Bruce and his son, David, became Scottish kings. However, the puppet Baliols still had not given up. Edward de Baliol, son of the man who died in the castle in Normandy, invaded Scotland as head of the barons displaced by Bruce. He landed at Fife, slew the regent Mar, and was crowned King of Scotland at Scone Abbey.

He did homage to Edward III (grandson of Edward I) to whom he surrendered ancient Lothian. Because he gave up such a vital part of Scotland, Scottish patriots forced him to flee to England for refuge. Edward III forced his restoration. Twenty years later this latest Baliol surrendered the entire Kingdom of Scotland to the English king in return for a pension of L2000. He died at Doncaster, Yorkshire, England, the last of his line.

The English monarch had finally won control of Scotland, but not the hearts of the people. Skirmishes continued long after, but the "evil Baliols" were gone forever.

Some references for background on Sir Peter Dodge and King Edward I are:

Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, Massachusetts -
Professor Joseph Thompson Dodge, 2 Volumes, 1894 & 1898

Ancestors and Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898 - Marilyn and
Phillip Slinger, limited edition 1976

A History of England, Vol. I, Prehistory to 1714 - Clayton Roberts
and David Roberts (Prentice Hall)

The Oxford Illustrated History of Britain - edited by Kenneth O.
Morgan (Oxford University Press 1984)

American Peoples Encyclopedia

English Social History - G. M. Trevelyan (Longmans et al, London 1946)

Discovering Britain & Ireland - National Geographic Society, 1985

Poems of Sir Walter Scott

THE DODGE COAT OF ARMS



Arms: Barry of six or and sable; on a pale gules, a woman's dugge distilling drops of milk proper.
Crest: A demi sea-lion azure, collared, maned, and finned or.

The first patent for the Dodge Coat of Arms was written in Norman French. We could not understand it. The photocopy on the next page is an exact translation. Actually the Dodge Arms were being used even before that, and the patent merely confirms them and records the granting of the barony to Sir Pierre Dodge.

The earliest arms were initiated by the military leaders, themselves out of necessity, rather than conferred by some monarch, so that their men could identify them in battle. A man covered head-to-toe with chain mail, or later with plate armor with only a slit to look out of, could not be recognized. They couldn't even see him. (A cloak covering metal also kept one from being cooked alive in the summer sun.) The wearing of the insignia on the knight's cloak and on his shield enabled his troops to follow him easily.

Even in prehistoric times some need for identification was necessary, even if it were only war paint and a few feathers.

DODGE FAMILY

First patent Coat of Arms, to Peter Dodge (translated from Norman French:

"To all Men loving Nobleness, Virtue and Chivalry: and to all Ladies, and maidens of honor, of honest deportment and gentillesse, and to each of them:

I, James Hedingley, called Guyen King of Arms: Greeting in Peace and good Speed. Above all, that which appertains to the honorable office of a Herald is first; to record the good fame and renown of all honest and virtuous persons. So, likewise it is suitable and fit, to Give and set in order to such persons, Ensigns and Arms of honor; so, that their noble and vallant deeds of arms, may be preserved in perpetual remembrance.

And therefore having regard to the loyal and Vallant service of PETER DODGE, a Native of the Town of Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen: which he has done and performed to my most dear and Sovereign Lord, by the Grace of God, King of England, Lord of Ireland, and Duke of Guyen, as well as in several battles against his great enemy and rebel, Baliol, King of Scotland and Vassal of England: as likewise at the sieges of Berwick and Dunbar: there, where, in his duty and vallant courage, he was conspicuous for the advancement of his renown and the good content of my said Sovereign Lord, who, in recompence of his said service, and by his Special Grace, Gave to Him, and to his Heirs forever, the Lordship of Podenhughe, with the Barony of Coldingham, in the Kingdom of Scotland.

I have thought it therefore convenient in the performance of my office, to Grant him Arms accordingly, and specially for two reasons: the one for having vallantly served towards the King's peace and the public good: the other, that his heirs and successors by the remembrance of his honour and valor, may be encouraged to follow him, always in like virtue and noble conduct. And for which cause: Know Ye: That I, the aforesaid Guyen, have given and Granted to the said PETER DODGE, that from henceforth, he may carry his Shield: 'Barry of Six: Or and Sable: on a Pale gules, a Woman's Breast Gouttant:' which Arms appear, here in view depicted. I, Guyen King of Arms, have given and Confirmed to the said PETER DODGE and to his heirs forever, to have, enjoy and use the same: and in them to be adorned and clothed, for the advancement of their honour, as well in all Triphumps, Jousts, Tournaments, and other deeds of Arms, as also in Martial matters and enterprises, that may be requisite in peace or in war, in all places and at all times, according to their pleasure, without the impeachment of any person or persons.

In Testimony of which I have here Subjoined my Seal.

Given the 8th day of April, the Thirty Fourth Year of the reign of our said Sovereign Lord, Edward, Son of King Henry; after the Conquest, the First of that name."

Second Patent, to John Dodge, Rotham, Kent:

"To all Nobles, and Gentles, Reading Hearing or Seeing these Letters present: Thomas Hawley, as Clarencieux principal Herald and King of Arms, of the South, East and West parts of the Realm of England from the River Trent Southwards, sendeth due and humble Commendation and Greeting; Equity willet, and Reason ordereth, that men virtuous, and of noble courage be by their merits and good renown rewarded; not only their persons in this moral life, so brief and transitory, but also after them, those that shall be of their body descended: to the end that by their ensample, others may the more enforce themselves, to get the renown of ancient Nobles, in their Lines and posterities, and forasmuch as JOHN DODGE of Rotham in the County of Kent, Gentlemen is descended of a House bearing Arms, as appeareth by an ancient Patent of Arms, granted and given by Jacques (James) Hedingley as Guyen King of Arms the viiith day of April, in the xxxviii (sic) Year of the Reign of King Edward the First, to PETER DODGE, born in Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen: then being as more plainly appeareth by the said Patent, of the which the said JOHN is descended. Therefore the said Clarencieux King of Arms by the authority and power annexed, attributed, given and granted by the King, our Sovereign Lord, by express words, under his most noble Great Seal, to me, and to my office of Clarencieux King of Arms; Do Ratify, Set forth, Confirm and Grant to the said JOHN DODGE, Gentlemen, for him, and his posterity the said Arms, with a Crest thereunder in manner as hereafter followeth, that is to say; Gold and Sable, Barry of Six pieces: on a Pale Gules, a Woman's pappe, gouttant, Situ. Upon his Helmet, on a Torse, gold and azure; a Demi-Lyon marym: Sable, langued and armed gules: about his neck a Gemmel Gold, manteld Gules, Doble, Situ: as more plainly appeareth depicted in the margin. To have and to hold the said Crest and Arms to the said JOHN DODGE, Gentlemen, for him and his posterity, and they it to use and enjoy evermore.

In Witness whereof, I, the said Clarencieux King of Arms have signed this present Confirmation with my hand and set the Seal of my office of Clarencieux King of Arms. Given and Granted at London the xvth day of December, in the xxxviiiith year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord Henry the Eighth, by the Grace of God, King of England, France and Ireland. Defender of the Faith and of the Church of England and Ireland, on Earth, the Supreme Head."

DODGE FAMILY

Coats of arms enabled the great landholders and their followers to distinguish one another in time of war, or keep the group together during the Crusades. There is no evidence that arms in the early days were granted by the Crown. They were adopted much as a tradesman adopts a trademark, and were regarded as a specie of private property, governed by custom rather than rules.*

The earliest government involvement may have been through legal suits of the type prosecuted nowadays to prevent infringement upon copyrights. The custom came into general use near the end of the 12th century. By 1245 the heralds in England were recording them on ancient rolls, and the Dodge arms were among the earliest recorded. The Heralds' College in England was not involved in issuing royal patents until the reign of Richard III (1483-5) and by then the whole system was an anachronism due to the new invention of gunpowder which somewhat changed the way of waging war.

The newly elaborate coats of arms (not nearly so beautiful as the more simple earlier ones) issued and recorded by the Heralds' College probably came about for two reasons: (1) The monarch need a way to record his potential troops for organizational purposes. (2) During the time of the Tudors especially, selling patents was a way to raise money when royal coffers ran low, as they often did due to excessive costs of the wars they were forever waging. (After the scare from the Spanish Armada, Elizabeth I did achieve a long period of peace, finally.)

A side effect of the granting of coats of arms to newly-rich royal subjects was that the new members of the elite tended to become strong supporters of the monarch. One of the reasons the Tudors were among the more successful monarchs as a class, is their final realization, after centuries of repression of the people by their predecessors, that they could collect more taxes from a prosperous populace. The Tudors encouraged commerce, trade unions and guilds, travel, manufactures, and entrepreneurs of every ilk. Thus encouraged, many became wealthy and wanted to be considered above the crowd. Some very creative pedigrees came about under King Henry VIII - the very king under whom the second patent for the Dodge Coat of Arms was granted to John Dodge, Gentleman, of Rotham, Kent.

Finally we are getting down to the reason the writer is making such a big fuss about this subject. Some people might even say it is irrelevant, but I think as a Dodge descendant, proud of the ancient coat of arms, you may as well be prepared to

* Recommended reading:

New England Register 82:146-7 "A Roll of Arms Registered by the Committee on Heraldry of the New England Historic Genealogical Society" - G. Andrews Moriarty

defend it. There are a good many "experts" running around out there, writing or lecturing on the subject, who say they "don't believe in a single one of the ancient patents!" Those people love to point out that under the Tudors the newly-rich could pay an exorbitant fee and buy a fabulous past, then strut around having suddenly become one of the gentry. And you can say you know that, but the Dodges were using their coat of arms long before the Tudors came to the throne. There was no Heralds' College when those arms were first recorded. They go way, way back and they are real.

Now, having said all that, there were some very curious elements in that first patent. John Dodge, being an intelligent man, undoubtedly realized that. Possibly his centuries-old document had crumbled over the years, or the ink had faded over the years so that it could not be preserved and had to be copied a few times (like some old Greek copies of the Bible, for instance). Perhaps in the copying some comments were preserved in other copies, mistaking them for the original. Maybe there are better explanations not thought of. This writer has absolutely no expertise in that sort of thing whatsoever and I can easily spot three problems. Perhaps you can spot others if you study the copy. Three I see are:

(1) The date of the first patent, 8 April 34 Edward I seems to be a mistake. (It translates to the 34th year of the reign of Edward I, or $1272 + 34 = 8 \text{ April } 1306$.) Edward died the next year. That is too late. It probably should have been dated about ten years before that, at the time Baron Peter Dodge won those battles in Scotland. Baliol died imprisoned in the castle in Normandy in 1299, so it had to be a few years before that.

(2) Another curiosity must be the reference to "James Hedingly called Guyen King of Arms." I looked up Guyen (also spelled Guienne) and learned that it used to be a small province in Southwest France (the Bordeaux area) which was part of the kingdom of Edward I of England and Normandy. The arms predated the English Heralds' College. I suppose the inference is that some organization in France did it, instead. Having no way to check that out, it seems as though he was smart to have an English reconfirmation.

(3) Something is wrong with that last line of the old patent. Edward, during his lifetime would not have referred to himself as "...Edward....first of the name." People do not talk like that about themselves. He died the next year, 1307.

Anyway, John Dodge did get a nice new patent during the last year of Henry VIII's life, in 1547. It seems to have been a good move. After all the Dodges were an ancient and honorable family.

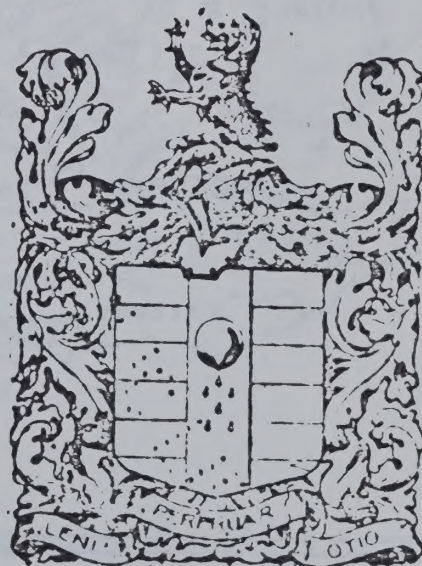
DODGE FAMILY

In the genealogy, Dr. J. T. Dodge quotes "Display of Heraldry" by "Cld Gwillum," who says in that ancient book the inspiration for our coat of arms was the Bible, 2 Esdras 8 (Apocrypha, King James Version) "For Thous hast commanded out of the parts of the body, that is to say, out of the breasts, milk to be given, which is the fruit of the breasts, that the thing which is fashioned may be nourished for a time; till thou disposest it to thy mercy." The breast was a symbol of Sir Peter's sustenance of the troops, according to Gwillum, (and where the name came from?

The name Dodge seems to be a shortened version of Doidge, taken from the ancient Anglosaxon word "Dugge," all three of these words pronounced the same way, with a soft "g." The Xeroxed translation of the patent on another page uses the phrase "a woman's pappe" which means exactly the same thing. Perhaps the word "dugge" was obsolete by the time the translation was done. The earliest coats of armor do show a nursing woman's breast with drops of milk coming from it. Later overly-fastidious men tried to change this to a weeping eye, as you see on the cover, but the pictures on this page are thought to be more accurate.

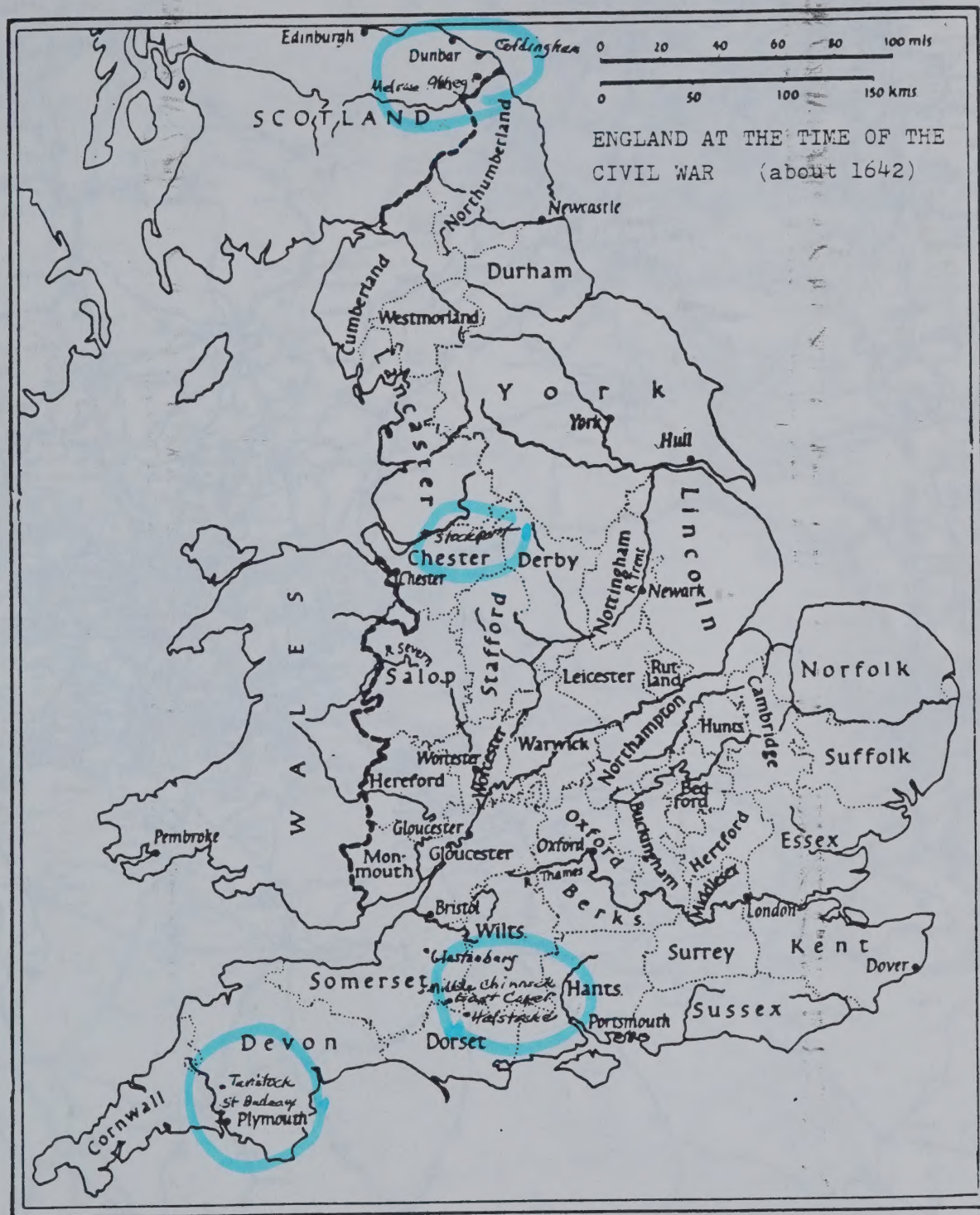
Arms: Barry of six or and sable. On a pale gules, a woman's dugge distilling drops of milk proper.
Upon his helmet (crest): On a torse gold and azure, a demi sea dog marym sable, langued and armed gules. About his neck a gemel gold, manteled gules.

The sea dog meant a beaver but they never drew it very well. The motto, "Leni Perfruar Otio" meant "Let me enjoy gentle ease."

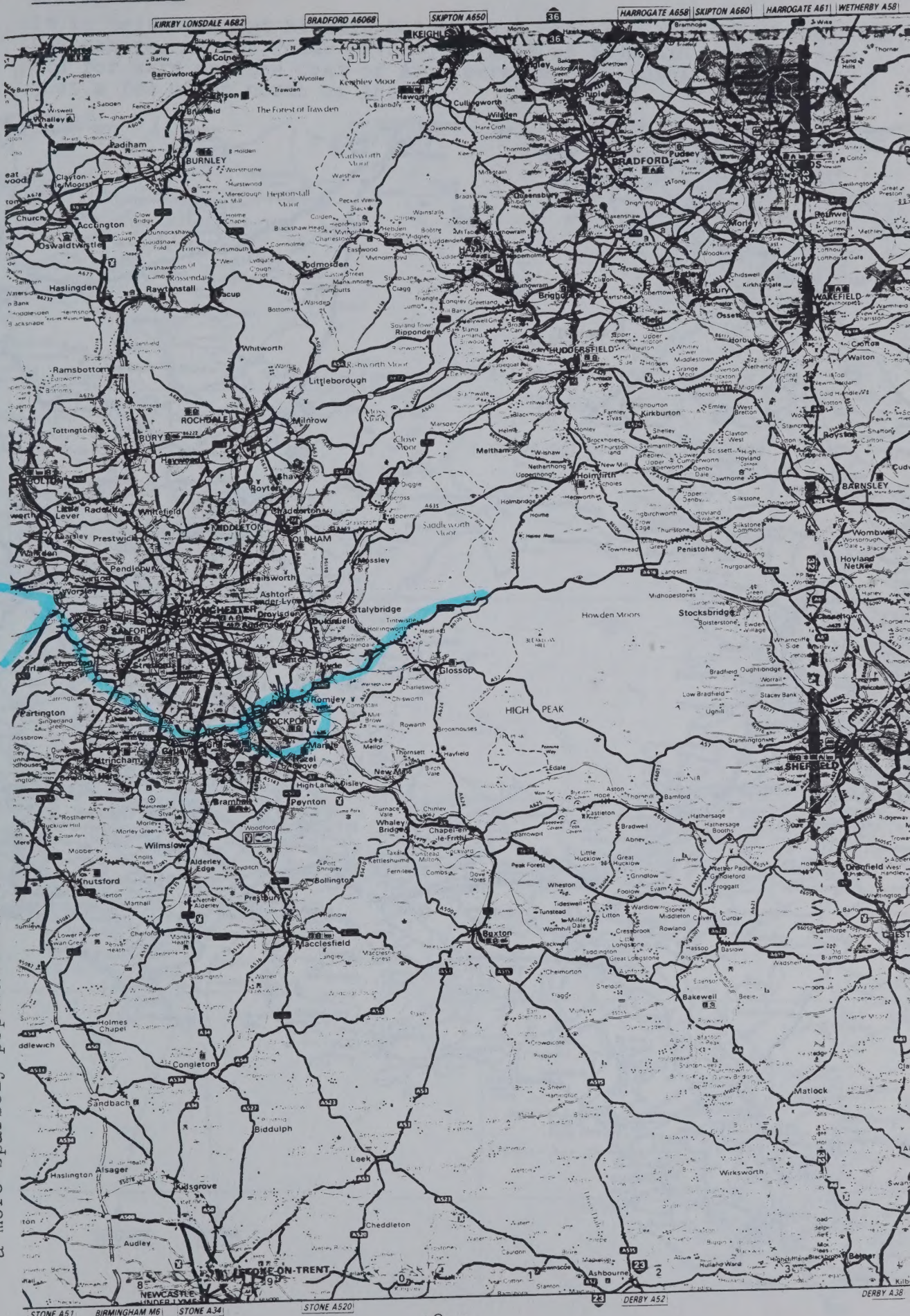


DODGE FAMILY

Map showing communities associated with our Dodge Family in England.



Modern English Highway Map shows Stockport (Stopworth of old) to be presently a Southeast suburb of Manchester. In the olden days it would have been a town in its own right, in a more sparsely populated area.



DODGE FAMILY

It is believed that Richard Dodge I was probably born at St. Badeaux, Devonshire, on the Tamar River just west of Plymouth. People who did for sure use the Coat of Arms were then residing at Tavistock, just a few miles north of there.



DODGE FAMILY

Little section of modern English highway map of Somerset/Dorsetshire shows Glastonbury, Middle Chinnock, --East Coker and Halstocke, south of Yeovil, are unfortunately in the crease.



THE DODGE FAMILY IN ENGLAND

Dr. Dodge wrote, "Something may be expected in relation to our ancestors in England. We have heard considerable about a grant of arms to Peter Dodge of Stopworth, county of Chester, in 1306, and a later patent to John Dodge of Rotham, in the county of Kent, in 1546, in which he is declared to be descended from the Peter Dodge born in Stopworth. These patents are on record in the College of Arms, London."

The town of Stopworth seems to have been called Stopford by 1538, Stopforthe by 1545, and Stockport by 1644 or sooner. Stockport, a river port as the name indicates, is presently a southeast suburb of Manchester, in far southern Lancashire, not Cheshire. The place didn't move, of course. The boundary did.

Dr. Dodge consulted a book, "Earwaker's History of East Cheshire," written in 1877, which seems to have yielded the following information about the Dodges of old. The name was first spelled "Dogge" (with a soft "g") and sometimes Doggeson. One of the earliest references to the family was the record of a very curious grant of arms to Peter Dodge, of Stockport, so early as 34th Edward I, or 1306. From that date on down there are many references to the family, mostly in Stockport and Offerton as well as Cheadle, Marple, etc.

In 1384-5 Robert, son of Robert Doggeson, and in 1390 his son William held lands in Stockport. William Dodge is mentioned in 1408. In 1422-3 William Doggeson of Stockport held lands in the Hillgate. In 1428 he is called William Dogge, mercer (merchant) of Stockport. After that the name became common. Some of them were mayors of the city.

ok — The historian (I could not tell whether Dr. Dodge meant himself of Earwaker) said he had a pedigree of that family going back a century before that, but he would not print it because he had no means to verify it. It would be nice if he had, because maybe someone else could have attempted to do so. After that he found the names of a good many Dodges who were active in charity work, especially for children. They donated land, the income from which was to support poor children and educate them, and assisted in apprenticing them to learn trades for a livelihood. Among those acting as Charity Commissioners in the years indicated were men named William Dodge--in 1433-4, 1454, 1475, 1483-4-5-6 and 1499-1500. Dodges with other first names served in that capacity later.

A William Dodge owned land in Stockport in 1422-3 and he as well as Ralph Dodge were grantees of land in 1437-8. By 1511 Rundle Dodge was a lessee and in 1577 George Dodge was a testator.

DODGE FAMILY

An area newspaper said a Dodge family held a small property in Offerton in the reign of Elizabeth I and were of Holliday Hill in that township for quite some time. Another hamlet in Offerton was called Dodge Fold, named for yeomen members of the family. (Since I do not see Offerton on the map, maybe the burgeoning sprawl of Manchester swallowed it up??) All of these places were in the old "county of Chester."

Since the name, Dodge--in whichever spelling--is so uncommon in England, it is pretty obvious all those people just mentioned were related to the venerable old baron. Likely that first Robert Doggeson (Dogge's son) who had the son Robert was Sir Peter's son or grandson, though it might be hard to prove it. At least it does show that the cradle of the Dodge family was indeed in Cheshire. It seems as though some of them might still be thereabouts. Since under the old English primogeniture system the manor and title usually went to the oldest living son, and especially if some families were large, it is only natural that they should disperse. Families who could afford it attempted to provide younger sons with good educations or apprenticeships in profitable trades so they could have bright futures, often leading them far away.

By the time the Tudors were on the throne many of the more prosperous families had their "London branch," for the sake of trade or to provide access to government circles. That would explain how the Rotham, Kent, family got from Stockport to London and thence to nearby Kent, where lived the John Dodge of the second patent of arms. Circumstantial evidence to support this conclusion may be found in a list of "marriages sanctioned by the Bishop of London," wherein it is stated that a certain Francis Champney, son ^{of} Sir John Champney, who died in 1556, married Mary, daughter of Edward Dodge of "Wrotham," Kent. That family would have been surnamed Champney, not Dodge, but this does prove the London-Kent connection.

How our Dodges migrated all the way from Stockport to Tavistock or Glastonbury is hard to know, or whether the move was by land or by water. Since some of the very early Dodges were mercers (merchants) living near a seaport, some of it could have been the result of trade by water routes. The genealogist carried on a correspondence with a man of his day, surgeon Dr. Maurice Doige, who was entitled to use the Dodge arms. He claimed descent from the Cheshire branch but lived in the Tavistock, Devonshire, area. He said most people in England spelled the name as he did. He said some of his ancestors took the motto, "Leni Perfruar Otio" ("Let me enjoy gentle ease") so literally that there was little of the fortune for the later Dodges to enjoy ease with.

DODGE FAMILY

John Dodge (sometimes spelled Doidge) was born in Southwest England during the middle of the reign of Queen Elizabeth I. Probable relatives, using the Dodge coat of arms, were living in the vicinity of Tavistock, Devonshire. Around the turn of the century 1600 A.D. or so, John married Margery () whose maiden name and birth-place have not yet been discovered. Likely the wedding took place in her parish church, wherever that was. There is evidence this couple lived a while at St. Badeaux, Devonshire (now a western suburb of Plymouth) a seaport on the Tamar River about 15 miles or so south of Tavistock.

Other Dodges, probably older sons benefitting from the ancient laws of primogeniture under which the oldest living son inherited the manor house and all the perks of gentle birth, did remain "seated" in the Tavistock area for several hundred years after that, long after our Dodges were in America. They spelled the name "Doidge" and maybe some of them were a little extravagant, for eventually the Duke of Bedford bought the manor house and they dispersed--but even so, some of them continued to use the Dodge coat of arms. It is said that the branch of John Dodge of Wrotham, Kent, who had the patent reconfirmed, died out for lack of male heirs to carry on the name. All of those people claimed descent from the Cheshire branch and from the revered old baron Sir Peter Dodge.

John Dodge was not an eldest son of an eldest son, but he was prominent in his community, called "Mister," a title of honor in those days claimed by perhaps 1% of the population, including the sons, particularly William, after they settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

The family seems to have been well off, and to have had a large flock of sheep. During Elizabeth's reign, England's greatest source of wealth was still derived from the woollen and cloth industries. Indirect written evidence also shows that they were painstaking yeoman farmers owning horses and oxen. (Horses for riding and oxen for farm work?) By the time John made his will near the close of his life, the parents were living in Middlechinnock, Somersetshire, and owned other property at Halstock, Dorsetshire very close by. Both places are just a little south of Yeovil. By then the oldest son, Richard, was already living near Glastonbury 25 miles or so north of them. All of these places are pretty far from Plymouth. It does show that if they could move all that way in one generation it would be no trick at all to migrate from Stockport, Cheshire, in over 300 years.

John Dodge of Middlechinnock, Somersetshire, England, made his will on 2 April 1635. It was proved 15 October 1635, so he must have died in late summer or early fall. Abstract of his will, which was printed over a hundred years ago (1890) in the New England Historic and Genealogic Register, follows on the next page.

DODGE FAMILY

"To be buried in churchyard there. To the church 10 shillings. The same to the poor of the parish. To the minister for preaching funeral sermon, ten shillings. Wife Margery shall hold and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Co. Dorset, containing by estimation ten acres more or less, during her life natural if my sons Michael and William shall happen so long to live. To Wife Margery forty pounds and the bed that I now lie in and the bedstead and all things belonging thereunto. I give and bequeath unto her so much of my other household stuff as she shall think most needful and useful for her.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my son William forty pounds more, over and above that portion which I have already given him. To my son Richard one sheep and to take his choice in my whole flock; and to John son of said Richard forty shillings. To Mary my daughter twenty shillings and to her son John twenty shillings. And my will is that all these goods shall be delivered half a year after my decease.

Item. All the rest of my goods unmentioned I give and bequeath unto my son Michael whom I make and ordain the executor of this my last will and testament."

The witnesses were George Parsons, clerk; William Dodge, William Templeman. It would appear that John was also a Puritan, for he asked for a minister to preach at his funeral, not an Anglican Mass. When Mother Margery died, or any copy of a will evidently have not been found.

Children of John and Margery (?) Dodge:

Richard	(ca 1602-15 Jun 1672)	m.	ca 1631 Edith ()	(1603-1678)
William	(1604-1692)		ca 1635 Elizabeth ()	()
Michael	(16)		?	
Mary	(16)		?	

All we know about Mary is that she had a son John and that she and the son were living in England when her father died. Michael lived and died in East Coker, Somerset, was church warden, and had five children. His son William came to Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony before 1665 when he married Elizabeth Haskell there. He was given the nickname, "Coker William" to distinguish him from "Farmer William," thus avoiding confusion. When his Uncle William died in 1692, Coker William demanded that the heirs give him 15 acres of land which he said his uncle had promised him if he would come to New England. They claimed this was the first they had heard of that and wondered why he had waited 27 years to mention it. Perhaps he thought the land would be willed to him.

The heirs were not sure what to think. For the sake of their father's good name they compromised and gave him half of what he asked, or $7\frac{1}{2}$ acres of land.

DODGE FAMILY IN AMERICA

In 1629 a heavily-loaded fleet of five sailing ships left England for the avowed purpose of establishing a colony in the New World. One of them, called the Lyon's Whelpe, carried a young man, William Dodge, brother of our ancestor, Richard Dodge I.

Great care had been taken by the London Company to make this venture a success. Five years earlier the Plymouth Company (of Mayflower fame) had failed in their attempt to set up a colony at Cape Ann, for by 1626 most of those settlers had gone on to other places, some even to Virginia or back to England, leaving few there besides a grieving Reverend John White, who ministered to the Indians at "Naimkeke" (or Naumkeag, later renamed Salem).

This time the London Company worked hard to have ample provisions and otherwise lay firm groundwork to ensure success. During preparations they wrote to Governor Endicott, requesting that he "...show all lawful favor and respect unto the planters that come over in the Lyon's Whelpe out of the counties of Dorset and Somerset; appoint unto William Dodge, a skilful and painful husbandman, the charge of a team of horses..." There were five vessels in "The Fleet."

Talbot - 300 tons, 10 guns, 30 men, 100 planters, 6 goats, 5 pieces of ordnance, 12 months' food--mostly grain, pease, etc.

Lyon's Whelpe (also called George Bonaventure) - 120 tons, 8 guns, many mariners, 40 planters, 4 goats, provisions - 125 people total

Four Sisters - 300 tons, many "cattell", passengers and provisions.

Mayflower - Yes, the same! Freighted with emigrants and supplies.

George - 300 tons, 20 guns, 30 men, cattell, 12 mates, 30 kyne, some goats, 52 planters and many provisions.

Emigrants added up to 60 married and unmarried females, 26 children, and 300 men, 386 persons in all, with supplies of food, arms, tools, and 140 head of cattle (and obviously horses and other animals'. The Lyons Whelpe loaded up with provisions in the Thames in April. By May 8 it docked at Yarmouth, a port on the NW part of the Isle of Wight--that is probably where the passengers from the West of England boarded. By May 11th they were on their way, and arrived at Naumkeag on 29 June 1620 according to the calendar, Old Style.

William settled in what is now called Beverly but until 1668 was part of Salem called the Bass River side, separated from Salem proper by the Bay. His name does not appear on the records of the first church of Salem; but it is said they did not require membership as a prerequisite for voting rights, grants of land or public office; he did join the second church many years later. Out of a list of the first 400 early settlers of Salem, only seven were called by the respectful title of "Mister," and he was one of them. That custom did not change for at least two more generations, and then only gradually. William was the trailblazer of the family. He was sought after as an extremely desirable settler and served in many public offices and responsibilities, seemingly always elected and always in demand.

DODGE FAMILY

William and Elizabeth Dodge had four children:

- Capt. John who married Sarah Proctor. 7 children
- Capt. William who married 1-widow Mary (Conant) Balch. 2-widow Joanna (Hale) Larkin. 3-widow Mary Creatty. He was a hero in defense against Indian massacres at Bloody Brook. 9 children
- Hannah who married 1-Samuel Porter, a seaman who died aboard a ship bound for the Barbadoes leaving her with a baby son.
- 2-Thomas Woodbury, a farmer. 9 children
- Probably Josiah Dodge who was killed by the Indians in King Phillips War.

Page 9 of the Dodge Genealogy says the following: "The fact that William Dodge came to Salem nine years earlier than Richard gave him more prominence in the community, but the same fact implies a greater degree of enterprise, if not ability, than was shown by the act of following where another had led the way. Hence, William has sometimes been called the father of all the Dodes. The records, however, indicate that the descendants of Richard Dodge are much more numerous than those of William, as might be expected since the latter left but two sons while Richard left five."

That can be taken for what it is worth. Probably they simply had different priorities, with the gregarious William liking politics and the more retiring Richard loving the land and peace and quiet. William's wife Elizabeth seems to have been religious but he did not join until the second church was built a great many years later. Richard and Edith joined very soon and were liberal contributors. But then, Richard was financially very prosperous. He also placed great value in education, for when it was time to build Harvard College he pledged ten times more than anyone else in his vicinity.

It appears that earlier generations enjoyed contrasting the brothers. Another of those colorful traditions some descendants held was that William was tall in person with black hair and a dark complexion. Richard's descendants are of sandy hair and complexion, or "speckled," and John's descendants are of light hair and complexion, or blonds. Since the person who related that thought William was married in Lancashire, that might someday provide a link between our branch and the Stockport people, if it can be substantiated.

Because most early immigrants to Massachusetts arrived in the 23-year period before Cromwell came to power in 1643, those of us with New England ancestry can usually trace it back to a very few very prolific families. The thin, rock-strewn soils of New England with their short growing seasons did produce a bumper crop of one thing--babies. The typical family had about a dozen. Many infants did not survive, but those who did were amazingly healthy.

The surname "Dodge" with all its various spellings still is not very common in England. As we have seen "Coker William" had no sons who lived. Nearly everyone of the surname in America today is sprung from the two brothers Richard and William, and from a Tristan Dodge who settled early on Block Island in the state of Rhode Island. Tristan seems not to have been from Southwest England but he, also, claimed descent from the early Cheshire branch.

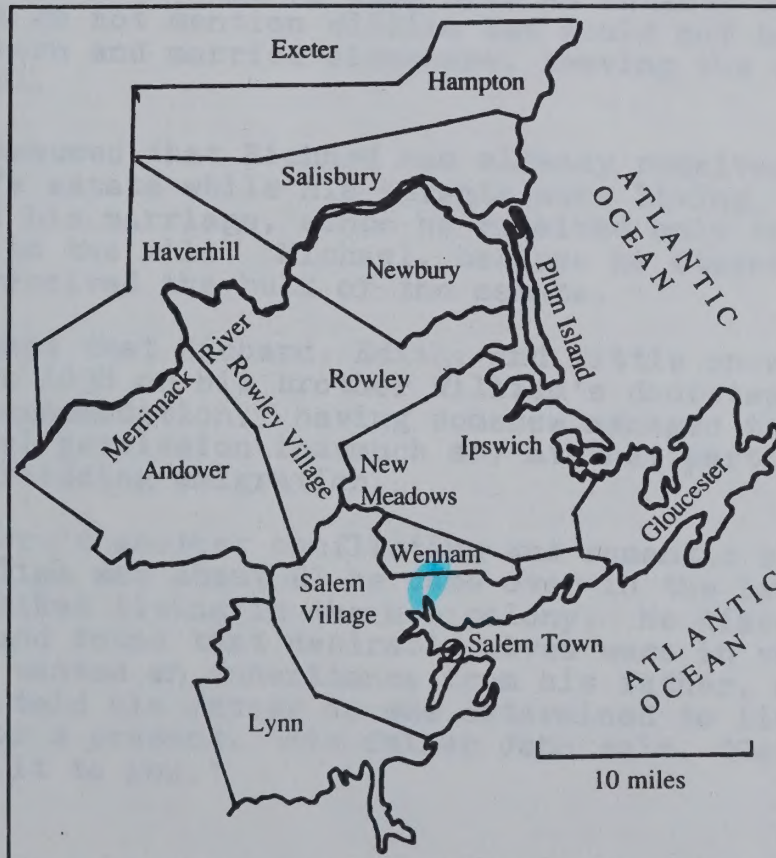
DODGE FAMILY

Seems like everyone wants to claim Baron Peter Dodge!

Despite all the speculation in print about the personalities of Richard and William Dodge, the known facts point to one inescapable conclusion--theirs was a close-knit family and the brothers cared very much about each other's welfare. One wonders whether, looking down from their Puritan heaven, they would approve of all the stories contrasting them. Somehow I doubt it.

Some of the source material used so far includes the following:

New England Register 44:297 - Henry F. Waters "Gleanings in England"
"Ancestors & Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898" - Marilyn and
Phillip Slinger (1978)
"Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, MA" - Joseph
Thompson Dodge, Ph. D. (2 Volumes 1894 and 1898)



Essex County and the towns of Hampton and Exeter in 1643.

DODGE FAMILY

RICHARD I AND FAMILY

Richard Dodge¹ was born about 1602 or earlier, probably at St. Badeaux, Devonshire. It may be that he was a little older than is generally assumed, as one of the later discoveries was that in 1616 he went from St. Badeaux to East Coker, Somerset, but since the writer does not know whether he was taken there as an adolescent or moved there as an adult, will leave the story stand as earlier reported.

About 1626 or 7 he married Edith (Brenne) whose last name has not been learned. The marriage most likely took place in her home parish, probably in Southeast Somerset or a short distance away in Dorsetshire, for they lived near the boundary and the family also had property there. It would be awfully nice to know more about her.

In 1633 he was admitted as a "tenant by entry-hold" (which I take to be a very long-term lease, perhaps a hundred years? if not an outright purchase) of lands in Helyar Manor at East Coker which had come into possession of a Helyar family in 1616. Richard farmed at the manor for about five years. He still retained that property or other property in England and did not sell it when he sailed for New England; for he drew rents from lands in England all the rest of his life, willing that revenue to Edith when he passed away.

Records have been found of the birth of Michael's and Richard's first four children, two of whom died as infants in East Coker. The records do not mention William but would not be expected to if he was born and married elsewhere, leaving the area when he was about 21.

It can be assumed that Richard had already received his portion of his father's estate while his parents were living, probably about the time of his marriage, since he received only the token bequest of a sheep in the will. Michael, because he stayed in England, naturally received the bulk of the estate.

The story goes that Richard, Edith, and little ones John and Mary, showed up in 1638 on his brother William's doorstep in Salem "desiring accommodation," having somehow managed to cross the ocean without royal permission inasmuch as, at that particular time, the King was forbidding emigration.

However, there's another conflicting and romantic story that when brother William was about 21 he came over in the Lyon's Whelpe to see how he liked living in the new colony. He liked it fine, but was lonely and found that desirable wives were in very short supply. Besides, he wanted an inheritance from his father, so he went back to England, told his father he was determined to live in America, and asked for a present. His father John said, "Get married and I will give it to you."

DODGE FAMILY

William wanted a wife, anyway, so he tried but met with two refusals. Few young ladies wanted to leave the comfortable life of Somersetshire for a rugged life in the distant wilderness. He finally met Elizabeth (last name unknown, not Haskell) and they fell in love. He got his wedding present, a fine pair of bulls which came in very handy in New England. Adding some plausibility to that story is the signature of a William Dodge as witness to his father's will in 1635.

The story continues that when William returned to Naumkeag (Salem) he brought back with him his brothers Richard and John. If the word "brother" is interpreted in an ancient way as "kinsman" that makes sense. The only possible John Dodge they could have meant was Richard's small son, born in England in 1631, named for his grandfather.

The reason Richard Dodge, at least 36 years old, and his family left their comfortable ~~manor~~ home in England may never be known for sure. Likely they were under pressure because of their Puritan religion. At any rate we learn that the ship they came in arrived in July, 1638. Contrary to the popular impression, others came at the same time, "requesting accommodation." Translation: requesting grants of land on which to build homes, and farmland. That meeting of the town fathers did not occur until 29 October, so we are told that they stayed on land belonging to his brother for the rest of summer and early fall, which makes sense.

Sidney Perley, in his Salem history, tells about the others who were fellow petitioners at that meeting. The reader will probably enjoy hearing a little about that. One newcomer was George Curwin, a man of education and property born 1610 in Cumberland County, England. He and his wife and two children were admitted. He wore a seal ring cut with his coat of arms. He became a merchant and his son, Hon. Jonathan Corwin, merchant, was one of the judges at the later Salem witchcraft trials. A grandson, Capt. George Corwin, was a sheriff who executed the witches.

Also requesting admittance was Robert Buffum, about the same age, many of whose descendants later became Quakers. Also Mark Vermais and the widow Alice Vermais, probably his mother. (Perley did not say so but the Vermais family was probably related to Mrs. Joanna Towne whose daughters, Rebecca Nurse, Mary Easty and Sarah Cloyce, were accused of witchcraft and the first two executed. Over a hundred years later Richard Dodge V married Mrs. Towne's descendant, Lois Towne.)

The other petitioners are listed as Robert Penn, Joshua Verin, Thomas Truslar, and Henry Cooke, a butcher.

So you can see that this "request for accommodation" was not an isolated event as some of the Dodge genealogies make it out to be. During that meeting he was officially received as an inhabitant. Very shortly after he received ten acres. Within a month he and

William wanted a wife, anyway, so he tried but met with two
 failures. The young ladies wanted to leave the comfortable life
 of Somersetshire for a rough life in the distant wilderness. He
 finally met Elizabeth (last name unknown, not beautiful and they
 did not love. He gave her wedding present, a fine pair of white
 which came in very handy in New England. Adding some plausibility
 to the story is the signature of a William Cooper as witness to
 his father's will in 1655.

The story continues that when William returned to Somerset (Salem)
 he brought back with him his brothers Richard and John. The
 word "brother" is interpreted in an ancient way as "kinsman".
 That makes sense. The only possible John Lodge they could have
 meant was Richard's small son, born in England in 1631, named for
 his grandfather.

The reason Richard Lodge, at least 35 years old, and his family
 left their comfortable home in England was never known.
 The story, likely they were under pressure because of their
 Puritan religion. At any rate we learn that the ship they came
 in arrived in July, 1635. Contrary to the popular impression,
 others came at the same time, "requesting accommodation".
 Translating: requesting grants of land on which to build houses
 and farmland. That meeting of the town fathers did not occur
 until 25 October, so we are told that they stayed on land belong-
 ing to his brother for the rest of summer and early fall, which
 makes sense.

Many Barley, in his Salem history, tells about the others who
 were fellow passengers at that meeting. The reader will probably
 enjoy hearing a little about that. One passenger was George Gurney,
 a man of education and property born 1610 in Cumberland County,
 England. He and his wife and two children were admitted. He wore
 a seal ring and at his cost of arms. He became a merchant and
 his son, John, Jonathan Gurney, merchant, was one of the judges
 at the later Salem witch trials. A grandson, Capt. George
 Gurney, was a knight who executed the witch.

Also requesting admission was Robert Turner, about the same age,
 many of whose descendants later became Quakers. Also Mark Vermeil
 and the widow Alice Vermeil, probably his mother. Barley did not
 say so but the Vermeils likely were probably related to Mrs. Thomas
 Towne whose daughters, Rebecca Nurse, Mary Easty and Sarah Cline,
 were accused of witchcraft and the first two executed. Over a
 hundred years later Richard Lodge V married Mrs. Towne's descendant,
 John Towne.

The other passengers are listed as Robert Parr, Joshua Yerrin,
 Thomas Trevel, and Henry Cooke, a butcher.

So you can see that this "request for accommodation" was not an
 isolated event as some of the Cooper genealogists make it out to be.
 During that meeting he was officially received as an inhabitant.
 Very shortly after he received the same. Within a month he and

DODGE FAMILY

his brother were granted 80 acres more. In three years they gave him 40 acres more. In June 1646 during a special ceremony he was made a freeman. Later he purchased another 40 acres from Roger Haskel, a relative of "Coker William's" wife.

The land the family settled on was called "Dodge's Row" in East Wenham. They later donated land there for a village cemetery. Perley says the house was not really large, being two stories high and having a parlor, and that it stood on the south side of what is now Dodge Street in East Beverly (boundaries having changed). It was about a quarter of a mile easterly of Alewife Brook. He says the house went to son Joseph² and then Dr. Joseph³ and then it burned 29 May 1736. That would be a discrepancy with other reports, which say the property has remained in possession of male Dodge descendants ever since over these many centuries "although the house has greatly changed with a one-time cabinet shop turned around and enclosed within a dwelling"--except that neither report says the original structure is still standing. However, the house is at the original site. The house now there is ancient,

Richard had a very high regard for the value of education. When a collection was taken to raise money to build Harvard College, he gave ten times as much as the next largest contributor in his area.

After a quiet but financially successful life this devout and generous Puritan ancestor, Richard Dodge I, died on 15 June 1671, age about 69 years or perhaps more. He left a large estate of L1764 s2 but more importantly seven fine living children to produce future Dodes. Edith survived him, living another seven years to 27 June 1678, age 75.

Photocopies of their wills are included in an appendix. They were buried in that same cemetery that he donated to the town. However, in 1962 a Dodge descendant living in New England visited the cemetery and found no gravestones then marking their graves. He and his helpers cleaned up the old part of the cemetery and treated the markers that were there to make them readable. He decorated the Revolutionary War veterans' graves, and had a huge rock brought in, inscribed as a memorial. For anyone who would like to visit, it is Lot #63.

Children of Richard I and Edith Dodge:

Richard	1628- died young				
Margery	1630- 2 Feb 1631			(age 4 months)	
(Lt)John	1631-11 Oct 1711	m. ca	1660	Sarah (____)	(1646-1706)
Mary	1632-18 Aug 1710		1653	Zechary Herick	(1636-1695)
+RichardII	1642-13 Apr 1705	23 Feb	1667	Mary Eaton	(?1645-1716)
Sarah	1644- ? 1726		Jul 1667	Peter Woodberry	(1640-1709)
Samuel	1645- 4 Dec 1705		ca 1667	Mary Parker	(1647-1717)
Joseph	1651- 1 Aug 1716	21 Feb	1671	Sarah Eaton	(1650-1714)
Edward	165--14 Feb 1727	30 Apr	1673	Mary Haskell	(1660-1737)

DODGE FAMILY

The first four of the children were born in East Coker, Somersetshire. The oldest two died very young. John and Mary came with their parents on the sailing ship from England. The rest of them were born in Salem (or North Beverly dependent on boundary changes). They all settled near the parents. As you can see from the father's will, he provided well for their mother, who lived with two amicable youngest sons, Joseph and Edward who shared the home estate, valued at about L1000, with their mother until she died seven years later. The other sons each received farms worth at least L100 and the daughters, who married neighbors, were given nice doweries.

Since this account follows our ancestor, Richard II, thumbnail sketches about his brothers and sisters are below:

Probably because he was the oldest second-generation Dodge in this country and the only male born in England, a great deal was expected of John. At any rate, he seems to have taken after his Uncle William in his willingness to serve the public and was on many committees, etc., a list of which took two full pages. No wonder generations to come were confused, considering him one of the immigrant brothers.

John settled in Beverly and built a saw mill and (probably) the grist mill at Wenham Neck which was in use until 1822. He received 80 acres of land near his mill from his father, and another 5 acres of meadow. Besides being a deputy to the court and selectman, he was a military lieutenant, probably in 1683, age about 53, when he became standard bearer of a squadron of troops from Beverly and Wenham. No combat duty was mentioned, or else the writer did not find it.

It is really too bad that the last name of John's wife, Sarah, has not been found. She was a spirited lady who fought for what she believed in. The town of Wenham annexed their home in North Beverly much against the family's wishes and those of most of their close neighbors. They protested by refusing to pay taxes to Wenham. Troopers from Wenham went to their home while her husband was away and seized pewter platters and other valuable items for taxes over the objection and resistance of Sarah, whom they threw down and hurt her. A neighbor and his son tripped them up and so saved her. A trooper, Thomas Hobbs, age 48, later testified, "She took me by the hair of the head and did strike me." A brother-in-law, Zachariah Herick, saw her the night of the fray and said she was much bruised, that they had struck her a blow to the head of which she much complained. The couple had 8 children.

Mary Dodge may have been the Marie who was baptized in England in 1635, though her reputed age at death in 1710 was given as 78 years. Her husband, Zachary Herrick, was the man present after the fray at his sister-in-law's house. The couple lived on a farm given to him by his father, at Birch Plain. He was a carpenter. He had some slight connection with the witchcraft delusion of 1692. The couple had 8 children.

DODGE FAMILY

Sarah Dodge married Deacon Peter Woodbury as his second wife and raised his two-year old son as well as the nine children they had together. Their home on the street called Dodge's Row, was still in possession of the Woodbury family up to this present century.

Very little has been reported about Samuel except that he appears to have been a prosperous farmer. They had 9 children.

Edward Dodge is described as having had a kindly disposition. He served on various committees, was at times constable, tax collector, highway surveyor, selectman and so on. His wife, Mary Haskell, was related to "Coker William's" wife. 8 children.

Joseph married Sarah Eaton of Reading, undoubtedly at least a distant relative of his brother, Richard's wife, our ancestor Mary (Eaton) Dodge. Joseph and Edward jointly inherited their father's homestead which they divided amicably, in writing. His son, Dr. Joseph Dodge, inherited the house part which is still in the possession of his descendants. The couple had 10 children.

Some references for sections on William and Richard Dodge¹ are:

Town Records of Salem, Vol I

New England Historic and Genealogical Register XV:254-5,
XLIV:297-8, XLVI:383-91

Vital Records (separately) of Wenham, Beverly, Reading MA

Essex Probate Court Records II:230-3, III:198-9
Quarterly " " I:96, IV:404-6, 452

Pope's Pioneers p.141 - Charles H. Pope, Gen Pub Co. 1900, repr 1991
(plus other pages for non-Dodge connecting lines)

Dawes-Gates Ancestral Lines - Mary Walton Ferris

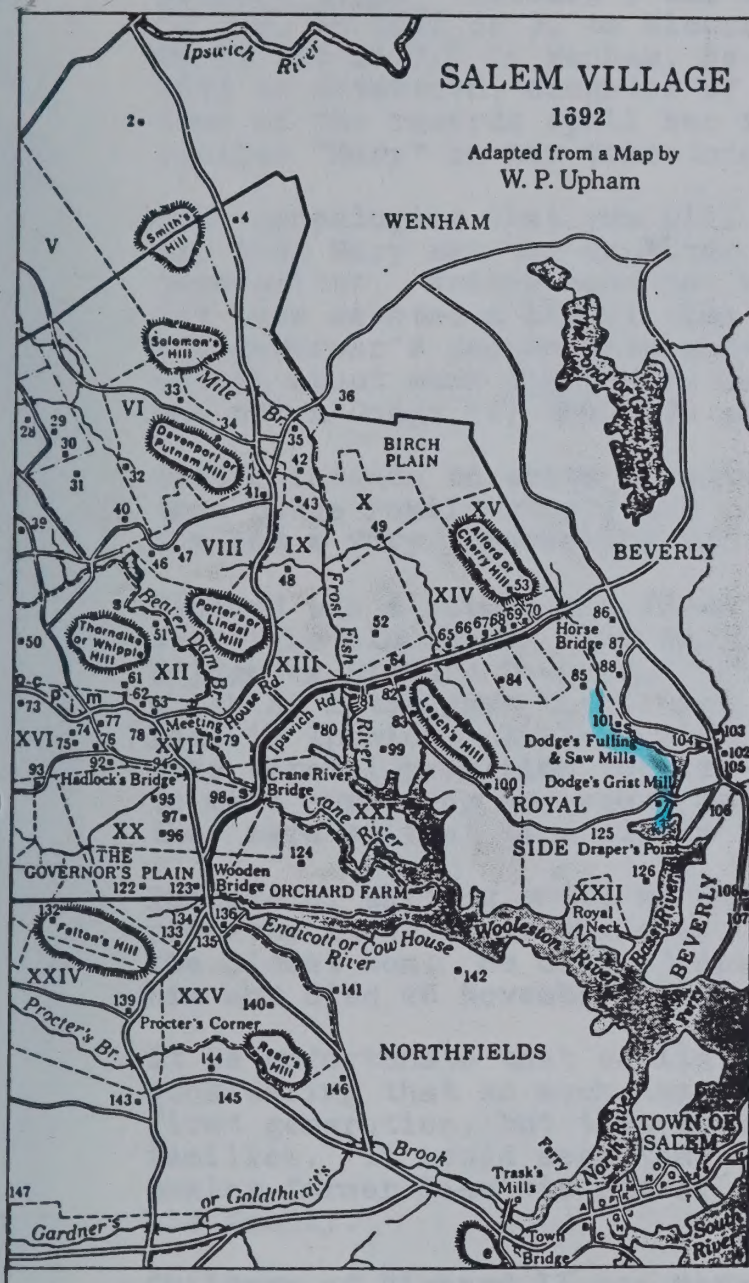
History of Salem Vol II:38-45, etc. - Sidney Perley

New England Marriages Prior to 1700 - Clarence Almon Torrey, GPC 1985

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700 - Frank R. Holmes

Search for the Passengers of the Mary & John 1630, Vol. 18-West
Country Ancestries pages 43-5, etc. - Mary & John Clearing
House, Toledo, Ohio, 1992

DODGE FAMILY



*Adapted from maps by Sidney Perley.

The right map is a closeup of the one at left. Both show where some of the second generation Dodes lived. #87=Deacon Peter Woodberry. #101=Capt. John Dodge. #102=Herrick Family. #106=Haskells. #127=Parkers. Zachary Herrick's farm was at Birch Plain. Richard II lived just across the line in Wenham near Zachary.

We had many ancestors living in Salem (Rea, Flint, Leach to name a few) who will be told about in other parts of this book.



Map of Wilson County, Tennessee

The first one is a census of the one at left. Both show where some of the second generation Dodges lived. 1850-Dodge Peter Woodberry, 1850-John Dodge, 1850-Herbert family, 1850-Maskell, 1850-John, Zachary Herbert's farm was at Birch Plains. Richard II lived just across the line in Wayne near Zachary. We had many ancestors living in Salem (Mass, Flint, Mass to name a few) who will be found in other parts of this book.

DODGE FAMILYRICHARD II AND FAMILY

Richard Dodge² (Richard¹) was born in Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1642 or 3, to Richard and Edith Dodge, the immigrants. On 23 Feb 1667/8 in Wenham, he married Mary Eaton, born 8 April 1643 in Watertown, daughter of William and Martha (Jenkins) Eaton. Some of the records spell her first name "Marah." but it is spelled "Mary" on her tombstone. (See the photocopy.)

Some genealogies that you will see in print if you look for them, say that Mary was the daughter of Governor Theophilus Eaton of Connecticut. Writer does not know what caused all the confusion, but have devoted a lot of time to checking it out. Not only do the governor's descendants make no such claim, but they go into detail about whom their Mary Eaton married and (1) it certainly was not a Dodge (2) the lady was much the wrong age for our Richard.

Writer intends to write an Eaton-Jenkins Family story to accompany this Dodge Family story, and will go into the details there. She had a very interesting and nice family background.

Richard was a farmer and lived in the south part of Wenham. Records say, "The old Wenham line was by Longham brook North of Longham Bridge by Richard Dodge's." He also owned a large farm in Ipswich which he later gave to his son, Richard³, plus land near Chebacco Lake in Ipswich. Richard also owned a cider mill and press and make careful provision for its use when he deeded it to his sons, to make sure they had equal access to it, so it is very likely they were at that time all in the same vicinity.

Instead of waiting until he and Mary passed away, he divided the property among their children, giving his "negro man," Mingo, to the oldest son. He died 13 April 1705 at Wenham. Mary survived him and died 28 November 1716.

It is unfortunate that so little has been recorded about Richard II considering that so much has been written about the immigrant first generation, but that is the way it was with most New England families. It would seem that this Richard was a careful, painstaking farmer like his father, who loved and provided well for his family.

Children of Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge:

+Richard ³	12 Jul 1670-	7 Jul 1739 m.	16 Nov 1694	Martha Low
Mary	30 Mar 1672-	17	1705	Charles Gott
Martha	7 Jun 1674-	1736	31 May 1705	Dr John Davidson
Daniel	26 Apr 1677-	30 Apr 1740	26 Jun 1706	Joanna Burnham
William	1678-20 Oct 1765		27 Jul 1699	Prudence Fairfield (1) aft.1737 Abigail Giddings (2)

Richard Dodge² (Richard¹) was born in Beverly, Massachusetts Bay Colony, in 1672 or 73, to Richard and Elizabeth Dodge, the immigrants. On 27 Feb 1697/8 in Newham, he married Mary Eaton, born 8 April 1675 in Westmoreland, daughter of William and Martha (Jackson) Eaton. None of the records spell her first name "Mary", but it is spelled "Mary" on her tombstone. (See the photograph.)

Some genealogists think you will see in print if you look for them that Mary was the daughter of Governor Theophilus Eaton of Connecticut. Writer does not know what caused all the confusion, but have devoted a lot of time to checking it out. Not only do the governor's descendants make no such claim, but they do have details about their Mary Eaton married and (1) it certainly was not a Dodge (2) The lady was much the wrong age for our Richard.

Writer intends to write an Eaton-Jackson family story to accompany this Dodge family story, and will go into the details later. The had a very interesting and nice family background.

Richard was a farmer and lived in the south part of Newham. Records say, "The old woman line was by Longman brook north of Longman Bridge by Richard Dodge's". He also owned a large farm in Ipswich which he later gave to his son, Richard. His land near Chatham Lake in Ipswich. Richard also owned a cider mill and press and made cider for his use when he needed it for his sons. To make sure they had equal access to it, so it is very likely they were at that time all in the same vicinity.

Instead of waiting until he and Mary passed away, he divided the property among their children, giving his "negro son", Mingo, to the oldest son. He died 17 April 1707 at Newham. Mary survived him and died 12 November 1710.

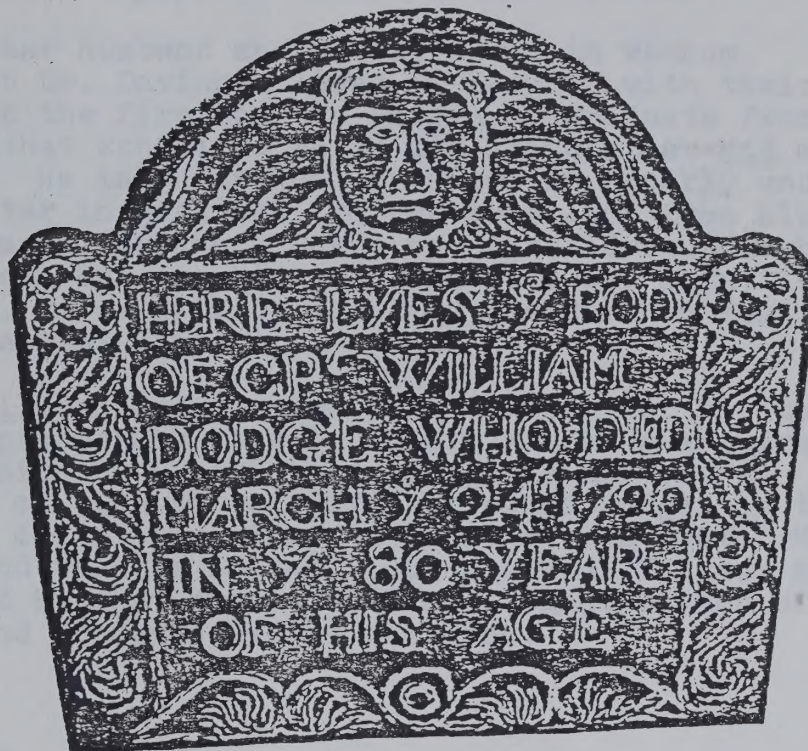
It is unfortunate that so little has been recorded about Richard II considering that so much has been written about the immigrant. First generation, but that is the way it was with most New England families. It would seem that this Richard was a careful, painstaking father like his father, who loved and provided well for his family.

Children of Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge:

Richard ³	15 Jul 1690 - 7 Jul 1739	16 Nov 1694	Maria Lou
Mary	30 Mar 1692 -	17	Charles Cost
Maria	7 Jan 1694 -	1736	Dr John Davidson
Samuel	20 Apr 1697 - 30 Apr 1740	26 Jun 1706	Thomas Burnham
William	1698-20 Oct 1705	27 Jul 1699	Prudence Partridge (2)
		1717	Adelphi Children (2)

DODGE FAMILY

Below are photostatic copies of three gravestones. The top stone is that of Captain William Dodge, son of William the Immigrant. Beneath are the stones of our ancestors, Richard II and Mary (Eaton) Dodge.



BEVERLY.



NORTH BEVERLY.

DODGE FAMILY

Since we will follow Richard III, a word or two about the others:

On 31 May 1705 Richard, Daniel, William, and Mary (who had not yet married Mr. Gott) joined in a deed of $4\frac{1}{2}$ acres of marsh land in Chebacco-Ipswich to John and Martha Davidson to carry out what they alleged was the purpose of their late father.

Mary and her husband and family lived in Wenham.

Martha and Dr. Davidson lived in Ipswich with their family.

Daniel was the first of the Dodes to graduate from Harvard College in 1700--that school to which his grandfather had made such a large donation. He taught school at first in Beverly and by 1715 was schoolmaster in Reading. He received land from his father.

He and Joanna (Burnham) Dodge had 6 children. (We haven't gotten to that yet, but our Richard IV's wife was a Tuttle and her mother a Burnham, so we will be covering the Burnham Family as one of our Dodge ancestral lines.)

Brother William Dodge (named, of course, for his uncle) spent a long and prosperous life in Wenham where he acquired a large amount of land which he distributed among his many sons. Interesting from the point of view of our direct line of Dodes is that his son, Isaac was one of the first to start moving West. He moved to Boxwood and then to Sutton. Our Richard IV later moved there, surrounded by that prosperous and elegant branch of the family. William and Prudence had 10 children.

Sources:

Two bad examples showing wrong ancestry of Mary Eaton Dodge:

Colonial Dames of America Ancestral Records & Portraits, p.201

Current (1992) Ancestral File printout--Latter Day Saints

(Writer is confident they will soon change that.)

A correct example is 13 Nov. 1916 issue of Boston Transcript
Item #5686

Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts - Charles H. Pope

See alphabetically under Dodge, Eaton, Herrick, Haskell,
Woodbery, etc.

Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England -
James Savage

Ships Passenger List of the Hercules, which sailed 11 May 1637

History and Biography of the Eaton Families - Nellie Z.R.

Molyneaux (1911)

New England Register 37:378 and 76:54 are primarily about the
ancestry of Martha (Jenkins) Eaton, Mary Dodge's mother.

Since we will follow Richard III, a word or two about the others.

On 11 May 1705 Richard, Daniel, William, and Mary (who had not yet married Mr. Goss) joined in a deed of 1/4 acres of marsh land in Chesapeake-lewist to John and Martha Davidson to carry out what they intended was the purpose of their late father.

Mary and her husband and family lived in Wrenham. Richard and Dr. Davidson lived in Ipswich with their family. Daniel was the first of the Boggs to graduate from Harvard College in 1700--that school to which his grandfather had made such a large donation. He taught school at first in Beverly and by 1715 was schoolmaster in Reading. He received land from his father. He and Joanna (Barnes) had a child, the latter's father to that year, but our Richard IV's wife was a Tuttle and her mother a Thurman, so we will be covering the Thurman family as one of our Boggs ancestral lines.

Richard William Boggs (son of course, for his uncle) spent a long and prosperous life in Wrenham where he acquired a large amount of land which he distributed among his many sons. Interesting from the point of view of our direct line of descent is that his son, Isaac was one of the first to start moving West. He moved to Boxwood and then to Oregon. Our Richard IV later moved there, surrounded by that prosperous and elegant branch of the family. William and Ruthven had 10 children.

Two last examples showing wrong ancestry of Mary Eaton Boggs: Colonial Index of American Ancestral Records & Portraits, p. 101; (1902) Ancestral This printer--later Ray Cairns (1911) is entitled they will soon change that.) I correct example is 11 Nov 1910 issue of Boston Transcript. 1902 issue. 1902 issue of Massachusetts - Charles F. Pope was also entitled under Boggs, Eaton, Herrick, Haskell, 1902 issue. 1902 issue of the first volume of New England - 1902 issue. 1902 issue of the first volume, which sailed in May 1911. History and Geography of the Eaton families - Volume I & II. 1911 issue (1911) New England families 17, 1728 and 1732 are primarily about the ancestry of Martha (Leah) Eaton, Mary Boggs's mother.

Richard Dodge³ (Richard² Richard¹) was born in Wenham, Essex County, Massachusetts, on 12 July 1670, to Richard and Mary (Eaton) Dodge. On 16 November 1694, he married Martha Low born 10 Mar 1669 daughter of Deacon Thomas and Martha (Boreman) Low in Ipswich. Data about the Boreman and Low Families will also be provided separately. Deacon and Mrs. Low had another daughter, Joanna, who married Richard's cousin, Antipas³ (Samuel² Richard¹) Dodge.

Richard was a prosperous farmer who received a very good start in life from his father who deeded him on 1 Dec. 1703, more than a year before his death, "the house, barn and outhousing in Ipswich which said Richard dwells in; also the farm on which it stands, viz., 100 acres which I bought of Mr. Hincksman, excepting just twenty acres to be cut off from the western end of said land by a line dividing said land and from White's land; also six or seven acres of low marsh that has been in his occupation for divers years, being part of what I purchased of James Burnham of Ipswich; also so much as is bounded on east side by widow Fellows' marsh, south by creek, west by Lieut. Ingall's, and north by my brother, Samuel Dodge's, marsh. Also one third part of upper marsh I bought of Mr. Wade; also one third part of one acre I bought of Mr. Wise; also the privilege of grinding apples at my mill, not injuring my sons, Daniel and William, of making their cider; also the right of passage through my cow pasture; also my negro man, Mingo."

Maybe we should not be so surprised about Mingo, considering that Salem, so close by, was already a center of commerce with its very profitable sailing ships--rum to Africa for slaves for the West Indies paid for by molasses which they had made into rum in Salem or Newport to pay for more slaves. Such was the state of civilization that the whole world thought that was okay, including, obviously, the Dodges. I'd better leave this subject, just hope they were gentle with Mingo!

Another indicator of the times was that Richard and Martha's young adulthood was during the period of witchcraft hysteria that swept through their area. It does not appear that they or any of their children were involved in that sorry mess though, as we shall see, their grandson Richard V married Lois Towne whose family had been one of the greatest sufferers of all. Writer does not know how much credence to place in it, but an interesting book I own postulates that people from southwest England, which the Dodges were, were more inclined to scoff at the idea of witches whereas people from the Norfolk area (as were the Townes and some of their accusers) with their Viking ancestry were much impressed with the spirit world, their ancestors having seen a troll under every bridge. Martha (Low) Dodge's ancestors came from the south coast of England and from the Banbury area.

"Albion's Seed--Four British Folkways in America" by David H. Fischer
Oxford Univ. Press (1989)

DODGE FAMILY

Son Barnabas married in 1728 and Paul in 1732. Two years later the youngest son Richard became serious about a young lady named Sarah Tuttle. The parents decided it was time to set their sons up with farms of their own. So on 3 July 1734 Richard III deeded each of the two oldest a third each of a large farm he had purchased of John Quarles. He waited until 2 October 1734 after Richard IV had married in August to give him his portion.

Then in 1737, two years before his own death and when most likely the mother, Martha, was seriously ill, more property went to the three sons by deed of division. In 1740, evidently on administration of his estate after his death (and Barnabas having died two months after his father) more property was divided between Paul and Richard IV.

Richard the father died 7 August 1739, age 69. Evidently Martha died first, for though the date on her stone is illegible, it says she was 68 years and 9 months. Knowing her birthdate, it would have been late in 1737. Both of them are buried in the cemetery on Dodge's Row.

Children of Richard III and Martha (Low) Dodge:

Martha	29 May 1696-05 Oct 1721 m	Rev. John Conant
Nathaniel	08 Oct 1698-died young	
Lucy	31 May 1700-	23 Jan 1716/7 Daniel Conant
Nathaniel	01 Dec 1701-died young	
Margaret	02 Sep 1702-no record	
Barnabas	1706-11 Oct 1739	27 Sep 1728 Martha Perkins
Paul	1708- 3 Jan 1773(1)	19 Nov 1732 Jerusha Dodge
		(2) 25 Feb 1735 Faith Jewett
+Richard	11 Nov 1710-17 Oct 1776	16 Aug 1734 Sarah Tuttle

Since we follow Richard⁴ here are some notes on some of his brothers and sisters. One will notice that as we go along the amount known gets more and more sparse.

Martha married Rev. John Conant, son of John and Bethia Conant, born 7 July 1686. Lucy married his brother, Daniel. Since they were not our ancestors, no attempt to research the Conant family has been made. It is thought that the second Nathaniel also died young but no further record was found on him or Margaret.

The part about Barnabas is sort of sad. He had a pretty good start in life with a generous gift of land from his parents. He was doing well financially before he died at the relatively young age of 33, leaving behind a widow Martha (Perkins) Dodge, toddler Martha, Jr., and baby Lucy yet unborn. His estate came to L1444, 3s. The widow was named administratrix and guardian of the two infant daughters.

DODGE FAMILY

Four little daughters and one baby son had already died, three of them in 1736 alone. One can only speculate about what caused so much tragedy to this young family in those years when people knew nothing about germs. In 1740/1 Martha married a widower, Barnabas's first cousin Jacob (William³ Richard² Richard¹) Dodge. They had two children, the first named Barnabas in honor of the man who died and Tabitha. Both of those children lived, with Tabitha marrying a Nathaniel Fairfield with whom she settled in New Hampshire, and Barnabas marrying a Lydia Woodberry in Beverly, Massachusetts and staying in the area.

The tragedy was not over, for Martha (Perkins)(Dodge) Dodge herself died about 1751. The two youngest stayed with their father, who married an Elizabeth Crowell in 1752 with whom he had several more children. Our ancestor, Richard Dodge IV was then made guardian of Martha, 14 and Lucy, 12. Whether they stayed with their stepfather or went to live with Uncle Richard is not clear, probably the latter. Both girls married at the early ages of 18 and almost 17. (By the way, the distinguished old Perkins family is one of our ancestral lines through Lois (Towne) Dodge, wife of Richard V, so you will find a Perkins family story in the collection.

Paul married first Jerusha Dodge who died soon thereafter. Her parentage was not given. The only other Jerusha Dodge that young was Jerusha Elisha³ Joseph² Richard¹ Dodge born 24 May 1711 whom they say "probably died young." One wonders whether, instead, it "probably could have been" this Jerusha. She seems not to have left any living children. Paul married second Faith Jewett of Rowley. Besides the legacy from his father, they received another from her father, Maximillian. He was involved in many real estate transactions, also sawmills and gristmills. He died in 1773 and is buried in Hamilton cemetery. Faith survived him and was living with her son, Paul Jr., in New Castle ME in 1784. 8 children.

Dr. Dodge wrote that, "The families of Paul and his brother Richard are of more than usual interest, not only for their mental and physical energy, but for the many descendants who have deserved and attained considerable distinction." I'm not sure whom he was referring to but will take him at his word.

There are many fine references on the ancestors of Martha (Low) Dodge, whose parents were Deacon Thomas Low and Martha (Boreman) Low. Those references will be cited in the sections on those families, but the two best which I have found are:

For Boreman (later descendants changed the name to Boardman) an excellent book, "Boardman Genealogy 1525-1895" by Charlotte Gold~~waite~~^{waite} (1895).

For Low, "Ancestry of Phebe Tilton" (1947) is very readable. Another book, "Ancestors of the John Lowe Family Circle" by Ellen M. Merriam (1901) is nice but out of date because so much has been discovered since then.

Richard Dodge⁴ (Richard³ Richard² Richard¹) was born 11 Nov 1710* in Hamlet Parish of Ipswich (now Hamilton, Essex County) MA to Richard III and Martha (Low) Dodge. About 16 August 1734* published date he married Sarah Tuttle born 5 August 1716 in Ipswich to Charles and Mary (Burnham) Tuttle. As reported before, the couple was given a good start with land from his father.

After brother Barnabas died, Richard acquired his share, evidently through purchase from the widow, Martha, and later became guardian to the couple's two little girls, Martha, Jr., and Lucy, the widow apparently having died - though in the meantime she had married Richard and Barnabas' cousin Jacob Dodge, and had two other children who stayed with their father.

About eight years later, Richard sold his land to this same cousin, Jacob Dodge, for L906. (This, incidentally, shows fluctuation in the value of money, for the land had once sold for much more.) On the date he sold to Jacob, he bought from Jacob's brother, Isaac of Sutton, 100 acres of land in Sutton, paying him L213. (If you are following this, Isaac and Jacob were both Richard's first cousins.) Three days later he bought 200 acres more for L300, lying partly in Sutton and partly across the town line in Uxbridge.

There is not room enough here to go into the history of the Sutton/Uxbridge area, except to say that there had been settlers much earlier who had been driven out or massacred by the Indians, and the land had reverted to nature. The French and Indian Wars were still going on when they moved there in 1759. They were fortunate their area in southern Worcester County near the still contested Connecticut border was not attacked. Much fierce fighting was taking place in the Berkshire Hills only slightly west. Some people in families they later intermarried with were soldiers in that war.

It is a bit ironic, if that is the right word, to hear that the "Dodges were a warlike breed of men, starting with Sir Peter Dodge, who won a barony for his heroic deeds fighting for a Norman king," for, to tell the truth, our Dodges, so far as I can tell, mostly stuck to their farms whereas the families they married into were replete with heroes from all of the wars in defense of our country. Perhaps I've overlooked someone; if so would like to know whom.

The family started sort of a new Dodge Family settlement in Sutton. Cousin Isaac was there. Cousin Jacob's oldest son, Richard Hubbard Dodge and his pretty wife established an elegant residence there and were social elites who did a lot of entertaining.

* Conflicting dates have appeared in print for both Richard's birthdate and the date of the marriage to Sarah Tuttle. The dates given here cannot be very far off--at the very most two years in each instance.

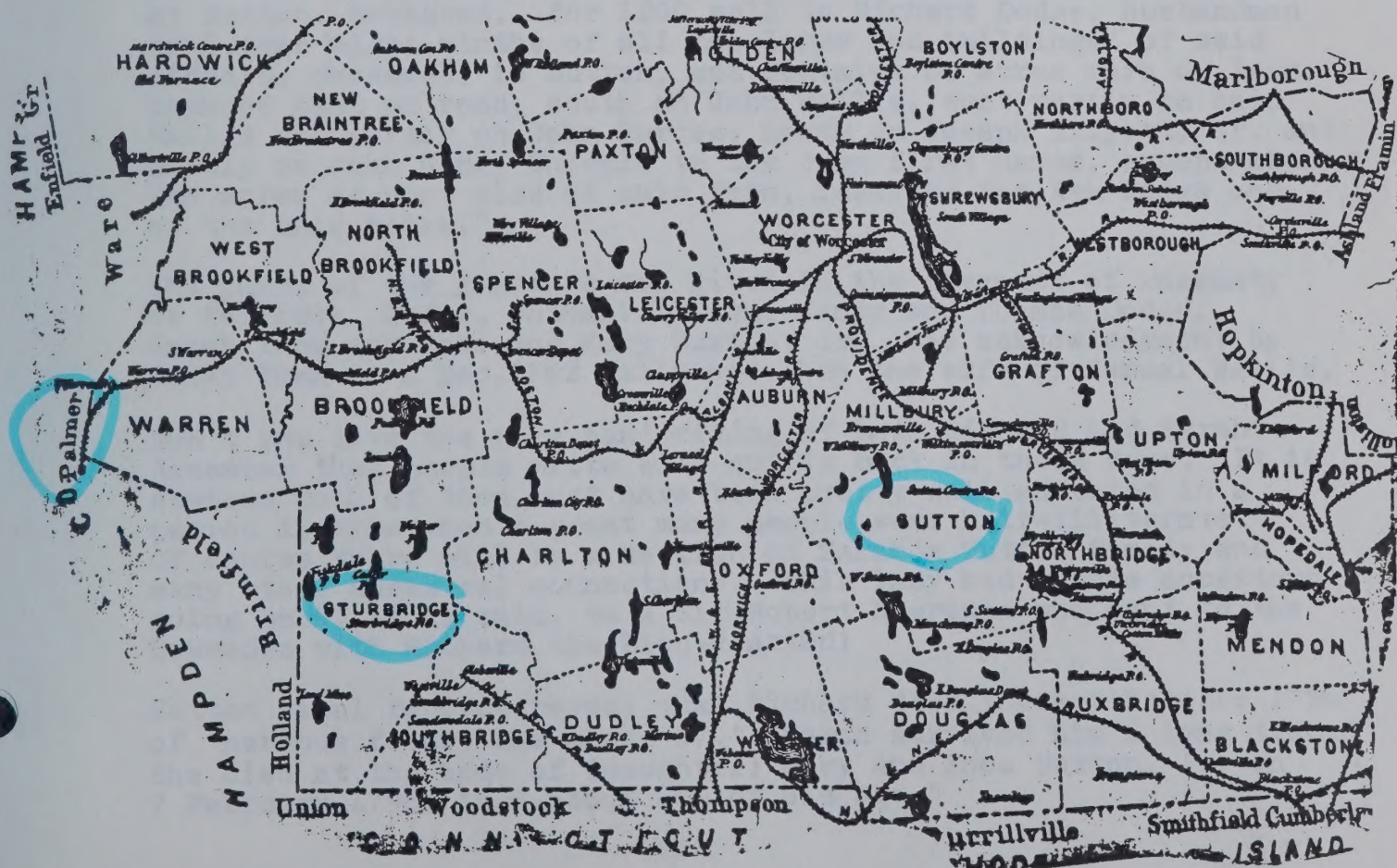
DODGE FAMILY



The Dodge Homestead in Sutton, Mass., erected previous to 1750. Owned by Benjamin J. Dodge

TOP--The illustrated house belonged to Richard IV's cousin.

BOTTOM--Map of the southern half of Worcester County. Richard IV settled in Sutton. Dwight was born in Sturbridge. Later Dodes kept returning to Palmer (Hampden Co.) at left side of map.



DODGE FAMILY

There are so many real estate transactions recorded in Worcester County that it is hard to keep track of them. The writer has decided just to copy verbatim what Dr. Dodge wrote in the genealogy. He cited Worcester deeds Vol 41:222, 42:118 and 90:332 but *which say that* obviously a lot more sources must be involved:

In March 1782 he deeded to his son Rufus, carpenter and yeoman of Uxbridge, 50 acres of the above 200. In 1765 he sold to William Batchelor of Upton, cooper, another 50 acres of the same tract, with buildings. He sold to his son-in-law Reuben Town, farmer of Sutton in 1767, 1772 and 1775, three pieces of land amounting to 69 acres. The signature of his wife, Sarah, appears last on the deed of February 1767 and his own appears last in March, 1775.

Richard Dodge Sarah Dodge

Before 11 April 1777 Richard and his son-in-law Town were both dead, for we find as follows: "We, Rufus Dodge and James Dodge of Gageborough, Berkshire County; Nathaniel Dodge of Brookfield; Asa Dodge, Sarah Town widow, Enos and Mary Buxton, all of Sutton; Thomas Dodge of Dudley, Worcester county - all of Massachusetts - heirs to the estate of our Honored father, Richard Dodge, late of Sutton, deceased, for L200 sell to Richard Dodge, husbandman of Sutton 'eight-ninths of all the lands and buildings' of said Richard, deceased, in Sutton, and contains 60 acres more or less, bounded east on road, south on John Wallis, west partly on said Wallis and partly on John Burden, north on Joseph Ellyott, Jr. and partly on John Henry Shiddle to the road first named, except about ten acres of west side of said farm, reserved for Asa Dodge one of the said heirs."

The names of the grantors are given in the covenant of warranty as follows: Rufus, Nathaniel, Asa, James and Thomas Dodge, Sarah Town and Enos and Mary Buxton, Jr. The acknowledgment by Sarah Town on 2 Dec, 1782 calls her then the wife of Samuel Wallis.

Don't you love the nice handwriting of both Richard and Sarah? Remember that people wrote with quills back in those days. It is obvious both of them must have been pretty well educated in a period in time when a great many people were half-illiterate. Of course there will be a section on Sarah's Tuttle Family and many other ancestral connections. This lady had remote ancestors going back, it is said, to a Sir Robert Lawrence who went to the Crusades with Richard the Lion-Hearted!

Sutton vital records reveal that Richard died there 7 October 1776 of "nervous fever, age about 67." Sarah survived him a long time. She died at the home of (daughter) Mary and Enos Buxton, Jr. on 7 February 1796, "age about 88, of old age."

There are so many real estate transactions recorded in Worcester County that it is hard to keep track of them. The writer has decided to copy everything that Dr. Dodge wrote in the genealogy. His first Worcester death was 1832, 1833 and 1834 and 1835 and 1836. I have not a lot more to write.

In March 1835 he decided to his son John, independent and young of his age, 20 acres of the above 200. In 1835 he sold to William Butcher of Uxbridge, 20 acres, and 20 acres of the same farm, with buildings. He sold to his son-in-law Nathan Town, 20 acres of Uxbridge in 1835 and 1835, three pieces of land amounting to 20 acres. The signature of his wife, Sarah, appears last on the deed of February 1835 and his own appears last in March, 1835.

Richard Dodge

Before 11 April 1835 Richard and his son-in-law John were back dead, for we find as follows: "We, John Dodge and James Dodge of Uxbridge, Berkshire County, Nathaniel Dodge of Uxbridge, his father, Sarah Town widow, James and Mary Burton, all of Uxbridge, 20 acres of Uxbridge, Worcester County - all of Massachusetts heirs to the estate of our honored father, Richard Dodge, late of Uxbridge, deceased, for 1800 sold to Richard Dodge, husbandman of Uxbridge, deceased, for 1800 and buildings of said Richard, deceased, in Uxbridge, and contains 20 acres more or less, bounded east on road, south on John Wallis, west partly on said Wallis and partly on John Burton, north on Joseph Elliott, Jr. and partly on John Henry Wallis to the road first named, except about two acres of west side of said lane, reserved for the Dodge one of the said heirs."

The names of the grantees are given in the covenant of warranty as follows: John, Nathaniel, James and Thomas Dodge, Sarah Town and James and Mary Burton, Jr. The acknowledgment by John on 2 Dec. 1835 calls him then the wife of Samuel Wallis.

Don't you love the nice handwriting of both Richard and Sarah? Remember that people wrote with quills back in those days. It is obvious that of them must have been pretty well educated in a period in time when a great many people were half-illiterate. Of course there will be a section on Sarah's family and many other ancestral connections. This lady had remote ancestors going back, it is said, to a Sir Robert Lawrence who went to the Crusades with Richard the Lion-hearted.

Sarah's vital records reveal that Richard died there 7 October 1835 of nervous fever, age about 57. Sarah survived him a long time. She died at the home of daughter Mary and Isaac Burton, Jr. on 7 February 1850, age about 65, of old age.

DODGE FAMILY

Children of Richard IV and Sarah (Tuttle) Dodge:

Rufus	b 14 Mar 1736	m 28 Oct 1756	Elizabeth Dodge
Richard	21 May 1738		died young
Nathaniel	9 Dec 1740	26 Jan 1763	Sarah Dodge
Asa	ca 1743	9 Feb 1779	Lydia Buxton
James	ca 1745	?	?
Sarah	ca 1747	7 Jul 1767	(1) Reuben Towne
		by 1782	(2) Samuel Wallis
Mary	ca 1749	3 Jun 1775	Enos Buxton
+Richard V	25 Apr 1752	19 Jul 1770	Lois Towne
Thomas	ca 1759	23 Feb 1779	(1) Abigail Putney
		11 Aug 1802	(1) Abigail Hooper
		5 Apr 1807	(3) Sarah Worth

A cursory glance at this chart will show how the records suffered as the family expanded to the west. It is thought that most of the children were born in the Hamlet Parish area (now Hamilton) of Essex County, Massachusetts. If someday this writer runs into vital statistics showing more exact birth or other dates, they will be inserted or a postscript added. There could also be unrecorded births of other children, especially between Richard and Thomas. We may assume that the first little Richard died after James was born and before our ancestor, Richard V. They would have kept naming a child that until one lived, having kept that name in the family for so long. Historians assumed Thomas was born in Sutton but gave no reason. You will notice the trend toward very young marriages, a change from the custom on the East Coast.

As radical as the idea of moving west to Sutton in Worcester County may have seemed to their parents, when the children in this family matured New England was already starting to run out of farmland for its abundance of young men who wanted to start their own farms. Our Dodges had always loved the soil. Where to go? It was difficult if not impossible to buy land in New York and anyway the adjacent part east of the Hudson was hilly, too. One could rent, but most of the land had been granted to only a few "patroons" who would not sell. West of there the land was held and dominated by the savage and angry Iroquois Indians.

Until after the Revolutionary War, the only places really left for expansion were the hilly Berkshire areas of northwestern Massachusetts and New Hampshire/Vermont. (Vermont was not then a state but an area hotly contested between New York and New Hampshire--but developed mostly under grants issued by the governor of the latter state.)

The family of Richard and Sarah underwent a dispersal as the adult children matured, with some staying in the area and others going to the places just mentioned. ~~We lost track of some of~~ them. Since we follow Richard V, here is a little of what we know about the others.

CORINTH CHRISTIAN CHURCH

C. Bogie, D. T. Bogie, Jr., Ella Cooley, James Griggs, Albert Long, Martha Long, James M. Long, Amanda Jane Long, James Merrit Long, Laura Long, Dr. Phillip Roberts, Robert Roberts, Clarka Roberts, Cascinda Roberts, Irvine S. Roberts, Sallie Roberts, Paulina Roberts, Nannie Taylor, John M. Willis, and Linda S. Willis.

Near this church and to the rear is an old burying ground. I have been unable to find who was buried here, but no doubt some of the Bogies for Andrew Bogie built a stone house near and also built the old stone mill. Near the old burying ground was once an old fort which was, no doubt, the early rallying place in times of Indian raids into this region.

Burton Roberts says that there was once a young preacher, whose ancestral home was in Australia, who came to preach for them at Corinth. His family lived in the stone house built by Andrew Bogie. On the Saturday preceding Sunday meeting, the preacher came to Million, a station on the L & E, a railroad which ran from Nicholasville to Beattyville, down Tate's Creek about three or four miles from Corinth. It was the custom to ride over and lead a horse for the preacher to ride to his assignment. For some reason there was a delay in meeting him and, being young and interested in the country, the preacher set out to walk toward his destination, expecting to meet whoever was coming for him. He walked on and soon passed Newby which was halfway to Corinth. No one had yet come to meet him and he kept walking as the night drew near. Soon after passing Newby he began to descend a hill above Bogie's Mill when a strange little animal appeared in the road.

top of page -

his generation of

7 During the lifetime of ~~the~~ Dodge ~~the~~

A many great changes took place - the French & Indian
war on which

~~was~~ when they were small, and then the
Revolutionary war. ~~It is possible some of the~~

~~to~~ ~~the~~ ~~no~~ ~~nothing~~ ~~of~~

~~participating~~ ~~to~~ ~~any~~ ~~of~~ ~~the~~ ~~has~~ ~~been~~ ~~involved~~ ~~by~~

~~the~~ ~~present~~ ~~writer~~ ~~but~~ ~~that~~ ~~does~~ ~~not~~ ~~mean~~ ~~none~~

~~of~~ ~~them~~ ~~forgot~~ ~~to~~ ~~off~~

Quite possibly some of Richard ~~the~~ and Sarah's
children forgot in the Revolution. The year

So far the present writer has not seen their names
in the rolls ~~they~~ ~~to~~ ~~find~~ ~~any~~ ~~later~~, but if I do
a post will be added later.

(Insert Postscript next page)

8

*May 2
Ch. 10*
DODGE FAMILY

Colonies
As you read this, keep in mind that these children were born into a Colonial family though their attitudes may have broadened. The idea of uniting the colonies into states had not yet occurred to anyone, and they would have rejected it as fantastic and undesirable. These Dodes would have been staunch Congregationalists who looked askance at the attitudes of the Anglicans in the southern states. Things changed by the ends of their lives, however. They eventually became citizens of the United States.

As far as writer knows
As far as writer knows, none of the children fought in the Revolutionary War. If any military records are uncovered, that information will be incorporated later on. See footnote, end of Chapter.

ext. 13-2
Rufus Dodge, the oldest son, married Elizabeth Dodge. The books do not say who she₃ was, but I believe she was Elizabeth Dodge⁵ (Francis¹ Jonathan³ John² William¹) and thus only distantly related to Rufus through his great-great-great grandfather John Dodge in England. Elizabeth was born 3 March 1736 and lived in Brookfield a few miles west of Sutton. All we know further about the couple is that as of 1777 they were living on the frontier in Gageborough, Berkshire County MA.

Nathaniel Dodge was a farmer. He married Sarah Dodge, sister of Rufus' wife Elizabeth. These sisters had a brother Francis who moved to Berkshire County, also a brother Daniel who served in the French and Indian war when he was very young, and another sister Hepzibah. Nathaniel, by the right of his wife, inherited part of her father's estate and also bought out the portions of some of the others. (Temple's History of North Brookfield has her listed with the wrong father.) The couple had 10 children but at least 4 of them died young.

Asa Dodge may have been married to Elizabeth Knapp of Northbridge (published 30 April 1777) but if so she soon died because on 9 Feb 1779 he married Lydia Buxton of Sutton—possibly the sister of Mary's husband, Enos Buxton. When the division of his father's estate occurred in 1777, he was living in Sutton and chose to retain his 1/8 portion. Ten days after his marriage to Lydia this couple as well as her brother David Buxton of Brandon, Vermont, sold their property in Sutton. They all moved to Brandon, which is on the western side of the Green Mountains. Later they purchased land in Weybridge, VT which they sold when he became an invalid and they went to live with their son, Asa, Jr., and his family. They had one other son, John, who married but had no children.

We know very little about James Dodge. It seems as though he married and went to Gageborough to live near his brother Rufus.

Sarah Dodge, named for her mother, married first Reuben Towne of Sutton, kinsman of our ancestress Lois Towne who married her brother Richard. Reuben was living in 1777 but died before December 1782 when she was wife of Samuel Wallis (who probably had been the couple's next-door neighbor). They lived in Sutton.

DODGE FAMILY

Mary Dodge, the other sister, married Enos Buxton and they lived on a farm in Sutton with their children. Enos was brother of the other Buxtons mentioned on the previous page. When Richard IV died, it was Mary and Enos who took her widowed mother into their home and cared for her, until Sarah died twenty years later, at the age of 88. So it seems the other siblings owed a debt of gratitude to Enos and Mary Buxton, for being good to their mother.

Thomas Dodge, the youngest, was probably born in Sutton about 1759. He married first Abigail Putney of Dudley. ~~They~~ had five children in the Dudley-Sturbridge-Charlton area (all near Sutton). Then they moved to Norwich, Connecticut, where they had three more. After that they migrated to distant Barre, Vermont, where she died of childbirth in January 1802. (It is a chilling thought to think of her dying in the Vermont wilderness in January, probably away from adequate medical care though, of course, that might be an exaggeration.) The baby, Eleazer, survived until age 20 when, though young, he already had his own brisk boot and shoe business in Montpelier. By the time the mother, Abigail, died two little daughters had already died. Little Rufus, born in Norwich, died in 1804--two years later. The others seem to have done well. ~~Five of the eight children of (it was a sign of the times that five of Thomas's nine children were children) of the first marriage survived.~~

Thomas married (second) Abigail Harper of Barre, who had come there from Brookfield, MA, ~~and~~ had one child, Asa; and she also died of childbirth. They didn't say whether the baby lived. He married (3) ~~third~~ Sarah Worth of Middlesex (what state?) and had four children. He died age 68 at his farm on the road from Barre to Montpelier about a mile below what became Barre Station. The widow lived to be 92.

~~Sources for Prof. Dodge's Family~~
Sources for the segment on Richard IV and Sarah (Tuttle) Dodge include the following:

Sutton Vital Records to the Year 1850

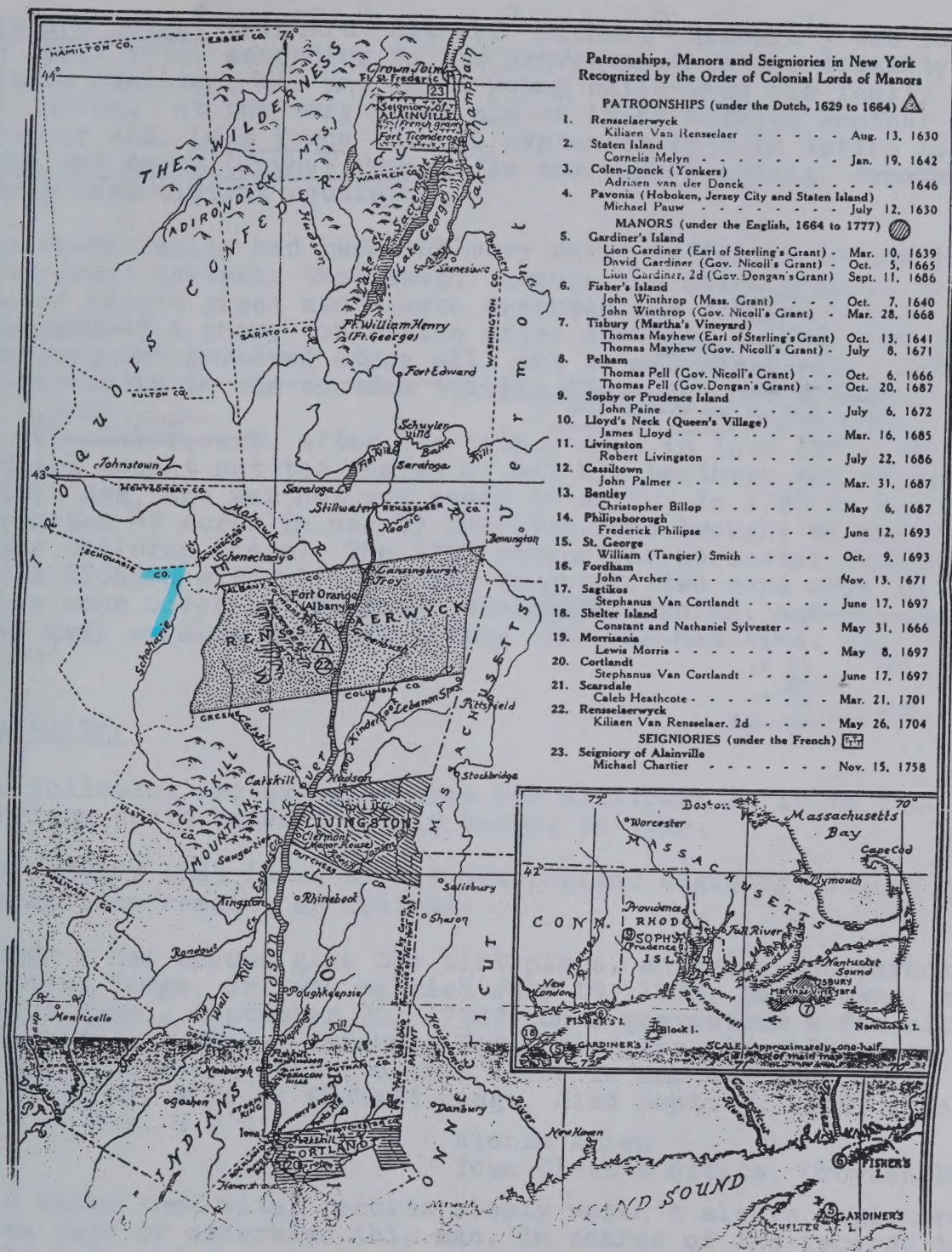
History of Sutton, Worcester County, Massachusetts (1878)

History of Worcester County, Massachusetts (1879) Two volumes, for background on the townships. (The first 2 mention Dodies)

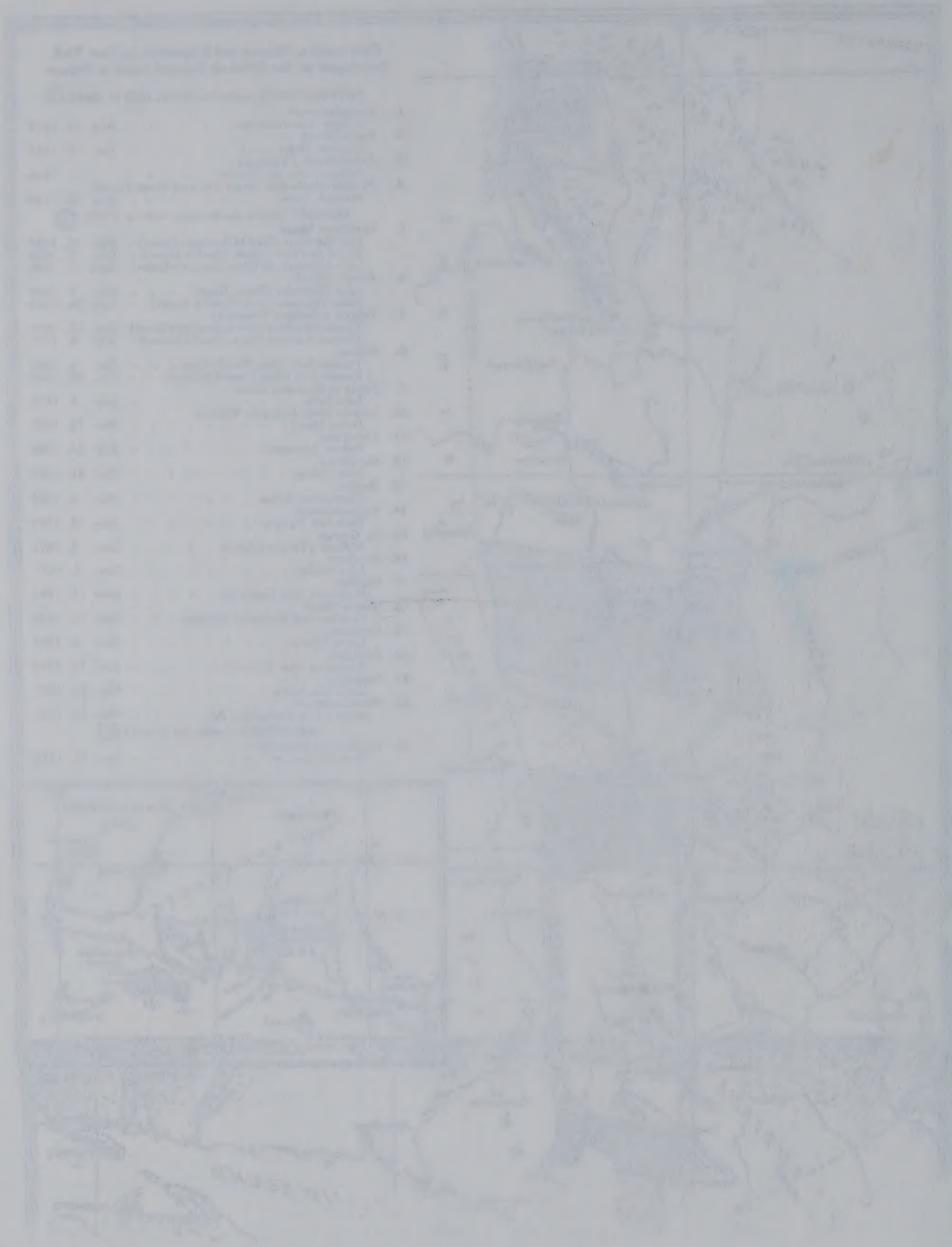
There are ~~many~~ Tuttle Family information sources. The ~~one~~ reaching far enough down in time to list our Sarah ~~and saying she married Richard~~ is "Tuttle & Tuthill Lines in America" by Alva M. Tuttle (1968) That book is more of a compendium than a family story. ~~Other sources will be cited in the Tuttle Family section.~~

Footnote:

It seems some have confused Capt. Richard Dodge of Wenham (1732-1802) who fought in the Lexington Alarm & the Revolution with our Richard IV or V. That would be easy to do. He was Richard⁵ (Richard William³ Richard² Richard¹). Our line is all Richards, to that point. Any of our line could join the DAR, etc., through Captain Samuel Ellis, grandfather of Keziah (Ellis) Dodge, wife of Levi & mother of Dwight.



Map shows only some earliest NY patents but may help you see why early Dodges had to go north rather than west to buy land. Patroons were happy to rent on terms which made tenants serflike, but would not sell. Lands to the west of them was held by fierce and angry Iroquois Indians. Palatine Germans settled on the Schoharie River south of the Mohawk. When the British occupied Rhode Island during the Revolution, many Rhode Islanders moved to Schoharie, the scene of fierce fighting but not occupation. That is indirectly the reason Lydia (Pearce) Dodge came to be born there.



Map shows only some earliest of the states but may help you see why early
settlers had to go north rather than west to find land. Settling was
hard to find on farms which were heavily settled, but would not sell
land at the best of times and had to leave the land to the government.
Settling became easy as the government gave land to the settlers.
When the British conquered these lands during the Revolutionary War,
those lands were moved to America. The land in the 1700s and 1800s
not considered that in fact they had been (leaves) holes
made to be born there.

DODGE FAMILY

RICHARD V AND FAMILY

Re - word this, using P37 for not

Richard Dodge⁵ (Richard⁴ Richard³ Richard² Richard¹) was born 25 April 1752, according to his gravestone*, in the locality which became Hamilton, MA, and was a young child when his family moved to Sutton. At the very young age of 18 he married another 18-year old, Lois Towne born 30 September 1752 in Sutton to John and Mercy (Towne) Towne. (As the names suggests, John and *Lois' parents* Mercy were distant cousins.)

*not fascinating
at first
ruesome*

The Towne Family had been the very worst sufferers in the infamous witchcraft hysteria that swept through the Salem area in 1692. Two of Lois's great aunts were executed and a third barely escaped *by making* by means of a phony confession after spending a long time in jail. The long and involved story will not be addressed here, but ~~will be~~ be discussed in the section telling about the noble Towne Family segment.

related to her

As ~~you will recall~~, after his father died in late 1776, this young Richard bought out the shares of all his brothers and sisters except Asa, who was not yet ready to sell. In 1787 he and Lois purchased 89 acres in nearby Charlton, and brought up most of their children there. The 1790 census for Worcester County, MA, shows Richard with wife and one daughter, two sons over 16 and three sons under 16. That would suggest Ananiah, age 20, may have been away working and ~~that little John did not live.~~ *1833*

*Footnote:

The following two examples show how difficult it is to find birth-marriage-death dates for this period in time.

*1883, no
found under*

The January 1883 issue of the New England Register (Vol 37 p88) has an item reading as follows:

"DODGE - Can anyone give the birthplace, ancestry and parentage of 'Richard Dodge, Jr' who married July 19, 1770, Lois Towne, born in Sutton Mass., September 30, 1752? On a gravestone a few miles from this office I find - 'Richard Dodge died Dec. 25, 1833 aged 81 yrs. & 8 mos.' Next to this stone is another upon which is 'Lois Towne, wife of Richard Dodge, died Sept. 9, 1812, aged 59 yrs. 11 mos. & 9 d's.'"

Alonzo Allen

Town Clerk's Office, Croyden NH

This shows that vital records simply weren't always registered in those days or otherwise this man, in charge of the records there, would have had them in his records!

*include in
Sutton
prev
apt*

The other example is that the extremely thorough "Tuttle-Tuthill Lines" cited on a previous page lists the same first marriage dates for all of Richard IV and Sarah Tuttle Dodge's children, and the same three birthdates we have here. No marriage at all is listed for Richard V. Seemingly Alva Tuttle assumed he died young but found no death listed. The parents' marriage date was given as 27 November 1734 in Ipswich.

DODGE FAMILY

By the time Richard V was in his middle 40's ~~he might have been content to stay put, but his older sons must have been anxious to acquire~~ to move to New Hampshire, especially Stephen. Perhaps he and Lois were also, though even the trip there was arduous not counting the back-breaking toil involved in taming wilderness land for farming. But they had many sons all wanting farms of their own. Farmland ~~was by then scarce in Massachusetts, and prohibitively expensive,~~ so they decided to go. Like so many New England families, they joined the great outward migration. ~~We read the following: Prof Dodge says:~~

"It is shown by the record of deeds in Cheshire County, NH, that Richard and Stephen Dodge of Charlton, Mass. (probably father and son), bought 24 Aug. 1796 of Robert Duncan, gentleman, of New Grantham, NH for 250 dollars, lot 32, first division of New Grantham, being 100 acres, the right of Theodore Atkinson.

"August 28, 1802, Richard and Stephen Dodge of New Grantham sold for 90 dollars to Richard Dodge, Jr., of New G. one half of lot 32 as above, and on the same date Richard Dodge, Jr. for 8 dollars gave a life lease to Richard Dodge for twenty acres, which appears to have been reconveyed to Richard Dodge, Jr., on the 5th February, 1820 for 150 dollars. On the last occasion the town was called Grantham."

From the ~~fortunate~~ letter of Alonzo Allen, Croydon Town Clerk. recorded on the previous page, we have found out that the mother, Lois (Towne) Dodge, passed away on 9 Sept 1812, age not quite 60. Life on the frontier was probably hard on her. A grandson (Ellis Dodge) reported that later Richard V married another lady, and that he was buried "between his two wives." If so, Mr. Allen must have missed that. No one seems to have found out who the lady was. It sounds as though Richard, age 68 in 1820, sold the land back to Richard VI for \$150, finding himself too old to manage his own farm. He lived another 13 years, passing away on Christmas Day 1833.

I was delighted to discover a printed copy of the "Second United States Census - 1800 - New Hampshire - Heads of Families, Cheshire County," showing New Grantham. It shows: *Township, shows three Dodge families*

Dodge, Richard - man & woman over 45, 2 sons under 10, one son between 10 & 16, one son over 16 and one daughter over 16. I take these to be Richard and Lois with Joshua 5, Amasa 8, Parly 12, Lois Jr. 17 and Simon 19. *This would*

Also reflected are Ananiah Dodge 30, Wife Elizabeth 28, William 5, and Cheney 1. *mfu later 26-45, 2 sons under 10. man later 26-45, woman 16-25, 2 boys & a girl under 10*

Levi (our ancestor) 28, Keziah 20, Charlotte 4, Dwight 2 (our ancestor) and tiny baby Jedediah are also shown.

Stephen and Richard VI, ~~then young men,~~ were probably on that date living in a nearby township. *single men*

That July their second child was born in Croydon & Richard *Stephen and Mary were evidently in another town. That July their second child was born in Croydon & Richard* also observed. *age 21 & yet say he was the adjoining town of Croydon (beaming).*

SECOND UNITED STATES CENSUS — 1800 — NEW HAMPSHIRE — HEADS of FAMILIES
CHESHIRE COUNTY

NAMES of HEADS of FAMILIES	FREE WHITE MALES				FREE WHITE FEMALES			
	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families	Of 26 & under 45 including heads of families	Of 45 & upwards including heads of families	Under 10 years of age	Of 10 & under 16	Of 16 & under 26 including heads of families

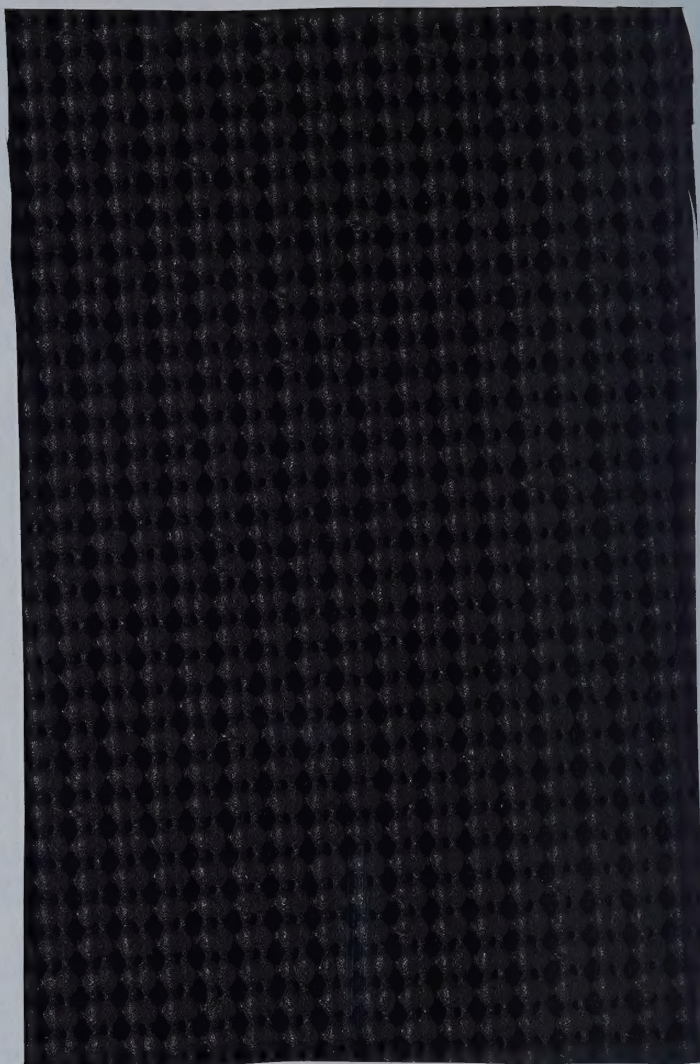
NEW GRATHAM (cont.)

Little, James	1	1				1		1
Little, Ebenezer			1					1
Malavery, Abraham		1	1					1
Marsh, Jesse	2		1			1		1
Massey, Willard	3	1	1			1	1	1
Merrill, Obadiah	3		1	1		2	1	1
Merrill, John	2	1	1	1			1	1
McFarland, James			1					1
Morse, John			1			1		1
Moulton, William	1		1			2		1
Newell, Isaac	1		1			1		1
Newton, Francis	1	1		1		1	1	1
Newton, Francis Junr		1				2	1	
Parker, Stephen		1		1				1
Peck, Joseph	2	1	1			1	1	1
Phillips, Jacob	2		1			1		1
Pierce, John			1				1	2
Pierce, Daniel	1	1	1			3		1
Pierce, Job	2		1			3	1	1
Pierce, William	2		1				1	
Pillsbury, Benjamin			1	1				1
Prentice, John	3	1	1	1		1	1	1
Quimby, John	1		1			3		1
Read, Paul			1			1	1	
Sawyer, Elias	1	1	1			4	1	1
Scott, Charles	1	2	1			2	2	3
Shartliff, Lathrop	2	1	1	1			1	2
Skinner, Joseph				1				1
Skinner, Joseph, Jr	2	1	1			2	1	1
Smith, Richard	2	2	1			2		1
Smith, James	1	1	1			2		1
Spaulding, Amos	1	1	2	1	1	1	1	2
Spaulding, Daniel			1			1		1
Stone, Daniel			1			2		1
Storey, Cyrus	1		1			1		1
Storey, Isaac			1			2		1
Stowell, Isaac				1		1		1
Stowell, Ebenezer	3	2	2	1			1	1
Thompson, Ralph	1	1		1			1	1
Thrasher, Jacob	2	1	1	1		3	1	1
Underhill, John			1			1		1
Woodman, Benjamin	2	2	1			2	1	1

NEWPORT

Atwood, Moses	1		1					1
Atwood, Daniel	2		1			2		2
Atwood, John				1	1	1		1
Atwood, Caleb		1	2				1	1
Atwood, Stephen	1		2			1	1	
Allen, Gideon		1	1	1	1		1	1
Buel, Aaron	1		1			3		1
Buel, Gurden		1	1	1		1	1	1
Buel, John		1	1	1				1
Brown, John			1				1	
Brown, Baxter			1			1		1
Bowman, Abethar	2	2	1	1		2	1	1
Bliss, Henry	1		1			2	2	1
Bimis, Daniel	3	1	1	1	2	1		1
Buel, Joseph			1	1		3	1	1
Buel, John			1			1	1	
Buel, Joseph Jr	3	1	1			3		1
Bascon, Joseph	2		1			1	2	
Bascon, Reuben	3	1	1	1		2	1	1
Brown, Jona	1	1	1			1	1	1
Brown, Elijah	2	1	1	1		3	1	1
Brown, John	1		1			2		1
Carpenter, Elkanah			1					1
Church, Saml	2	3		1		1	3	1
Cutter, John	2		2	1		2	1	1
Cumstock, Jona		2	2	1	1	1	1	1
Curren, Timothy			1				1	1
Chapin, Phinehas	2	1	1			1	2	
Chapin, Daniel	3	1	1	1		2		2
Corbin, James	2		1	2		3	1	1
Chamberlin, Ralph			1			1	1	1
Cutten, Zebalan	3	2		1		2		1
McCollister, Wm	1		1			1		1

Gage, Stephen	1		1	3		1		
Gile, Richard	1		1	1	1			
Gill, True			1			1		
Gleason, Elijah	2	1	2		1	2	1	1
Gove, John	2		1		1	1	1	
Gould, Samuel			1	1				
Griffiths, William	2			1	1	1		1
Hall, Hezekiah	1			1	1	1		1
Hall, Nathaniel	1		1			1		
Hardy, Tristram	1		1	2		1		
Hardy, Eldad			1	1	1		1	
Herriman, Leonard	1		1			1		
Hopkins, Ruth	1				1	1		1
Hopkins, Gardner		1	1		1			
Howard, Henry	2	1	1	2		1		
Hunter, William	1	1		1	2	1		1
Pifield, David	3		1		4		1	1
Huntington, William		3	1	1	1		1	1
Huntoon, Caleb	1			2	3		1	
Huntoon, Charles	1			1	4	2	1	1
Jenne, James		1		1	1	1		1
Jenne, Isaac	1	1		1	1	1	2	1
Jenne, Thomas	1		1			1		
Jennings, Stephen		1		1		1		1
Jennings, Sylvester	1		1		2	1		
Johnson, Abner	3	2	1		2		1	
Johnson, Benjamin	1		1		2	1		1
Judkins, Stephen			1		2	1		
Kenyon, Alexander	2	1	1		2	1	2	1
King, Peter		1	2	1	1			1
Lamberton, Obed	1	2			1	2	1	1
Lamberton, Obed Junr			1				1	
Leavitt, Nathaniel				1				1
Leavitt, Nathaniel Junr	2		1		3	2		1
Leavitt, Dudley	3		1		2		1	
Leavitt, John	1		1		1			1
Leavitt, Jeremiah	2	1			2			1
Lewis, Lyman	1				1			



DODGE FAMILY

Below is copy of a modern map showing the southern part of New Hampshire. When our Dodges lived there, New Grantham (now called Grantham) and Croydon where they first settled, were part of Cheshire County. Dwight's younger sister Charlotte, and brother Ellis, whose stories are told, lived for some time at Rumney.



DODGE FAMILY

Children of Richard V and Lois (Towne) Dodge:

Ananiah	23 Nov 1770-26 Dec 1846	m 29 Aug 1792	Elizabeth Janes
+Levi	23 Jun 1772- 8 Dec 1835	15 Mar 1796	Keziah Ellis
Stephen	24 Oct 1774-	10 Nov 1799	Mary Dunbar
Richard 6	2 Mar 1779-11 May 1872	29 Nov 1802	Levina Ellis
Simon	22 Feb 1781-23 Sep 1817	?ca 1805	Mary Turnbull
Lois	24 Aug 1783-13 Sep 1872	?	?did she marry?
John	11 Dec 1785-died young		
Parly	24 Mar 1788- 18	?ca 1810	Helena Cooper
Patty	10 Aug 1790-died young		
Amasa	15 Oct 1792- 18		
Joshua	23 Nov 1795 ca 1874(1)	1817	Levina Carpenter
	(2)30 Mar 1837		Esther Wetherspoon

The information on the sons and daughter of this family is in some cases sparse or missing--understandable since they settled in a hilly, rugged frontier area, went through two wars--the American Revolution and the War of 1812--and some of them moved far away, even to other states.

Record-keeping must have taken a back seat to just plain survival. We follow son Levi (having at last left the Richards) so here are some little sketches on the others.

Ananiah Dodge was a shoemaker. That particular industry became a big thing in certain areas of Massachusetts and a town or so in Maine, and factories sprung up employing thousands. Ananiah seems to have been quite skilled at his trade. We have ⁸ a particular interest in this son, because his grandson, William a fine young man, played a particular role in the lives of some of our ancestors.

Ananiah's wife, Elizabeth Janes, lived in Brimfield, Hampshire County MA just over the county line and quite close to the family's home in Charlton, and they were married while the family was *still* there. The easiest way to show the movements of this unit is to tell where the couple's children were born. The first two, William Janes⁷ (father of young William just referred to) and Susan were born in North Adams, MA. The next three were born in Croyden, NH, not far from his parents in New Grantham. Ananiah, Jr., born 1805 in Cambridge, MA, a shoemaking center, eventually migrated to Neutral City, Kansas. (Because he was opposed to slavery?) The last three were born in Prospect and Swanville, Maine, where the mother, Elizabeth, died age 58. Some of the children became very prosperous. After his wife's death, he and some of his children returned to Palmer MA, near Brimfield, where he died age 76.

Stephen *How*
Simon Dodge married Mary Turnbull at Damariscotta, Maine, date not stated. He was a boot-and-shoemaker, and also a musician in the War of 1812 stationed at Castine, Maine. The couple had six children. Huldah was probably born shortly after his death, in 1817, and died at age 14. His widow married a Mr. John Gibbs of Scotland and had three more children.

DODGE FAMILY

is said to have moved to New Hampshire first, in 1797, his father
Stephen Dodge was born, it is said, in Royalston which is strangely far north. Perhaps they meant Boylston which is closer. He migrated with the family to New Grantham and married Mary Dunbar there, who had been born at Bridgewater MA. They had 11 children but not all lived. The last two, Susan and Mary Jane, were born at Sand Lake, Rensselaer County, New York--the first of our near line to live in New York. That is in the Albany/Troy area, where several of them later lived. Stephen served in the War of 1812.

Richard Dodge VI was a farmer. The Dodge genealogy gives his birth and death date--he lived to the ripe old age of 93--and mentions him buying and selling land from and to his father and that is all. But in researching the Ellis Family because our ancestor, his brother Levi, married Keziah Ellis, I found in the Sturbridge MA vital records, not only his brother's marriage but his as well, for he married Keziah's sister, Levina. They were specific enough to say, on page 192 under Ellis, "Levina & Richard Dodge, Jr of New Grantham (int adds Vt) Nov 29, 1802." Not only is it nice to know that, but it adds to our understanding of the family as you will see later on. It is frustrating not to know whether he and Levina had little Richard VII, for it seems logical they would have. It would seem they prospered there in New Grantham.

the only daughter grown up
Lois Dodge, we are told, was born in 1783 and died 13 Sept. 1872, at the age of 89. Whether she stayed single or married and raised a family was not told. *Nothing was told of her life*

Parly Dodge, born in Sutton, married Helena Cooper of Croyden NH who was "descended from the Leland family." They had three children, the oldest of whom was deputy sheriff and auctioneer. The youngest was a teacher in Boston.

Nothing but birthdates were given for John and Patty. By the censuses we can tell they died very young, probably as babies.

Joshua Dodge, the youngest, was a year or two old when they moved to New Hampshire and likely that was the only kind of life he knew. He became a farmer. It was told of him that he was "of more than medium size with great strength and vigor, characteristic of his immediate relatives."

The reason that was underlined was in case it describes his brother Levi, our ancestor, and his son Dwight who migrated to Missouri. It might. They were both blacksmiths. Joshua married twice and had eight children.

References:

Sturbridge Vital Records to 1850

Notes and Memoranda Relating to Persons of the Name of Towne -

by William B. Towne, first published in the New England Register beginning in October 1866 (Vol XX:367)

There are many Towne sources. Almost every book about the Salem Witchcraft Trials mentions Rebecca (Towne) Nurse.

DODGE FAMILYLEVI AND FAMILY

Levi Dodge⁶ (Richard⁵ Richard⁴ Richard³ Richard² Richard¹) ~~was~~ ²⁸
 born 22 June 1772 in Sutton, Worcester Co., MA ^{was 35} ³⁵
 and Lois (Towne) Dodge. On 15 Mar 1796 in Sturbridge MA, age 23, ⁶³
 he married 16-year old Keziah Ellis born 15 February 1780, ^{to daughter of}
Jedediah and Martha (Freeman) Ellis.

*our country as
office in the
militia*
~~Of course, histories on the Ellis and Freeman Families will be~~ ^{Role of}
~~included as part of this set. Keziah's grandfathers were war~~ ^{and}
~~veterans. Samuel Ellis was a Captain in the Revolutionary War~~
~~and Samuel Freeman was a Lieutenant in the French and Indian War.~~

early,
~~Levi and Keziah soon had two little babies in Sturbridge, Charlotte~~ ^{slightly over two years 24 months.}
~~the oldest then Dwight, our ancestor. In 1799 they took those~~
~~little ones with them to New Hampshire. As their youngest son,~~
~~Ellis, born 26 years after they moved there, told it, his grand-~~
~~father Richard (and probably Stephen though he did not say so)~~ ^{and}
~~moved to New Grantham in 1798 and the rest of the sons and~~
~~daughters followed him the next year. One would imagine the~~
~~mother, Lois, also stayed behind for some of the children, such~~
~~as Joshua, age 2½, were quite young at the time. Anyway, he said~~
~~"they moved with ox teams about 125 miles through the wilderness~~
~~to an unbroken tract where everything was to be done. Levi built~~
~~a home on his father's land, near his father, and remained on~~
~~the same farm until his death."~~

was reported
 We are lucky that Ellis told all this to the historian, or else
 we probably would know almost nothing about the lives of Keziah
 and Levi. However, he may have related the information in a way
 hard to understand, or Dr. Dodge may have misinterpreted some of
 what was told to him. Also, since all this happened 26 years
 before Ellis was born, he was relying on what people had told
 him, when he was little. I think some of it was misconstrued, ^{it}
 for it was told that he said "Keziah's two unmarried sisters,
 Olive and Dorothy Ellis, went along" to live with them. The way
 it was told, it seemed that the sisters were young ladies.

No
~~I don't~~ doubt those girls did go, though their presence is not
 reflected on the 1800 New Hampshire census. No wonder, because
 in studying Sturbridge vital records I found that Dorothy Ellis
 was born 18 December 1792 and Olive 2 December 1794. In the summer
 of 1799 they would have been ^{over} 6½ and 4½. They did not go at that
 time. In November 1802 their older sister, Levina, married their
 already-brother-in-law, Richard Dodge VI, of New Grantham. ~~No~~ ^{They}
 reason to go yet. ^{prolary did not move with her, either.}

later
 But some terrible sickness must have struck their family, perhaps
 an epidemic, because on 9 May 1804 their mother, Martha age 47,
 died. A month later, on 14 June 1804, their father Jedediah Ellis,
 age 53, also succumbed. So Clive age 9½ and Dorothy age 11½
 obviously went to live with their sisters in New Hampshire because
 they were orphans! ^{then} Little sister Lucreatia, born 28 Feb 1798, who
 was ^{she} then 6 years old, probably stayed with other relatives in the
 area and married Reuben Lealand of Grafton in 1817. Maybe he

In 1817 she

DODGE FAMILY

was related to Parly Dodge's wife of the previous generation. *who said had hope*
~~We won't go into who Keziah Ellis Dodge's other siblings were,~~
~~just mentioned these because of the little girls who went to live~~
~~with the Dodges in New Hampshire.~~ *were mentioned here before*

You will be told about the Ellis family in another section wonderful to have
 Levi and Keziah and all the others probably thought it was a great opportunity to acquire new homesteads in New Hampshire, not realizing that the type of agriculture they were used to did not work so well on rocky, timber-covered hills in a cooler climate. At any rate they went, and settled on land belonging to his father. No doubt they wore themselves out clearing raw land, hauling stones, and trying to eke out a living for their family there. She must have missed her parents at first and mourned their early deaths. Bearing 12 children probably weakened her.

Levi was a blacksmith, and probably also a farmer. He died 8 Dec. 1835 at Croyden, Cheshire County (now Sullivan) NH, two years after his father. Keziah was left with no income and the children were not entirely grown. She probably had medical and funeral expenses to pay. They did not own the farm they were living on. There is no doubt the years had taken their toll on her health. She certainly could not carry on her husband's blacksmith business. More of the story will unfold as this progresses, *50 years? She was only 16 years old when she came.* but she finally went back to Palmer, near Sturbridge, where she had relatives, and died there 4 February 1845, age 65.

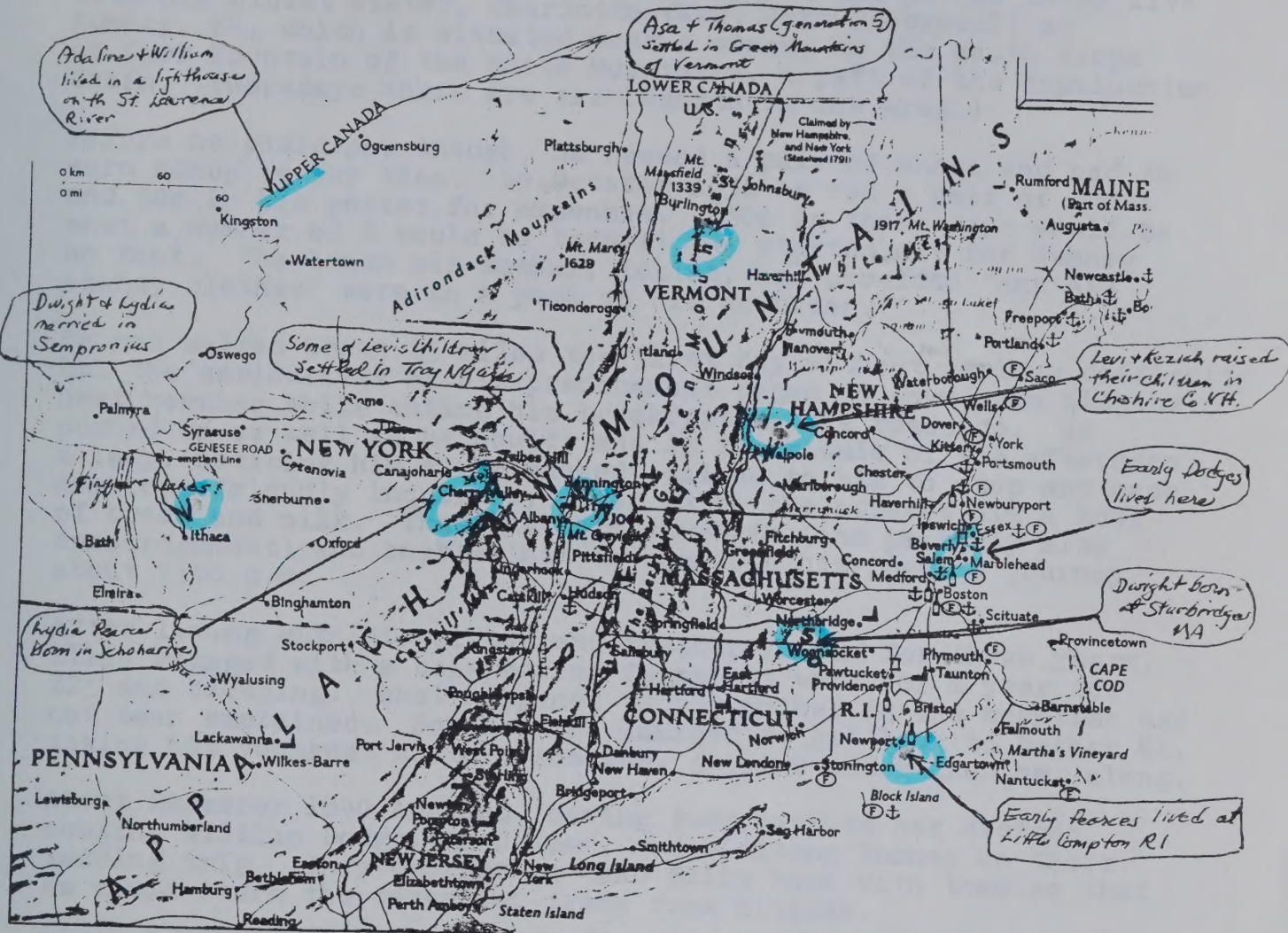
Children of Levi and Keziah (Ellis) Dodge:

Charlotte	9 Jun 1796- 8 Dec 1866	m	18	John Stockwell
+Dwight	28 May 1798-23 Aug 1869	(1) 21 Dec 1817		Susanna Monroe
		(2) 9 Dec 1830		Lydia W. Pearce
Jedediah	7 Mar 1800-20 Aug 1825	ca 1822		Martha Blanchard
Levi Jr.	17 Mar 1802-	1862	ca 1824	Oliver Blanchard
Keziah Jr.	27 Aug 1804-22 Mar 1875	(1)	18	Nathan Holbrook
		(2)	18	Cyrus Olds
John	17 Jan 1807-26 Feb 1807			infant
Freeman	17 Feb 1809-15 Jan 1886	24 Oct 1830		Candace Stockwell
Simon	6 Jul 1811- 3 Sep 1811			infant
Silas	21 Feb 1814- 1 Oct 1818			age 4
Samuel Orison	19 Apr 1818- 7 Oct 1839			age 21
Adaline	2 Apr 1820-living 1898	23 Nov 1840		William Dodge
Ellis	7 May 1825-living 1898	(1) 30 May 1846		Ellen Jane Cook
		(2) 11 Sep 1862		Edna Louise Wagon

Since we follow Dwight Dodge, the next step, of course, is to give short sketches of what we know of the lives of the others. In this one case, however, we will break with tradition and tell about the youngest son, Ellis, first, then start with the oldest, Charlotte, on down. The reason for this unusual procedure is that he was the one who gave all the information to the historian, and events in his life shed so much light on the activities of the others that the story will be clearer this way.

DODGE FAMILY

Map charting some early Dodge & Pearce family migrations.



Ellis Dodge said the family moved 125 miles to New Hampshire by ox cart.

See preceding page for details of investigation.



DODGE FAMILY

Ellis Dodge, the youngest, born 7 May 1825 in Croydon, NH, reported that the death of his father in December 1835 when he was ten years old, left him without any means of support; and he had to go live with his oldest sister, Charlotte (Mrs. John Stockwell) at Rumney, NH, which is situated near a stream on the south slope of Carr Mountain of the White Mountains, a part of the Appalachian Chain. (Nowadays there are ski resorts in the area.)

Before he could go, though, he needed a pair of shoes and had to earn money to buy them. By October 1836 he had a pair of shoes and 50¢ in his pocket for expenses. (50¢ in those days would be what a number of \$ would be today!) He started out for Rumney on foot. The lunch his mother, Keziah, had provided "and his scanty clothes" were in a pack on his shoulder.

He had walked about 25 miles the first day without serious difficulty but the seriousness of his predicament began to dawn upon him the next morning while eating his breakfast by the roadside. He pushed on as well as he could; and in the middle of the afternoon a lady, noticing him as he passed, called to him to stop and made numerous friendly inquiries, after which she offered him a bowl of bread and milk. That gave him strength (and probably also encouragement) and enabled him to complete his 50-mile journey about 7:00 p.m.

After living with his sister and brother-in-law for three years, Ellis engaged with a neighboring farmer to work for a year for \$25 and clothing. What happened to his mother in the meantime has not been explained. Somehow she managed to get back to Palmer MA, taking his youngest sister, Adeline, 5 years older than he, along.

About December 1840 Adeline, having just married her distant cousin, William Dodge, in Palmer, was visiting Rumney on their wedding trip. They decided to take Ellis home with them so that he could learn the carpenter trade from William.

Ellis stayed with them for a while, learning the trade, and then went to Troy, New York, to work as a carpenter. (Though he did not say so, it seems as though there were Stockwell families in Troy who were relatives of Adeline's husband and his brother Freeman Dodge's wife.) So he probably had someone to stay with at first. On 30 May 1846 he married Miss Cook, who later died. On 1 Nov 1849 he commenced working for a railroad line as car builder, after a year becoming a master car builder. Then he transferred to another train line at Albany; then to the Troy & Boston Railroad, getting promotions. By November 1855 he was living in Brooklyn working as master car builder for the Brooklyn Street Railway Co.. He married Miss Wager in 1862. There were no children from either marriage. In 1869 he returned to Troy. This talented man took out four patents on inventions very useful to railroads of his day. Like so many Dodges, he finally returned to Palmer where he was still living in 1898, drawing royalties.

DODGE FAMILY

Charlotte Dodge, oldest of 12 children, was born 9 June 1796 in Sturbridge to a 16-year old mother. When she was only three, her parents took her and her little brother with them 125 miles through the wilderness by ox team to a hilly farm they were trying to carve out of the upper Connecticut River Valley frontier. She grew up there and married John Stockwell in Croydon, NH. John was probably related to her brother Freeman's wife, Candace.

The couple went to live at Rumney, NH. Modern maps show Rumney situated near a stream on the south slope of a mountain in the White Mountain range. They raised three children we know of, and took in and cared for her young brother Ellis when her father died and her mother could not care for him. Possibly two of their daughters were Laura Davis and Martha Davis?? Like so many in the clan, this family wound up in Palmer. She died 8 Dec 1866, age 70.

Jedediah Dodge, named for his Grandfather Ellis, married Martha Blanchard. They lived in Croydon where they had two children, Martha and Martin. He died 20 Aug 1825, age 25, when his son was three months old.

Levi Dodge, Jr., born 17 Mar 1802, married Olive Blanchard of Croydon, probably sister of Jedediah's wife. They lived at Grantham, Chelsea, then Randolph. He died in 1862. Four sons:

Elias who lived in Lowell MA

Elbridge who migrated to Wisconsin

Austin who migrated to Missouri

Henry who migrated "out west."

This is going to be out of chronological order, but we are very interested about that third son, Austin, born Jan 1831 in NH, because he came West to join his Uncle Dwight and his cousins in 1869. Dr. Dodge says he brought his widowed mother, Olive (Blanchard) Dodge with him, though this writer did not see her name on the 1870 census. He brought his wife, Mary Letitia (Lillie?) Dodge born 1842 in NY State, and a tiny daughter, Nellie N. Dodge born 31 Oct 1867, who died that fall, less than two years old. One can't help but wonder if the hard journey had anything to do with that.

Austin was a blacksmith and Letitia was a milliner. They lived in town in Hamilton, Missouri. They had another little girl, Effie, but he did not live to see her grow up, for he died soon--on 4 Apr 1875, and is buried in the oldest Hamilton cemetery beside the first little daughter.

On 20 Jan 1876 the widow, Mary Letitia Dodge, married Dr. Ray D. Dwight. I do not know whether they had any children, but little Effie grew up to be a winsome lass with long, beautiful hair. Letitia must have enjoyed making pretty hats for her. Effie married a personable young man named George Fine, and probably moved to Muskogee, Oklahoma with him. (according to George Dodge's notes--though somebody misinformed George that Austin was the son of Keziah Dodge, Jr., whose sketch follows next.)

...at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

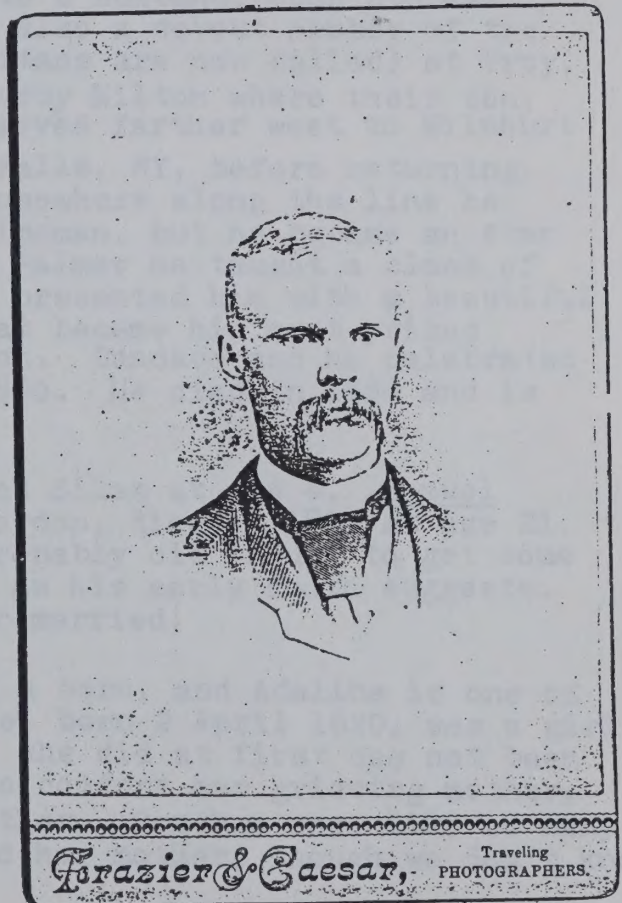
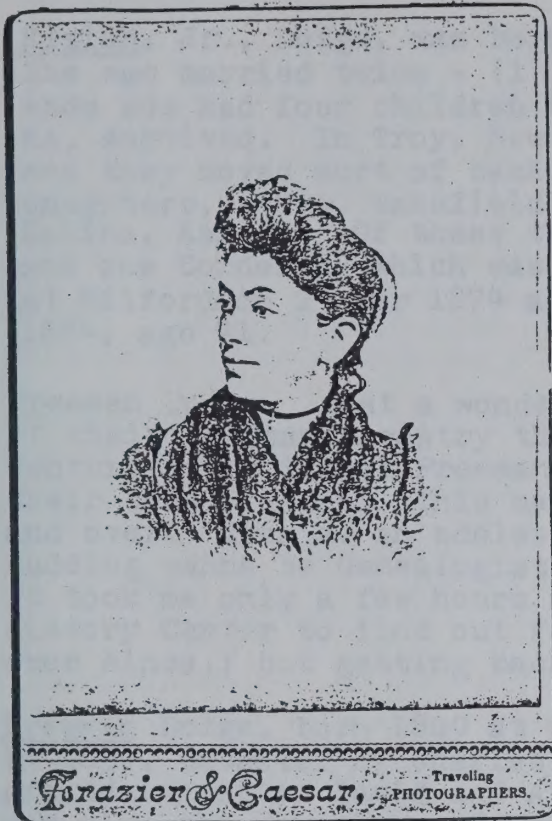
... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

... at 12 children, and born 1795 in ... to a 15-year old mother. When she was only three, her ... her father's ... at 12 ...

DODGE FAMILY



TOP - Effie (Dodge) Fine, daughter of Austin Dodge, an early-day settler. Austin was nephew of Rev. Dwight Dodge. BOTTOM - Letitia Dodge, Effie's mother, who later married Dr. R. D. Dwight; and Effie's husband, George Fir

DODGE FAMILY

Keziah, Jr., Dodge, was born 27 Aug 1804 at Croydon, New Hampshire. She was married twice - (1) to Nathan Holbrook of Croydon, with whom she had four children but only one, a Mrs. Palmer of Worcester, MA, survived. In Troy, New York, she married (2) to Cyrus Olds and they moved sort of back east to Milford, MA. They had two daughters, a Mrs. Wakefield of Keokuk, Iowa, and a Mrs. Judd of Salina, Kansas. Of these three ladies, supposedly one was Rosilla and one Cordelia--which was which I haven't a clue. Keziah died at Milford on 25 Mar 1874 and Mr. Olds later in the year, 19 Nov 1874, age 71.

Freeman Dodge. What a wonderful name! The Dodges were so proud of their Freeman ancestry that half a continent away nearly a century after Samuel Freeman died, the Dodges were still naming their sons Freeman. This man is but a sample, it occurred over and over. Even as an adolescent I suspected that was so and every budding wanna be Genealogist needs a success for encouragement. It took me only a few hours looking at microfiche at a Family History Center to find out for sure it was so, and I've been hooked ever since.) but getting back to earth--

Freeman Dodge, born 1809 at Croydon, married Candace Stockwell in 1830, daughter of Charles and Caroline (Bellows) Stockwell and granddaughter of David and Abial (Giles) Stockwell. Perhaps that was also the genealogy of Charlotte's husband, John Stockwell. Freeman Dodge was a policeman and also a devout member of the Congregational Church (as the Puritans are now called) at Troy, New York. Later they moved to nearby Milton where their son, Freeman M. Dodge, was born, then moved farther west to Wilmhurt in Herkimer County, then Trenton Falls, NY, before returning, like other Dodges, to Palmer. Somewhere along the line he became a butcher instead of a policeman, but he became an even more pious Congregationalist. In Palmer he taught a class of young men at the church, and they presented him with a beautiful engraving of the "Last Supper" that became his most prized possession, and his son's later on. Candace and he celebrated their golden wedding 24 October 1880. He died in 1886 and is buried at Palmer.

John and Simon died as infants, and Silas at age 4. Samuel Orrison Dodge, born in 1818 at Croydon, died in 1839 at age 21. He was 17 when his father died--probably old enough to get some kind of work unless he was sickly as his early death suggests. There is no indication he was ever married.

Adaline Dodge! Every story needs a hero, and Adaline is one of the heroines of this one. Adaline, born 2 April 1820, was a girl of 15 when her father died. What she did at first has not been told, but she undoubtedly tried to comfort her grieving mother, and felt sorry for her little brother. Somehow she, like so many Dodges, wound up in Palmer, as did her mother, though we don't know who took whom and when.

DODGE FAMILY

What we do know is that Adaline had a big heart and that the young man she⁸ married just couldn't have been nicer. Her husband, William Dodge⁷ (William Janes⁷ Ananiah⁶ Richard⁵) was cousin of Adaline Dodge⁷ (Levi⁶ Richard⁵) in that her grandfather was his great grandfather. A little sketch about his grandfather, Ananiah, appears on page 51. Our William was the second oldest of the 14 children of Ananiah's son William Janes⁷, a tanner and shoe-maker. William must have learned cooperation very early, and his father must have made many shoes to support a family like that.

Though William was born in Maine, he was working as a carpenter in Palmer when he and Adaline met and married. This 22-year old young man took the 15-year old boy from New Hampshire to his own home and taught him to be a good carpenter who succeeded very well. He must have realized Ellis was bright and hard working. Perhaps he thought he could assist him in his own business. More likely he had a kind heart and loved his wife so wanted to make her happy.

Besides being a carpenter, he was a tax collector and census taker. They probably moved to Troy, New York, with Ellis, for William served in the Civil War from 1862-64 as a Captain in the New York Volunteers. After the war he and Adaline were keepers of a lighthouse on Sister Island on the St. Lawrence River. They had four children. Baby Charlotte died age 2. Flavius and William Orrison lived near them in New York. Ellen Jane lived near, too, but across the river on the Canadian side.

Footnote: You will understand this better as the story progresses, but William and Adeline kept in touch with their Missouri relatives. Perhaps duties at the lighthouse left them with ample time for correspondence. It appears William did much of the writing. Our cousin George was privileged to see, or was told of, some of the letters. His notes mention two of them. One was from William O. Dodge, Sister Island Light Station, on St. Lawrence River (return address) dated 15 April 1880 to John Dodge and his wife. In it he mentioned two of Charlotte's daughters and (George's) Aunt Keziah's daughters Rosilla and Cordelia, also his brother, Flavius. (The writing or reporting was bad--William had no brother Flavius. He did have sister Flavilla and son Flavius.)

The other letter, dated 9 July 1880, appears to have been sent to Susanna McCollum, daughter of Dwight's son Silas. William mentioned Charlotte's daughters Laura Davis and Martha Davis, also Letitia Lillie (apparently in Missouri, and probably Austin's wife--pages 57-8.) He also gave his regards to nephews John and Silas.

References:

Virkus Compendium of American Genealogy Series Vol 7 Page 142
This is a series of abbreviated genealogical tables.
The first column goes from Immigrant John Ellis (Ellice) to John Ellis brother of our Captain Samuel Ellis (Keziah's grandfather).
The second column goes from Immigrant Samuel Freeman to Lt. Samuel Freeman (her other grandfather), and also reveals her Mayflower ancestry.
Vital Records to the Year 1850 of (separately) Sturbridge, Charlton, Southbridge, Palmer, Newton, Needham, Medfield, Medway and others
Massachusetts Soldiers & Sailors in the War of the Revolution (under E's) Page 315, third entry from top-Capt. Samuel Ellis of Sturbridge
Massachusetts Officers in the French & Indian Wars 1748-1763 by Voyer Entry #2080 is Lt. Samuel Freeman of Sturbridge
Freeman Genealogy - by Frederick Freeman (1875)
Volume I - Memorial of Edmund Freeman of Sandwich and His Descendants
Volume II - Memorial of Samuel Freeman of Watertown and His Descendants
Keziah was descended from both of these men.
First Census of the United States--Worcester County, MA
Early Connecticut Marriages Prior to 1800 - Frederick W. Bailey
History of Worcester County, Massachusetts, Vol II - Section on Sturbridge especially, and of Sutton, Charlton, etc incidentally. (1879 and other editions)
History of Sturbridge and Southbridge
New England Register Vol 65:155 - Interpretation of Woodward's and Saffery's Map of 1642, or the Earliest Bay Path - by Levi Badger Chase, esq. of Sturbridge, Mass. (this is not must reading since it covers such an early date, but gives good background on the locale and its effect on those who settled there, including our people who were pioneers)

No printed Ellis genealogy reaches far enough down in time to help us much, so the Ellis Family segment will be the result of years of hard work capped off by the accidental discovery of an unpublished paper by a descendant of Keziah (Ellis) Dodge's granduncle. Checking that paper for accuracy helped prove our own line.

Dwight Dodge⁷ (Levi⁶ Richard⁵ Richard⁴ Richard³ Richard² Richard¹) the second of twelve children, was born 38 May 1798 in Sturbridge* to Levi and Keziah (Ellis) Dodge when his mother was 18. Next year, when he was a year old, his parents took him and his three-year old sister along with the family group 125 miles by ox cart "through the wilderness to an unbroken tract where everything was to be done." The usual route, and that which they probably took, was a road over what had been an ancient Indian path to Springfield MA, and thence up a trail paralleling the Connecticut River to Western New Hampshire, stopping before they had quite reached the White Mountains.

Not that they were the first in Cheshire County. There had been some people there for many years, including Dodges not closely related to them, but until the land crunch few had stayed. The land was more suited to sheep raising, or to the dairying industry now prevalent in that area, than the general farming-grain raising they had in mind. During the frontier days it was too difficult to get to market. The land Dwight's grandfather purchased was full of timber to be cleared and unbroken to the plow. Some of the acreage may have been on what there was of a Connecticut River flood plain, but most was hilly, rocky, and the growing season short.

Not much was said about their family life there. Views of the nearby mountains may have been breathtakingly beautiful but that does not put food into hungry young mouths. Levi was probably a very good blacksmith. He taught the trade to Dwight, who used it to good advantage. Levi did not own his farm--his father did. As the preceding pages have shown, most of the sons and daughters--and all of them appear to have been bright and capable--settled someplace else, in Maine, Massachusetts, Troy NY, or even in a lighthouse on an island in the St. Lawrence River. They became shoemakers, carpenters and so on. Freeman the policeman-turned-butcher who started out in Troy, NY, wound up as a religion teacher in Palmer. You can tell this family was religiously-inclined.

Our ancestor, Dwight, a blacksmith like his father, was extremely religious, too, and became a minister of the Gospel, most likely during his early twenties.

The family Bible says he married on 21 Dec 1817, Susanna Monroe, born 10 August 1799 in Croyden, Cheshire County, New Hampshire. The 1800 census shows a Mr. & Mrs. Nathaniel Monroe. Maybe they were her parents. One might take it for granted that they married in New Hampshire, but the usually detailed Bible is silent about that one place. Dr. J. T. Dodge reported Dwight "married in Sempronius, New York, a lady from Croyden, New Hampshire."

*The Dodge Family Bible says "Dwight Dodge was born in Stirbridge State of Massachusetts County of Wossester May the 28th 1798."

Though I have never run across that, it has been said that a book reported he was born in New York.

DODGE FAMILY

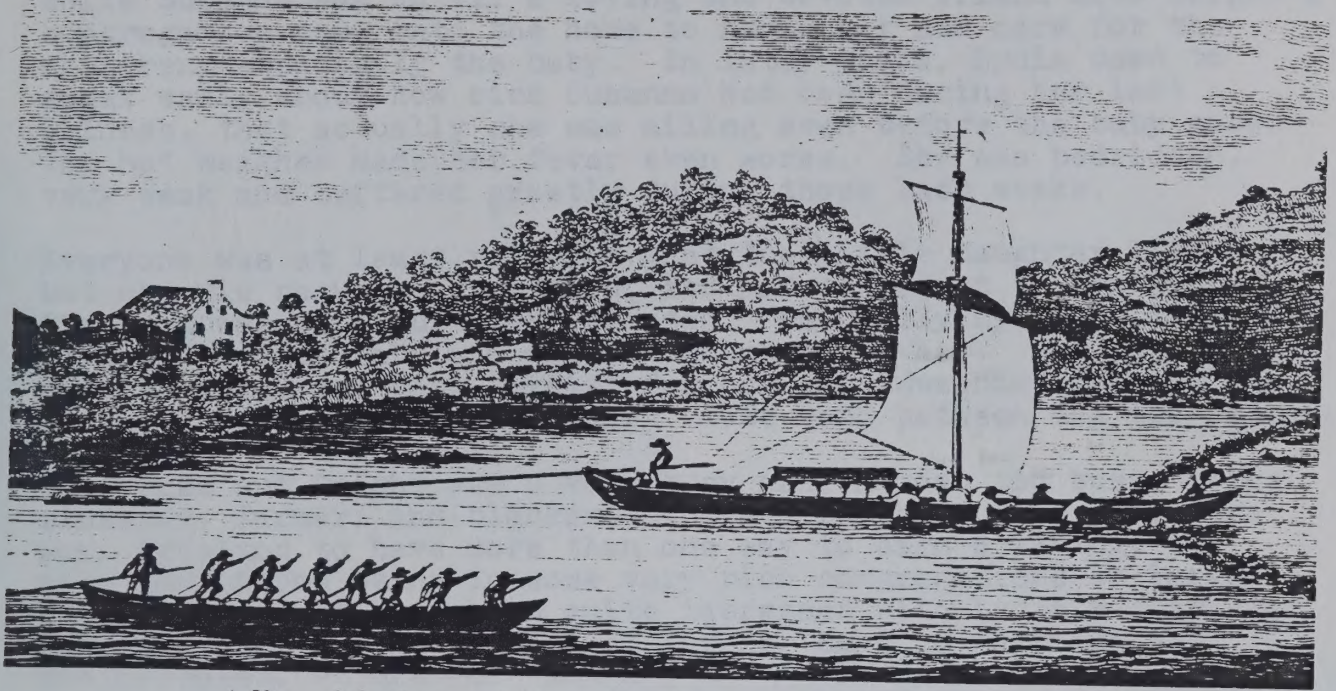
Perhaps these youngsters, ages 18 and 19, each came west separately seeking opportunity and were delighted to meet again. Several Dodge families were already in the area. No one has said whether they were distant cousins or if Dwight made contact with them. The prosperous Finger Lakes region was already settled, this being in the military district set aside for land grants for Revolutionary War veterans.

The "History of Cayuga County" says that the Indians who had previously occupied the Finger Lakes region had been "civilized" for centuries to the point where they lived in longhouse villages, not teepees, and planted fine fields of squash, corn, and vegetables, that they were not such fierce warriors as the tribes who roamed the eastern part of the state. The land was already cleared when the white settlers got there.

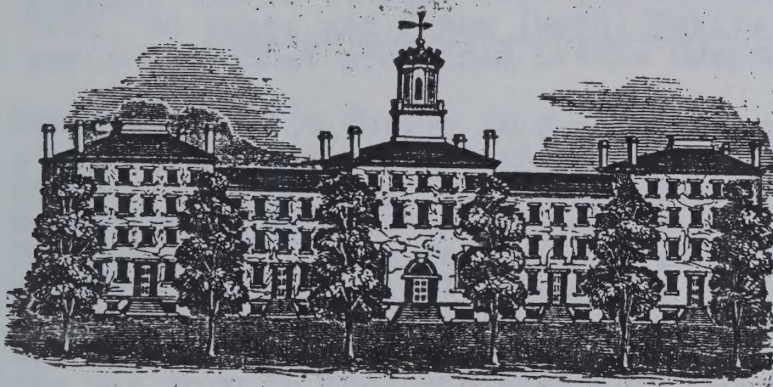
It was easy to get to that place from New Hampshire. A picture on the next page shows boats on the Mohawk River in 1810. They came seven years later when transportation was even better. Originally the only really difficult part of the journey was caused by swift currents at the juncture of the Mohawk and the Hudson, necessitating a very long portage. To reach the Hudson from New Hampshire, most travelers took a pretty good road going east-west across far southern Vermont, widened from an old Indian trail that had been used for centuries. Highway 9 now approximates that route. The reason to think they went that way is that most everybody did.

So, perhaps Dwight and Susanna met again in Sempronius, fell in love, and got married--but ancestor sleuths have to be nosy people, otherwise we would never learn anything. It looks to me as though Dwight and the neighbor girl eloped. Adding to that suspicion is the fact that eight months later their oldest child, Silas Dwight, was born in Sempronius, but when the next child, Lucy, came they were back in Newport, New Hampshire. That suggests probably her parents were there and she wanted to be near them when the baby came, especially if the first birth was slightly premature. The family does show up on the 1820 New Hampshire census. They were back in New York soon after. Little Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius but died in 1822, aged one year and three days.

About this period in time, exact date unknown, Dwight became a minister of the Gospel. He soon had a sizeable congregation. Susannah's health seems to have been delicate, but they had two more children, John Freeman in 1824 and then Lydia Susanna on 13 July 1830. Three weeks and two days later Susannah died - on 5 August 1830, age 31. She probably died of puerperal fever or a body damaged in previous child bearing. People still did not know about germs in those days. Even if they had they might not have been able to save her life.



A View of the Boats and Manner of Navigating on the Mohawk River, 1810



Auburn Theological Seminary.

The *Auburn Theological Seminary* was established by the synod of Geneva in 1819, and by the act of incorporation, in 1820, was placed under commissioners, chosen by the synods of Genesee, Geneva, and Oneida. There are four professors in the institution. Over 300 clergymen have been educated since its establishment. In 1839, the number of students was 71. The principal building is of stone, presenting a front of 200 feet. The library exhibits a valuable collection of choice theological works, and contains upwards of 5,000 vols. No charge is made for the use of the library, rooms, or furniture. The *Methodist Episcopal* society was organized in 1821; their house, on Chapel-street, was erected soon after, and has been since sold to the Catholics; their present stone chapel, on North-street, was erected in 1833. The *Baptist* society was organized in 1825, and built a church on South-street, (since sold to the Universalists,) in 1829; their church on Genesee-street was erected in 1834. The *Second Presbyterian* society was organized in 1829, and the foundation of their house laid.

ABOVE--Before the Canal. There was no such thing as the Erie Canal when Dwight or Lydia first lived in New York State but it was being used actively by the time they left.

LEFT--It may well be that Dwight never set foot in the seminary depicted here, but at least the family was familiar with it, for this is how it looked while they were living not so very many miles south of there.
(written 1841)

DODGE FAMILY

While Susanna was so ill a loving and devoted friend from Dwight's congregation came into the home to nurse her and care for the children, especially the baby. In later years, Lydia used to speak sadly about how sick Susanna had been during her last illness, that actually she was ailing even before the baby came. The hot weather made her fever even worse. She was bedridden, very weak and suffered greatly during those last weeks.

Everyone was at least relieved that the little daughter lived but she did require extra care, and had to adjust to cow's milk. The heat was difficult for her, too. Naturally Lydia fell in love with the little baby who was so dependent on her. The baby's parents named the baby "Lydia" for her and "Susanna" for her own mother. There was always a very close bond between the two Lydias.

It turned out Dwight was a very busy man, almost too busy, being minister, farmer, and blacksmith. Back in those days ministers were expected to have more than one way to earn a living, the only exceptions being in some very rich congregations in large cities. He must have been quite impressed with Lydia's character and devotion, for he soon asked for her hand in marriage and she accepted. *They were married 4 months after Susanna's death.*

On 9 December 1830 (Reverend) Dwight Dodge married Lydia Woodman Pearce, born 6 October 1802 in Schoharie, Schoharie County, New York, to James and Phebe (Wood) Pearce who had only recently arrived in that area from Little Compton, Rhode Island.

Locating Lydia's family in New York records was a little complicated at first until we caught on that when they changed states they also changed the spelling of the name from "Pearce" to "Pierce." It had something to do with politics--I'm still fuzzy about the details. The Dodge Bible says Pearce, but my mother used to point indignantly at the word and say, "It should be Pierce. I'm positive of that!" There are two rather comprehensive genealogies of the Pearces but by the time they get down to her details get sparse. One said she was born in 1802 and married a Dodge, nothing about leaving Rhode Island. The other does say she was living in Kingston, Mo. They definitely give her ancestry back to the early 1600's.

The 1810 Schoharie NY census, page 034 shows James Pearce, man & wife over 45, boy -10, boy & 2 girls 10-16, 2 boys & girl 16-20, young lady 26-45 which fits our family except Lydia was 8, not 10.

James Pearce died 22 July 1820. By 1830 Lydia & her mother Phebe were living with her older brother Giles and his family in Sempronius page 311 of the census; her brother George & family on page 337; and Dwight Dodge & family page 309. Several families of both surnames were there. I am not sure when they moved to Cayuga County but they must have been there several years, for they had been enthusiastic members of Dwight's congregation by then.

DODGE FAMILY

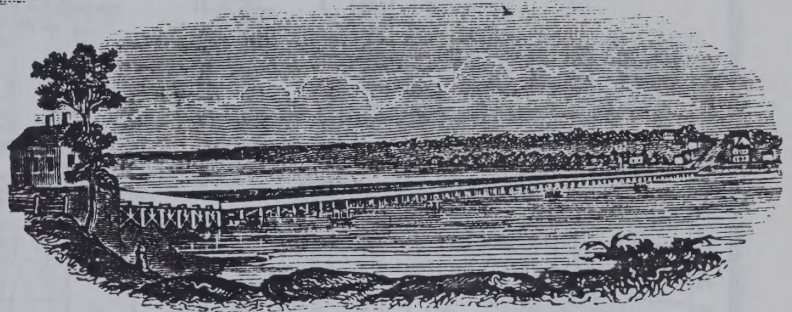
Engravings from "Historical Collections of the State of New York" - J.W. Barber et al, Tuttle, printed 1841 while our Dodes were living there.



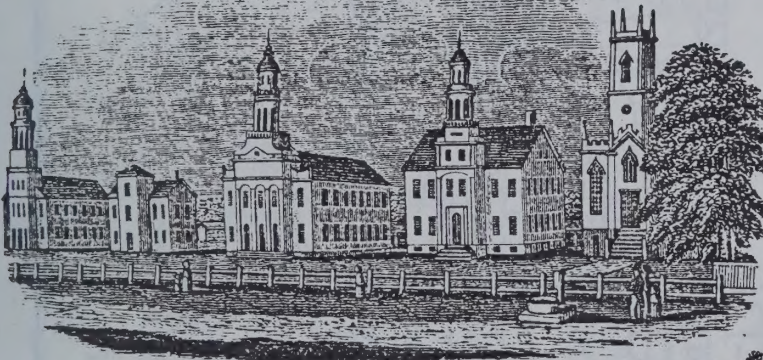
Prisoners at the State Prison at Auburn.

All these pictures were from woodcuts. Photography had not yet been invented.

Prisoners would cry foul at such treatment nowadays but back then jail was for punishment.

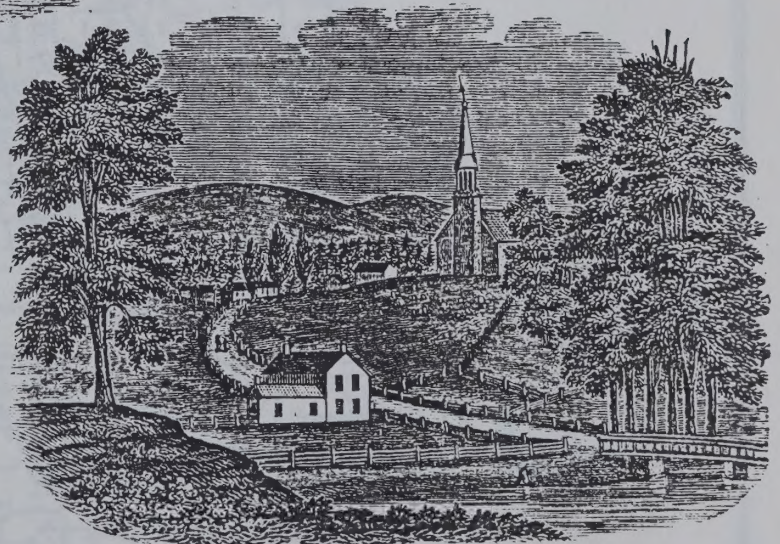


Cayuga Bridge.



Public buildings in Homer.

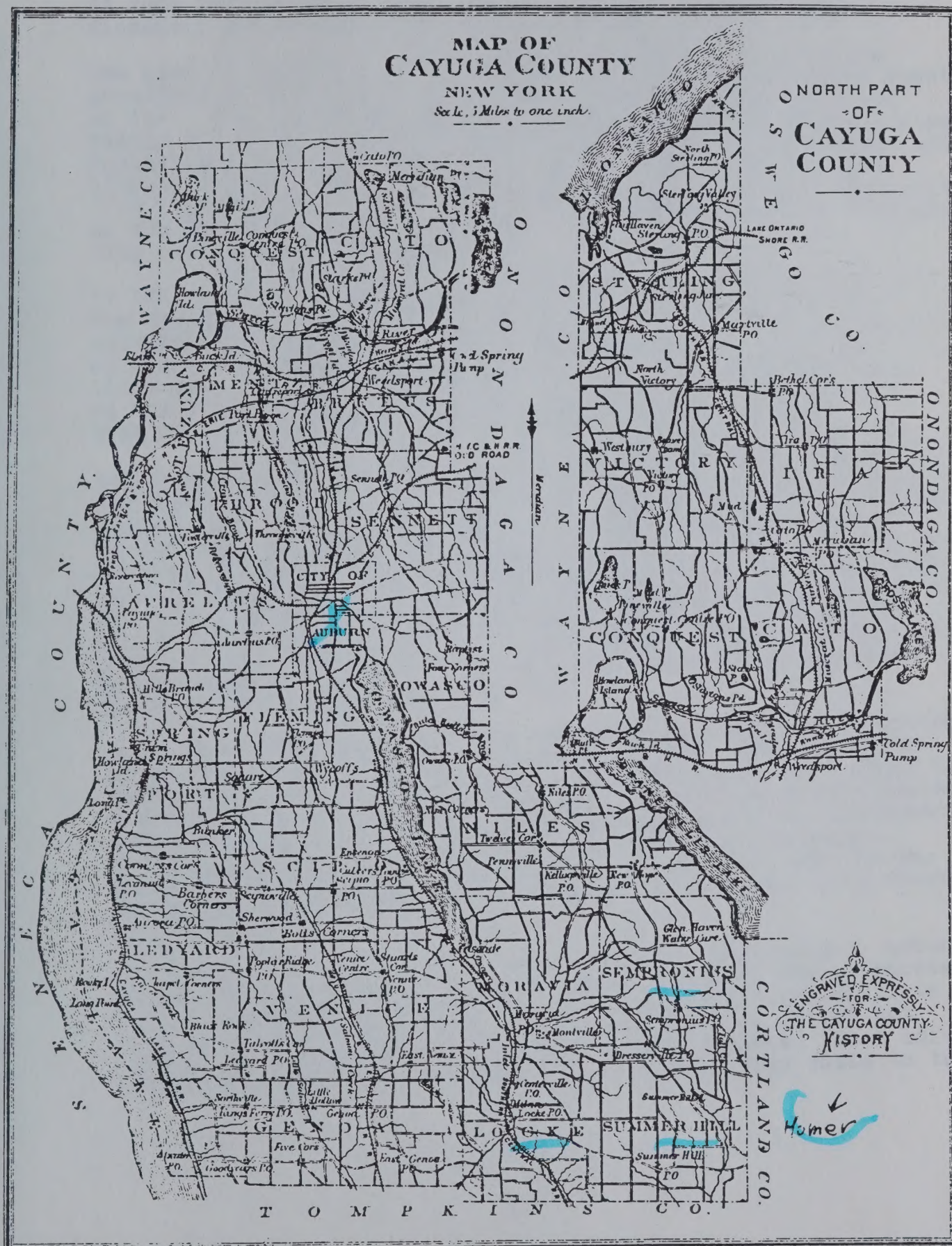
Though the buildings and bridges may not be modern by today's standards, they were lovely, don't you agree? They were more advanced than the more primitive surroundings of early settlers in their part of Missouri.



Ancient stone church in Schoharie.

DODGE FAMILY

Rev. Dwight and Lydia Dodge raised their family here. Homer, in Cortland Co., would be just beyond the SE border on the map.



DODGE FAMILY

Just so you know, Phebe (Wood) Pearce, Lydia's mother, died 25 June 1842 in Sempronius before the Dodge family moved to Missouri, and brother Giles and his family moved to Ohio.

The plan of this work is to tell something about all of the ancestors of Reverend Dwight Dodge whom this writer knows about so far. That covers an awful lot of people, as you will see. Nearly all of the immigrant ancestors came to Massachusetts from England and were of Puritan origins, so they were culturally akin. Almost all of Lydia's ancestors came to Rhode Island or the "Old Plymouth Colony" and included Baptists, Quakers, Separatists as the Mayflower people were, etc. If any of them were Puritans, they were probably lukewarm ones.

It can be said that, though the two sets of ancestors were all New Englanders with British origins, in some ways they were culturally miles apart. Just to round this out, a brief sketch of Lydia's ancestors, of the Pearce surname only, will be included. The plan, if I live long enough and finish writing up the Dodge-related progenitors, to do an entirely separate book of the ancestors of Lydia Woodman Pearce.

For a century and a half before she was born, most of Lydia's ancestors lived in Little Compton, originally a part of Plymouth Colony, but never of Massachusetts. That settlement was commenced by the children and grandchildren of the Mayflower Pilgrims looking for more fertile farmland than that provided by the rocky soil at Plymouth. As was characteristic of the Pilgrims, they kept to themselves whenever possible because their religious views did not coincide with those of the Massachusetts Bay people. Somehow, for instance in our pilgrim Howland family, a very strong Quaker element mixed in, including many of Lydia's ancestors. Baptists and Quakers predominated.

Later boundary changes put the community in Rhode Island instead of in the Old Colony, but the insular habits remained--though being right next to the sea many became mariners, most stuck to their farms and interbred repeatedly. As with most such isolated communities they tended to become clannish and a tad opinionated, not too diplomatic, and a little distrustful of strangers. (Speaking of breeding, Lydia was gone by then but this is the place that created and bred the famous red chickens--the Rhode Island Reds.)

At the very beginning of the settlement of Rhode Island, around 1640 or so, Baptist minister Rev. Roger Williams was persecuted out of the Massachusetts Bay Colony by the Congregationalists (Puritans). They wanted him to either repent or perish but instead he was invited to stay by friendly Indians. That infuriated his persecutors who then did everything they could to take

DODGE FAMILY

over Rhode Island and rule it their way. They could not because Rev. Williams was bright enough to secure a royal charter. But you do see from this why all Rhode Islanders, not just Little Compton, should be distrustful of strangers, especially Congregationalists. It just so happened, of course, that was exactly what the Dodges had been almost up to Dwight's generation. After the Revolutionary War the age of revivalism swept the country. Levi Dodge's children - some of them - were among those converted to other forms of Protestantism, in Dwight's case with such enthusiasm that he became a minister. But Puritanism was the force that brought the Dodges to these shores in the first place.

All the foregoing, of course, is over-simplification, told just to demonstrate the differences in the Dodge and Pearce family backgrounds. It gets yet more dramatic when one remembers that Lydia, herself, was born in Schoharie, New York, a 3rd-generation Palatine German community. They clung to the German language so long that some of them were still speaking it when she was a child. It seems the Pearces moved there around the turn of the century, but other Rhode Islanders went there when the British occupied their part of the state as part of a naval blockade *blockade* during the Revolution. Schoharie was the scene of some very bloody battles. They appreciated all the help they could get. The Pearces were among the Rhode Islanders attracted to the place as their first New York home.

The story of why the Palatines happened to be there is a long story in itself. In the early 1700's the Palatines started to flood other parts of Europe, such as England, to flee intolerable conditions at home. The British decided to take advantage of some of them, transporting them to New York forests in a scheme to get them to manufacture naval stores--turpentine, pitch, timbers and so on for the use of the British navy, at a cheap price. They started out enthusiastically--only problem, the people hired to supervise didn't know how to do the work! The plan fizzled and the poor Germans were abandoned without provisions, in the winter in the woods among wild Indians, to shift for themselves.

Many of them did starve to death. The story of their struggles makes interesting reading for anyone who wants to look it up.* Their troubles would break your heart, but through frugality and stubbornness some of them managed to survive and build a neat, thriving community over time, many of them in Schoharie. It is not surprising they were sometimes blunt in their dealings with others, saying exactly what was on their minds.

Lydia, of course, was not German, but her early formative years were among those people's grandchildren. Don't you imagine she picked up many of their ways, such as matter-of-factness rather than tact?

*One such reference is "Westward Expansion" pp. 97-8 by Ray A. Billington et al (5th Ed. 1982 - McMillan)

DODGE FAMILY

Dwight and Lydia Dodge were my great-great grandparents, and I grew up hearing about them. Their youngest daughter, Emma Adelia, was my great grandmother whom I remember from early childhood. My grandmother, Mary Lydia, used to take us children to Sunday School to the very same Christian Church congregation he began in Kingston. Sometimes after the services elderly people used to come up to us and tell what a fine person Reverend Dodge was. It made us proud. They also mentioned Emma's late husband, Dr. Dunn, who they said was especially nice, too.

This first story about Dwight Dodge when he was a boy was repeated to us many times when we were little. I always wished that somehow those same circumstances would happen to me, so that I could pull the same neat trick he did.

It seems that when Dwight was a boy he was walking past an apple orchard in New Hampshire. He observed some especially beautiful, delicious looking apples, and he was already hungry. As boys will sometimes do, he helped himself to one. Upon observing that, the farmer who owned the orchard got mad. He wanted no more of thieving boys, so he sicced his dog on him. Young Dwight, seeing the dog advancing, pointed still farther on and said, "Go, boy! Go, boy!" and the dog kept going on past him. The farmer, provoked as he was, could not keep himself from grinning. He scolded the boy, but commended him for his "Yankee wit."

Dwight grew up to be a congenial and caring person, but at the same time he must have been a "work-a-holic" and perfectionist. The following story illustrates that. Skipping ahead some thirty-odd years, the Reverend Dwight Dodge went through a very stressful period. He was probably trying to do too much, keeping up his blacksmith business and farm while at the same time caring for a sizeable church congregation. The strain of always being on call for his people, visiting the sick, counseling or consoling the troubled, preaching at funerals and coming up with new material for weekly sermons started to get to him. He was beginning to get "burned out" as they say nowadays.

At that time little Emma Adelia was five. Silas, the oldest, was newly married and had gone to live in Missouri. Some of the Hulls (Silas' in-laws) had either joined them or were getting ready to. They were painting a glowing picture of the undeveloped northwest Missouri countryside and all the opportunity waiting there. Son John, already a young man, was chafing at the bit to get started, wanted his parents to go along, but would go anyway if they did or not. Martin and Lucy (Dodge) Streeter were toying with the idea but had not yet decided. Most of the children were eager for new adventure.

DODGE FAMILY

frontier
Dwight was hesitant. Probably Lydia was, too. They were settled and well liked in a beautiful area in New York State. They were secure financially, and he felt his congregation needed him or he would not have been so active trying to meet their needs. He was in his late 40's, slightly past the age when limitless energy pushes one on to new frontiers. Though it was true his grandfather, Richard V, had done it at the same age, unlike Richard he felt stressed out. He sort of doubted he had the stamina to undertake a trip like that, to say nothing of the physical demands he knew were necessary to get started in an undeveloped rural area.

About that time Reverend Dodge got so depressed and wound up that he started mumbling in his sleep. Lydia did not know what to make of it. She also was tired. She had a big family to care for, and duties as a preacher's wife made extra demands on her time, too. Her life was not necessarily a picnic. If Dwight could not sleep and mumbled, she could not get any rest, either.

When the mumblings turned into actual sermons, it was just too much for her. Talking about it did no good. Finally she confided in friends who, of course, were members of his church. They did not know how to help. What's more, they thought surely she must be exaggerating. Mumbling, yes--but preaching sermons in one's sleep was just too strange. By then Lydia was in a state of confusion so she let some people observe. Sure enough, he started preaching--but upon awakening and finding out what had happened behind his back, he felt he had been betrayed.

Dwight never preached in his sleep again--but he did decide to move to Missouri.

One might say that the story about the boy, the apples, and the dog sound suspiciously like George Washington and the cherry tree, or like something a minister such as Reverend Dodge would say during a sermon to hold the attention of his congregation. However, his descendants did believe it, so maybe the boy did exactly what they say. Dwight must have been witty to attract the following he had.

The second story must be true, for it accidentally reveals more about their personalities than they intended to tell. From it you can see that Lydia and Dwight, though they loved each other, did not understand one another. Was Dwight too touchy? Was Lydia too outspoken? She certainly meant no harm but he was hurt, and she did not understand why. In fact, she never did "get it," for the story was repeated to later generations, and we all got a chuckle out of the idea of preaching in one's sleep.

Despite all of the above, Dwight and Lydia did have a happy marriage. But there was another, very serious problem. Silas, the oldest, was not quite 12 when his mother died and seems never to have recovered

DODGE FAMILY

from the shock. The boy's heart must have broken to see his mother suffer so and die a lingering death. It seems as though, as the oldest born to a teenage mother, he had been the one she depended on to be the big boy who helped her, especially if she sometimes felt weak. If so, he must have felt crushed he could not help her get well, or that someone else had to take over when she got so very critically ill. Whatever the situation, he kept his feelings bottled up inside until it was too late to ever change. When she died, the poor little fellow never, ever, let go of his dead mother, even though he lived to old age himself. No one on earth could take her place. He regarded anyone who tried to be a terrible person.

Can't you just imagine the situation in that home during Susannah's last illness? There must have been fervent family prayers that she would recover, even when things looked bleak. Can't you just see Lydia trying to quiet the scared and fretful children so that her patient could rest? Perhaps the tiny baby had trouble digesting the animal milk formula she was given, and cried a lot, upsetting the entire household. The infant's fretful wails would have been hard to bear at such a time. How could the household not have been disrupted? Lydia must have done a marvellous job nursing her beloved friend, trying to care for the friend's family the best she could, like a sacred trust, out of love. The fact that Susannah named the baby Lydia, as she did, proves that the two were very close in affection.

The ancient Puritans had an abhorrence of the single life, quoting the Bible when God said, "It is not good that man should be alone" whereupon He created Eve. The Congregational Church would not permit single adults to live alone, ordering them to "attach yourself to some family." If the situation continued, a committee would search out a family and order the person to live there.

It is true that after the 1692 witchcraft hysteria the Church lost much credibility in the eyes of many--particularly, one may be sure, in the eyes of the ancestors of Dwight's grandmother, Lois (Towne) Dodge. The Towne family were the greatest sufferers of all during that dreadful time--still, the Dodges were good members of the church up to the time Dwight was inspired by evangelists to switch to a different sect. Remember that his brother Freeman during this same time was teaching a Congregational religion class to young men. Dwight was steeped from early childhood in Puritanical traditions, regardless of what he called himself. Those attitudes were passed on down to his descendants.

The modern tradition of a year's "mourning time" after the loss of a spouse had not yet come into vogue. Nobody ever thought of such a thing back then. Quite the contrary, though all of them were sad, including Lydia, the children needed a mother and he needed a wife. Within four months they were married. Everyone seems to have thought it was a great idea except for poor little Silas.

DODGE FAMILY

Most people like to hear about how their early ancestors migrated. Of course the facts are the same each of the sons & daughters tell it from a different perspective. For instance Emma's first friend among the young set, was only five and came with her parents.

Migration stories are invariably fascinating. Traditions passed down by Silas and Emma's descendants appear to conflict but can perhaps be reconciled. Silas came a couple of years before the others. His descendant, George Dodge, reported in the interesting Dodge Family notebook that Silas and his wife came by ox team "via the Ohio, the Mississippi and the Missouri Rivers," and that by the time they arrived at their destination they had "barely enough money left to send a message to the folks back east." He goes on to say that later during the Gold Rush to California Silas (and John) joined in. The inference was that they struck it rich and the return trip was "by way of Cape Horn, getting off the boat at Lexington."

came much of the way by steamship, a very popular mode of transportation in 1846.

It may be that when the larger family group moved West they could afford a more comfortable trip. They may have brought oxen. They did pack some of their belongings into small wooden trunks of the type one could use as a small bench during the trip and in the home later on. The writer has seen some of them, passed on to descendants and made of 20-inch or wider boards sawed from trees in New York State. *My mother inherited two of the trunks. It could be that they used oxen & covered wagons, but it seems likely they*

That trip was made during the heyday of steamships. Writer's sister, Mrs. Billie Gene Pringle, remembers Grandma telling her about some of the problems Emma and Lydia had related to her about steamship travel. Thus it would appear that at least part of the journey was by this mode. When we see the Delta Queen nowadays it looks pretty, but to the long distance travelers of an earlier day there were minor irritations caused, for instance, by the steam and by the soot from the smokestacks. They did make pretty good time, though, especially going with the current, and were more comfortable than oxcarts or wagons. *It is very logical that they did disembark at Lexington, Missouri. was the*

These people were how they thought of themselves as members of a new sect.

Something can be surmised about the personalities of this family group when one hears the second problem Grandma related to Billie. The family was very concerned about appearing well groomed and presentable when they came into towns along the way. It appears that keeping clothing washed and clean was not too great a challenge, but because they had no opportunity to do any ironing they were worried about wrinkles. They solved this by folding their clothes very carefully in just a certain way, which they then placed under cushions, which they sat on to smoothe out the wrinkles. They were very fastidious people and, being part of a minister's family, felt they were subject to public scrutiny. *I cannot help but wonder how much of these attitudes are due to a rigid Puritan heritage even though*

Writer would be grateful to anyone who could fill in any more details on this subject, or any other Dodge Family lore--or even that of their neighbors, who probably shared the same or similar conditions.

DODGE FAMILY

When Silas first came west to Caldwell County, Missouri in 1844 and his parents in 1846, they settled in what was then called Blythe Township, named for an old pioneer, Riley Blythe, who had hunted and trapped along the branches of Shoal Creek long before. At first the county seat had been at a Mormon settlement called "Far West," and continued to be there until after 1843.

The culture of the Mormons and that of the other settlers clashed to a point which inevitably led to bloodshed. Early history of the Mormons is remindful in a way of the first Puritans of early New England back in the 1630's or so. Just like the Puritans, the Mormons were absolutely convinced theirs was the only way to salvation. They proselytized vigorously and they insisted on governing any area they were situated in, especially if they were a majority.

The Mormon movement started in New York State among people with Yankee background, though others had joined by the 1840's. The bulk of early Missouri settlers were of very different culture, such as the original French or else southerners who had come there through Kentucky, Tennessee, and contiguous states. Those people were distrustful of Yankees to start with. The new religion they considered false, distasteful, even evil. Both sides became bellicose whereupon the Mormons were beset by angry mobs even before the Missouri governor finally called out the troops to drive them out. The manner in which they accomplished the task left something a great deal better to be desired. The refugees finally retraced their steps eastward to the Mississippi River where they established a settlement in Hancock County, Illinois, called Nauvoo. As with most forced evacuations, a few stragglers stayed behind. Son John Freeman Dodge married the daughter of one such family, though most Mormons were gone when the Dodges came.

Far West was in the western part of the county. As the whole area filled up, the population center started to shift eastward so that it was felt necessary to move the county seat to a more central location. The Missouri legislature selected a committee to find a site and lay the groundwork. Several men were chosen, but it is said that the actual work was accomplished by only three of them, Robert D. Ray of Carroll County, Milford Donaho of Daviess County, and George W. Dunn of Ray County. (It just so happens that the latter of the three, Judge George Washington Dunn of Richmond, MO, later became brother-in-law of the youngest Dodge daughter Emma, our ancestor, when she married his brother. More of that later.)

The men preferred a site for the county seat slightly south of that eventually chosen, near Log Creek, but the owner refused to yield the land. After much deliberation, they finally chose the present site where the town square now stands, and Kingston was incorporated as county seat by a special act of the state legislature later. They named it for Governor King.

DODGE FAMILY

Old Blythe Township was eventually divided into Hamilton, Kingston and Grant Townships. Dwight and Lydia and the younger children were already living in the western Kingston area by the time it was incorporated. John lived west of them at the part of Far West which became Mirable. Silas then or a little later lived near what became Hamilton, or a little south of there. When the family first came to the area it was primitive compared with the beautiful buildings and the sophistication of the New York Finger Lakes area. The New York schools had been excellent. John credited much of his later success to the superior schooling he had received there, whereas the schools in Caldwell County were just getting started.

The first school house, "a nice brick building," was built in Blythe in 1846, the year the family came. It was located south of what later became the public square, and probably that was where the younger children attended school.

It is hard for me to imagine that, because of all the brush and woodlots that abound nowadays, but I have heard it claimed that there were almost no trees between Hamilton and Kingston in the very early days, except those along the stream beds and a gigantic old tree that became a landmark. If that is true it must be that the Indians had deliberately set brushfires for their own purposes.

The Dodge family tales say that in the early days the area was rather sparsely populated and people, feeling rather isolated on their farms, were always delighted to have company to break the monotony, and very hospitable. Often it took a long time to get to the home of a relative or friend or, in Dwight's case, a church connection or former member of the congregation. Because of that, the visitor was generally invited to stay the night. The first homes were often log cabins, replaced by siding when and if it could be afforded. The houses were sparsely furnished and had fewer walls than later on, because it was easier to keep warm in the winter that way and allowed more circulation in the summer. In place of walls, they often hung curtains or blankets from the ceiling, especially to provide more privacy for sleeping. When visiting, one was not supposed to look behind such a curtain.

Quoting page 263 of Caldwell County History, under "Churches of Kingston"--

"Christian Church--December 24, 1865, this church was organized with the following members: Dwight Dodge, Lemuel Dunn, J. D. Cox, J. P. McKinnie, H. B. Nelson, Walker Miller, Susannah P. Thompson, Rowanna McKinnie, Emma A. Dunn, Lydia W. Dodge and Harriet Northrup. The church building, a frame, was purchased from the Southern Methodists in 1869, at a cost of \$1,200. ...The present membership is 49."

DODGE FAMILY

Of course, Reverend Dwight Dodge was the pastor of this group. Almost all of those charter members were family members or related by marriage, as the reader will see later on. Though Dwight died only four years later, the year they bought the church building, the membership did continue to grow. When this writer was a little girl, Grandma used to take us kids to Sunday School there, in a buggy pulled by a nice brown horse named Bessie. Once in a while we used Dolly, a white and gray horse just a tad larger, but usually it was Bessie.

It was never a large congregation, but it wasn't very small, either. I was too youthful to be overly concerned with details, but do remember that toward the last that I attended they had to hire a minister to drive in from another community, for the preaching part of the services. Before that we children attended Sunday School classes and learned all the Bible stories and that we should be good. The old hymns the congregation sang were beautiful. We had a white clapboard building with a steeple and stained glass windows. A lot of people wore talcum powder with a nice fragrance, and sometimes elderly members who remembered Emma's husband, my Great Grandfather Lemuel Dunn, Jr., whom they called "Doctor Dunn" even though he was an attorney and probate judge as well, would tell us how nice he was, and they spoke of Reverend Dwight Dodge as though he were a saint. They were proud to have known them, so you know how that made us feel to be descended from those men.

Some other tales about the family will be included in sections about Emma and the others. The illustration on the following page is a copy of Rev. Dwight Dodge's obituary, as printed in a local paper. I wonder who wrote it, for, frankly, I find parts of it to be confusing for several reasons:

It calls him a native of New Hampshire. It is true he lived there from toddler through teens, though he was born in Sturbridge. It says he spent the prime of early manhood in "Courtland" (sic) County NY. How can that be since he married in Sempronius, Cayuga County, before he was 20 and nearly all his children were born either there or in adjacent towns, the one exception being that Lucy was born in New Hampshire, probably because Susannah was scared or not feeling well. It says he was a minister for 40 years but we know it was longer than that because the Pearces were members of his congregation for a few years before Susannah died, in 1830.

Adding to all the confusion, Dr. Dodge's genealogy called him a Baptist minister. Did he shift sects in Missouri to fit the needs of the people there? Christians and Baptists have very similar beliefs. The Pearces, being from Rhode Island, were likely to have been Baptists. Did he have a congregation in Homer in Courtland

DODGE FAMILY

County? If he did, was it in addition to one in Cayuga County? Perhaps we will never know for sure--those conundrums are more puzzling than important. The communities were adjacent and the differences in religion slight. The 1840 US census shows the family in Summerhill. Perhaps an older "child" who had lived a while near Homer worded the obituary. Silas's inlaws were from there. Since John and Silas resented their stepmother, they may have left the nest early to work there.

The obituary does show he was highly regarded. He died 23 Aug 1869, four years after establishing that congregation, and also four years after the Civil War. Lydia lived another twelve years. The 1870 census shows her residing between the families of William O. Dodge and "Samuel" (really Lemuel) and Emma (Dodge) Dunn. The youngest member of the latter family was little Mary Lydia, my grandma, who loved to hear her own grandma talk about the early days.

Lydia died 4 Aug 1881. She is buried beside Dwight in the Kingston Cemetery but, sadly, there is no marker on her grave because her remaining stepson would not allow it. I used to wonder why the others did not insist but suppose there is a good explanation. George Dodge's notes say his older cousin, Mary Clarkson Kautz, informed him that it was because "Silas and John were not too cordial toward her." Silas had actually died the year before but by then his little brother had been turned against his stepmother. I think their birth mother would have cried had she known.

Children of Rev. Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge:

Silas Dwight	(25 Aug 1818- 1 Jun 1880)	m. 5 May 1844	Mary Ann Hull
Lucy Moriah	(13 Mar 1820- 1889)	ca 1840	Martin Streeter
Levi Freeman	(15 Aug 1821-28 Aug 1822)	-	1 yr 14 days
John Freeman	(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)	1847	Louisa M. Walter.
* Lydia Susannah	(13 Jul 1830- 1 Nov 1860)	ca 1850	DeHaven

Children of Rev. Dwight and Lydia Woodman (Pearce) Dodge:

Phebe Keziah	(12 Oct 1831-29 Jun 1847)	15 yr 8 months
Obadiah Morrill	(22 May 1833-23 Mar 1899)	1857 Nancy Long
Levi James	(30 Apr 1835- 3 Feb 1844)	9 yr 3 days
* Sarah C.	(30 Apr 1837- ca 1912)	18 <i>Reby?</i>
William O.	(7 Jan 1839- 6 Sep 1901) (1)	1857 <i>Mariah Alexander</i>
	(2)	18 <i>Hattie</i>
Emma Adelia	(9 Mar 1841-31 Jan 1932)	31 Jan 1860 Lemuel Dunn, Jr

* went to csg.

*RM
1855 census
(RM 4th 1857)
but census 1857*

DODGE FAMILY

References:

Regarding the Pearce Family:

Little Compton Families - Benjamin Franklin Wilbour-2 Volumes
publ. Little Compton Historical Society (1967)
Notes on Little Compton - Carlton C. Brownell, Ed. from notes
of B. F. Wilbour, deceased. Same publisher (1970)
Pearce Genealogy - Col. Frederick C. Pierce (1888)

Regarding all Subjects:

Historical Collections of the State of New York - J. W. Barber
et al, Tuttle, (1841) with special reference to Cayuga,
Cortland and Schoharie Counties
History of Schoharie County, New York

History of Cayuga County, New York

U.S. Census - various states and years as applicable
History of Caldwell & Livingston Counties, Missouri

Various Kingston and Hamilton MO Newspaper columns
Unpublished Dodge Family Records of George Dodge of Hamilton MO
Dodge Family Bible Records - Family of Rev. Dwight Dodge
Unwritten Dodge Family recollections of Lydia Woodman (Pearce)
Dodge and Emma Adelia (Dodge) Dunn as related to Mary
Lydia (Dunn) White and her daughter Ada (White) Yoakum
and in turn related by them to Mrs. Billie Gene Pringle
and Mrs. Norma Zaniewski (That means Billie and I have
second and third-hand information.)

BELOW: Some graves in the cemetery at Kingston, Missouri.



Continued

General and Special Collections

General and Special Collections - Benjamin Franklin Wilson - 2 Volumes
General and Special Collections - Little Company of Jesus (1897)
General and Special Collections - Carlton C. Brownell, Ed. from notes
of J. J. Wilson, deceased. Some published (1970)
General and Special Collections - Col. Frederick C. Pierce (1985)

General and Special Collections

General and Special Collections of the State of New York - J. M. Barber
et al, Little, (1881) with special reference to Cayuga,
Columbia and Schoharie Counties.
History of Schoharie County, New York

History of Cayuga County, New York

U.S. Census - various dates and years as applicable
History of Caldwell & Livingston Counties, Wisconsin

Various Kingston and Hamilton MO Newspaper columns
Digitized Dodge Family Records of Dodge County of Hamilton Co
Dodge Family Bible Records - Family of Rev. Lewis Dodge
Christian Dodge Family recollections of Lydia (Dodge) (Dodge)
Dodge and Anna Abelia (Dodge) Dunn as related to Mrs.
Lydia (Dunn) White and her daughter Mrs. (White) (Dunn)
and as later related by them to Mrs. Willis Gene Frisbie
and Mrs. Norma Laniuswell (That name Willis and I have
second and third-hand information.)

NOTE: Some graves in the cemetery at Kingston, Wisconsin.



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

BIRTHS.

Lydla Shumann
Dodge was born in
the town of Larch
the 13 day of July
in the year 1831, about
one thousand eight hundred
and thirty at a
Phetie, N. York. Dodge
was born in the town
of Sumnerville, the 12 day
of October in the year
of our Lord 1831 at a
Charles E. Merrill Dodge
was born in the town
of Sumnerville, the 22 day
of the year of our Lord 1833
at a
Levi James Dodge
was born in Sumner
ville Cayuga Co.
April 30 1835 at a
Sarah C. Dodge was
born April 30 1835
town of Sumnerville
Cayuga Co. N.Y.

William C.
Dodge was born in
January 1832
town of Sumnerville
Cayuga Co. N.Y.
Cornelia C. Dodge
was born in town
of Sumnerville
Cayuga Co. March
9 1841 N.Y.

FAMILY RECORD.

DEATHS.

DEATHS.

Levi Freeman
Dodge died in Sumner
August 2 1854
aged one year and
fourteen days
Sarah the wife
of Dwight Dodge died
August 5 1850 in the
first year of her
childhood
Phoebe French Dodge
died on Thursday June 29
1847 in Caldwell Co. - the
eleventh day of
August
Lydia Shumann Dodge
died on Monday October 1
1860 in Call
Levi James Dodge died
February 3 1844 age
nine years nine months
three days old

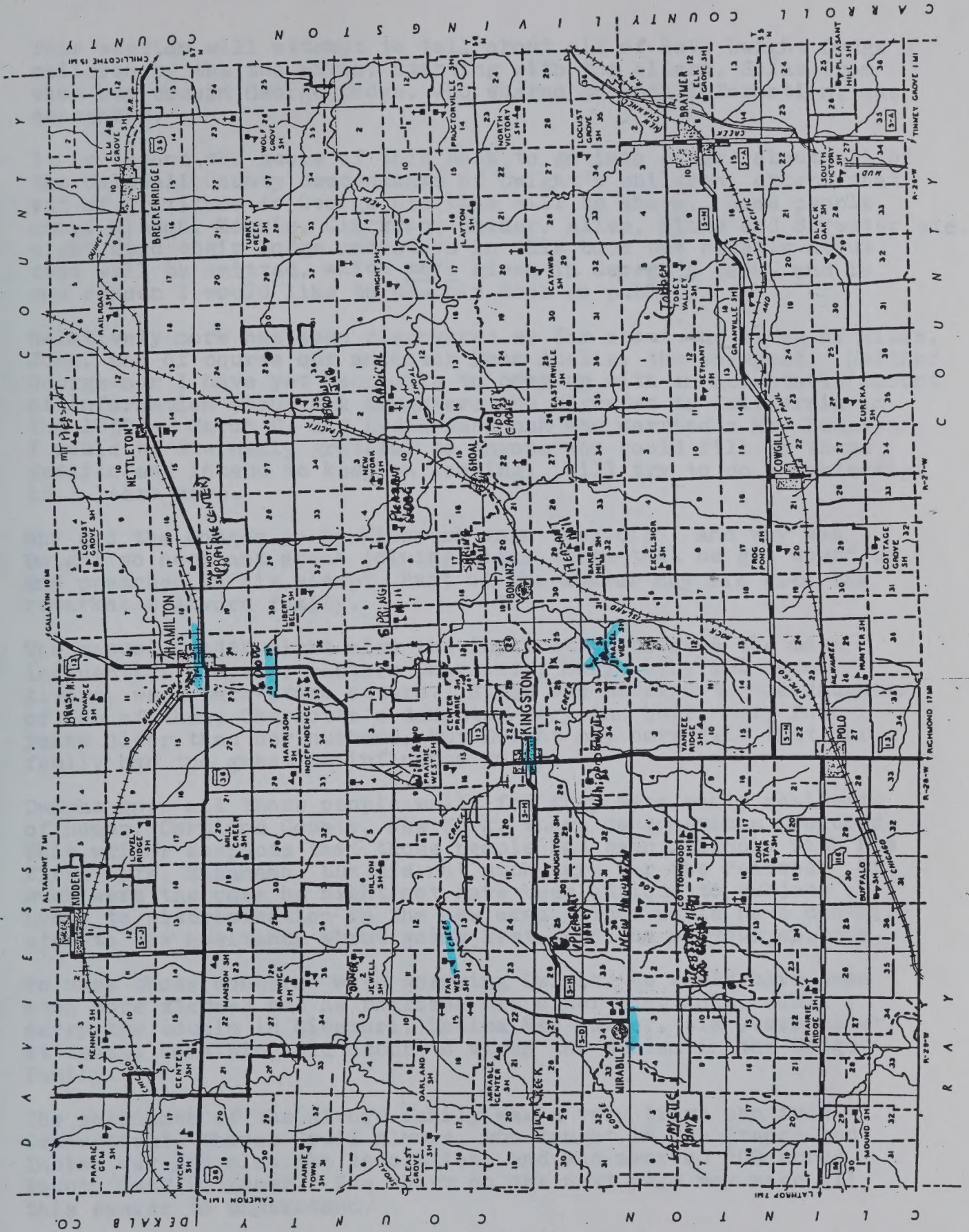
Dwight Dodge
died August 23
1869 age seventy one years
and three months
Sarah Dwight Dodge
died June 11 1880
age 67 nine months
six days
Lydia Needham Dodge
died at Kings Town N.Y.
the County of Warren
August 4 1851.

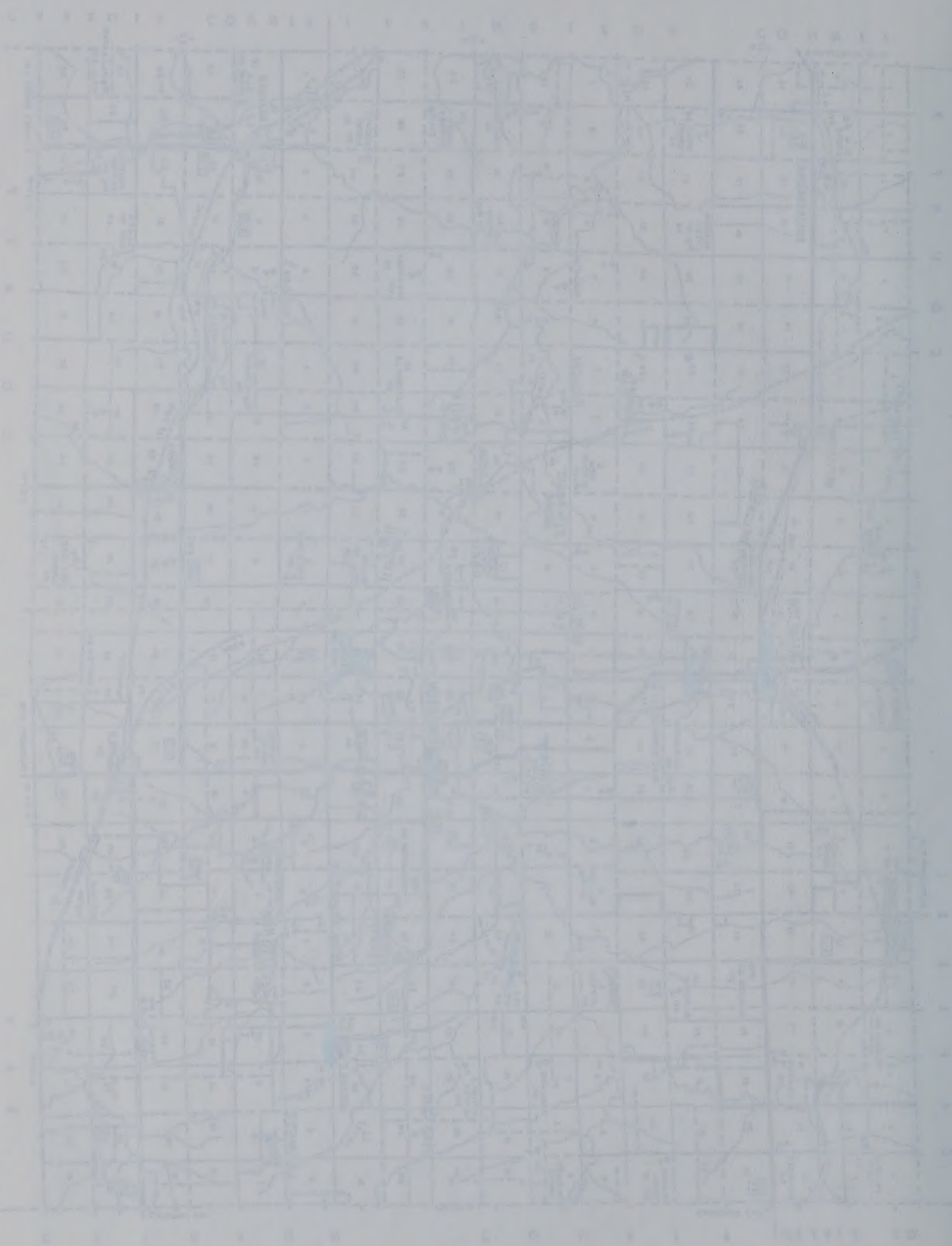
Photostatic copy of pages in the Dodge Family Bible

FAMILY RECORD.	
BIRTHS.	BIRTHS.
Dwight Dodge was born in Hindmire State Sempronius County of Cassa-chagest County of Westchester May 28th 1798 Lisannah Dodge was born in Croyd a New Hampshire County of Chesapeake August 10th 1799	Silas Dwight Dodge was born in Sempronius State of New York County of Cayuga August the 25th 1818 Leroy Moriah Dodge was born in Sempronius State of New Hampshire County of Chesapeake March the 13th 1820
Lydia W. Dodge the second wife of Dwight Dodge was born in Schoharie town and County in the month of October 6th 1802	Levi Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius State of Cayuga August the 14th 1823 John Freeman Dodge was born in Sempronius State of Cayuga August the 14th 1825

FAMILY RECORD.	
MARRIAGES.	MARRIAGES.
Dwight Dodge was married to Lisannah Dodge December 21st 1801	Dwight Dodge and Lydia W. Dodge were wedded in Sempronius State of N.Y. Decem- ber the 4th - 1830

MAP OF CALDWELL COUNTY, MISSOURI





REPRODUCED FROM THE ORIGINAL MAP

This section will attempt to tell about all of Rev. Dwight Dodge's children by the two wives, starting with the eldest, Silas from whom our cousin George Dodge, who shared so much information, was descended.

It is beyond the scope of this book to go into detail about all of the Caldwell County descendants of Dwight's children, except that out of gratitude to George his line will be shown. Some people named Gibson, Morris, Clarkson, Snider, Allee, Kinne and Streeter etc. might find their Dodge ancestors in this book but details about that will be omitted, which were given in George's book, and is one reason I would like to see his book go public.

Relatively more has been discovered so far about the lives of Silas, John, and of course our ancestor Emma Adelia, the youngest. Neither George nor I have yet been able to come up with an acceptable amount of information about the daughters who migrated to California in the 1850's, Sarah C. and Lydia Susannah who married a Mr. DeHaven. I would be eternally grateful to anyone who could fill in those details and intend to keep on looking. Will try to do a postscript if I learn more.

Why did the Dodges go to Missouri when they did? And why was Dwight so hesitant about joining Silas there that he got wound up and preached in his sleep? Part of the answer may lie with the remarkable Alvord family.

The casual reader might miss the implication because the most influential players, sisters Charlotte, Mary, Lucy and Naomi Alvord, were back-stage actors. Silas was married to the daughter of one of them, Charlotte's daughter, Mary Ann Hull, only four years older than her husband, but Dwight may have felt that her family had too great an influence on him.

Dwight knew all those people well, for they were early residents of Homer, Cortland County, New York, where he sometimes preached. This writer suspects that those people had been friendly with his first wife, Susannah, but did not much care for the Pearces. If such were the case he might not have been anxious to subject Lydia to discrimination in the new area. That would have contributed to his hesitance about going West, and the nervous episode.

In case those concerns were worrying Dwight, he would have been even more alarmed had he realized his other son, John, would marry the cousin in Missouri, Louisa Mae Walter, six years older. At least, something did occur to widen the schism in the Dodge family.

The patriarch of the Alvord family was a very brave man from Connecticut, Thomas Gould Alvord, who fought in the French and Indian War and also the Revolution, and was awarded 600 acres Bounty Land in Homer. The chart on the next page may make all this easier to understand.

DODGE FAMILY

ALVORD FAMILY

Thomas Gould ALVORD
(1 Mar 1742-18 May 1810)
CT Rev. War Vet.

Keziah ORVIS
(4 Aug 1743-21 Sep 1795)

married
17 Aug 1762

To Cortland Co NY 1794? (Had 11 Children)

Child #4

Charles ALVORD
(27 Aug 1769-30 Oct 1830)

Eunice LEAMING
(4 Oct 1775- 7 Jan 1835)

married
Dec 1791

To Cortland Co NY

Children of Charles and Eunice:

Child #1

Charlotte ALVORD CT
(1 June 1792- 1 Feb 1882)
married 1 Mar 1812 NY

Child #

Mary ALVORD NY?
(26 Nov 1796- 7 Feb 1896) age 99+
married ca 1815 NY

David HULL CT
(2 Mar 1780-4 June 1830)

George WALTERS
(28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856)

Charlotte & David had 8 children.

Mary & Geo. went to MC 1837 or before

Child #1

Mary Ann HULL
(31 Jul 1814- 7 Oct 1885)
married 5 May 1844 Homer NY

Child #1?

Louisa Mae WALTERS NY
(10 Sep 1817-28 Jan 1902)
married about 1847 or 8

Silas Dwight DODGE
(25 Aug 1818-1 June 1880)

John Freeman DODGE
(4 May 1824-20 Jul 1885)

Child #8

David Hull, Jr.
(14 Nov 1829- 7 Nov 1864)
Died in Civil War at Rolla MO

The following are thought to be younger sisters of Charlotte and Mary ALVORD

Child #

Naomi ALVORD
(16 May 1814-23 Apr 1850)
Buried in John F. Dodge Family
plot in Kingston Cemetery

Child #

Lucy K. ALVORD
(1808- after 1870 census)
married in NY (born NJ, Son of Wm. a
John S. Houghton (Rev. War Vet
(- after 1847)
This couple came to MC in 1844,
probably with Silas DODGE &
DAVID HULL, JR.

The first couple at top had 11 children. It is suspected that their 7th, Dioclesian ALVORD born 8 Feb 1776 who married Sarah WHEELER was an ancestor of Nora TURNER who married Silas Dwight's grandson Silas Dwight DODGE (10th generation).

ALVORD FAMILY

Thomas Child Alvord
11 Nov 1901-12 May 1910
CT Nov. 1901
Married 17 Aug 1902
To Portland Co NY 1902 (from 11 Children)

Charles Alvord
(27 Aug 1903-20 Oct 1920)
Married 1901
To Portland Co NY

Children of Charles and Thomas

Child 1
Thomas Alvord CT
(1 June 1902-1 Feb 1903)
Married 1 Mar 1903 NY
Child 2
George Alvord CT
(12 Mar 1904-1 June 1905)

Charlotte & David had 8 children.
Child 3
Mary Ann Alvord
(11 Jul 1904-9 Oct 1905)
Married 2 May 1904 Homer NY
Child 4
Sister Alvord Dodge
(25 Aug 1904-1 June 1905)
Child 5
David Alvord, Jr.
(12 Nov 1905-7 Nov 1906)
Died in Civil War at Battle of

The following are thought to be younger sisters of Charlotte and Mary Alvord

Child 6
Lucy N. Alvord
(1804- after 1870 census)
Married to Dr. (born 22 Jan of 1804)
John B. Huntington (Mar. 1804)
(- after 1807)
This couple came to NY in 1804.
Probably with Elias Dodge &
David Hull, Jr.

The first couple at top had 11 children. It is suggested that their 7th, Elizabeth Alvord born 8 Feb 1795 who married John Huntington was an ancestor of John T. Dodge's generation.
Elias Dodge & John T. Dodge's generation.

DODGE FAMILY

The following is a verbatim copy of page 43 of George Dodge's Genealogy:

REVOLUTIONARY WAR DATA PERTAINING TO D.A.R. FURNISHED BY MRS. MARY CLARKSON KAUTZ.

Thos. Gould Alvord, sargent, enlisted Mar 1, 1777 - Capt. Judd's Company for the war - exchanged for Gabriel Leverich April 23, 1781.

3rd regiment Conn. Line, Colonel Samuel Wylies
Connecticut Man in Revolution

Thos. Gould Alvord served in French and Indian war, when he was on the frontier from Oswego to Detroit, and in company with his eldest son, Thos. Gould Alvord, Jr. He was in Colonel Lamb's regiment in the Revolutionary war, both serving as cannoniers, and both present at Cornwallis's surrender.

Thos. Gould Alvord was at the battle of White Plain and was wounded by a musket ball, which entered his arm, and passing out near the elbow, was picked up by a companion Luke Wardsworth, who placed the ball in his own gun and sent it back to the enemy.

Some of the descendants also mention that at the Battle of Yorktown he loaded and fired a cannon four times a minute for four hours, and that when the balls gave out they used old bolts, pieces of log chains, etc.

Thomas Gould Alvord served during the entire war, for which he drew lot No. 13, which was 600 acres in Homer, New York, to which he moved in 1794.

- - - - -

Doesn't that make you proud to be an American? You can be sure George was proud, for he was descended from that brave man.



Artist's conception of surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown

The following is a verbatim copy of page 43 of George
 Douglas's Reminiscences:

REMINISCENCES OF GEORGE DOUGLAS, 1797-1877
 BY GEORGE DOUGLAS

Thos. Gould Alvord, captain, enlisted Mar. 1, 1797 - Capt. Alvord's
 Company for the war - exchanged for General Javert April 13, 1798.

2nd Regiment Conn. Line, Colonel Samuel Wylles
 Connecticut was in Revolution

Thos. Gould Alvord served in French and Indian war, when he was on
 the frontier from Oswego to Detroit, and in company with his
 eldest son, Thos. Gould Alvord, Jr. He was in Colonel Lamb's
 regiment in the Revolutionary war, being serving as cannonier, and
 both present at Fort Mifflin's surrender.

Thos. Gould Alvord was at the battle of White Plains and was wounded
 by a cannon ball, which entered his arm, and passing out near the
 elbow, was picked up by a companion like a wounded man, who placed
 the ball in his own gun and sent it back to the camp.

Some of the descendants also mention that at the battle of Yorktown
 he loaded and fired a cannon four times a minute for four hours,
 and that when the balls gave out they used old bottles, filled of
 hot molasses, etc.

Thos. Gould Alvord served during the entire war, for which he
 drew for his 17, which was the same in honor, New York, to which
 he moved in 1794.

George's great-grandfather was proud to be an American? You can be sure
 George was proud, for he was descended from such brave men.



DODGE FAMILY

Silas Dwight Dodge⁸ oldest child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge, was born 25 August 1818 in Sempronius, Cayuga County, NY probably prematurely, the first year his parents were married. His mother died when he was twelve years old and he was so devastated there was no way anyone else could ever take her place, though his stepmother tried the best she knew how. Little brother John, six years old, looked up to his big brother and copied him. The fact that they grew up to marry cousins with roots in Homer, New York, probably strengthened the solidarity between them.

On 5 May 1844 near Homer, Cortland County, New York, Silas married Mary Ann Hull, born 31 July 1814. The next month, June 1844, they joined a family group going to settle in Far West, Missouri, taking her 15-year old brother, David, Jr., along with them. Mary Ann's parents were Charlotte (Alvord) and David Hull, Sr., though her father had died in 1830 when she was only 16. David had owned two farms in Homer, New York, probably a part of Thomas Gould Alvord's grant, but the widow & five other children stayed in New York to farm them. Later on some of them did migrate, but not as far as Missouri.

When the Mormons were forced to leave Far West, Missouri, in 1843, Mary (Alvord) Walter and her husband, George, who had gone there in 1837 or before, probably wrote the family that now would be an excellent time to come join them. So a group went. We don't know whom all of them were, but besides Mary Ann, Silas, and David, her young aunt her own age Naomi Alvord, and an older aunt Lucy (Alvord) Houghton and husband John Houghton were in the group. George Dodge was told that his grandparents, Silas and Mary Ann, left New York State in June, 1844, and came west "via the Ohio River by ox team then on the Mississippi and Missouri and Lexington." Being young and just starting out, when they arrived "they had barely enough money left to post a letter to their parents back East."

George Dodge included some intriguing short Hull, Alvord, Orvis and other genealogies in his book. It is hard not to get carried away telling some of them, but there is not room for that here, except for the parts I have already included for clarity's sake. He did make the interesting observation that a certain Isaac Hull was witness in 1670 to the will of Richard Dodge I. He wondered whether that were a coincidence, or some far-back relative he had not been able to trace, since he had not been able to find his own Hull line back much before the Revolution. He was under the impression that some early Hulls came from Somerset, as did the Dodes.

In the spring of 1847 the young couple moved to just south of where Hamilton, Missouri, now stands and there they made their farm home where they reared their family of one boy and three girls. Probably young David Hull stayed with them a while.

Miss Wyatt (Marianne) eldest child of Wyatt and Susan (Marianne) was born 25 August 1818 in Southampton, Guyana County, NY. Probably incorrectly, the first year his parents were married. His mother died when he was twelve years old and he was so devastated there was no way anyone else could ever take her place. Though his stepmother tried the best she knew how, little brother John, six years old, looked up to his big brother and copied him. The fact that they grew up to marry cousins with roots in New York, probably strengthened the solidarity between them.

On 2 May 1840 near New York, Cortland County, New York, Susan married Mary Ann Hull, born 31 July 1814. The next month, June 1840, they joined a family group going to settle in Far West, Missouri. Susan, her 15-year old brother, David, Jr., along with them. Mary Ann's parents were Charles (Alford) and David Hull, Sr., whose father had died in 1830 when she was only 16. David had come to Far West in New York, probably a part of the group. Susan's father, but the widow & five other children stayed in New York to farm them. Later on some of them did migrate, but not as far as Missouri.

When the Wyatts were forced to leave Far West, Missouri, in 1845, Mary (Susan) and her husband, George, who had come there in 1840 or before, probably wrote the family that they would be an excellent place to come join them. So a group went. We don't know who all of them were, but besides Mary Ann, Susan, and David, Jr., we know that her own son, Naomi Alford, and an older son, John (Alford) Houston and husband John Houston were in the group. George wrote that his grandparents, Elias and Mary Ann, left for West State in June, 1840, and came west "via the Ohio River" to go down on the Mississippi and Missouri and Lexington. Being young and just starting out, when they arrived they had barely enough money left to post a letter to their parents back home.

George's letter included some intriguing about Hull, Alford, Orville and other mentioned in his book. It is hard not to get carried away telling some of them, but there is not room for that here. Except for the fact I have already included for clarity's sake. He did make the interesting observation that a certain Isaac Hull was with them. It is the will of Richard Dodge I. He wondered whether there was a relationship, or some far-back relative he had not been able to trace, since he had not been able to find his own Hull line back before the Revolution. He was under the impression that some Hulls came from Somerset, and did the following.

In the spring of 1845 the young couple moved to just south of where Hamilton, Missouri, now stands and there they made their farm home where they raised their family of one boy and three girls. Probably young David Hull stayed with them a while.

DODGE FAMILY

In 1849 when gold was discovered in California, Silas and John became "Forty-Niners" and went overland to California. Several sources say they did succeed in making some money, though no details have come down about how they accomplished that. Dr. J.T. Dodge says they returned to "Far West," and George says the return trip was by "ship via the Cape of Good Hope," and that they got off a boat at Lexington. It is good there were other older family members in Missouri by then, to look after their families, for by then Silas had three young children and John two.

On the farm that he owned and operated, and which later passed into the hands of the son, Dwight David, he allowed the community to locate a school house, and in another location a small cemetery. "This same farm was reputed to have a large amount of gold buried thereon during the Civil War and, although many have attempted to locate this gold, nothing has ever been found, to the knowledge of the writer (George)" He was told by his older half-brother, who was also named Silas Dwight, John Freeman Dodge was afraid to keep his money during the Civil War because of bushwhackers being bad in his area, so it was entrusted to Silas to keep for him. It was hidden under the stairway of Silas's log house. It was gold, and the older brother said there was \$30,000.00. (Quite a sum for those days before inflation.)

He said the following is an exact copy of a record they received from their Aunt Susannah McCollum:

"Hamilton, Mo., was laid out by a Mr. Hamilton and Mr. A. G. Davis and one other man. Mr. Silas D. Dodge cut the walnut tree on his place in the summer of 1856. He and Mr. David Hull rived out the shingles and Mr. Dodge hauled the shingles with an ox team for a hotel built by a Mr. William Pardon and a Mr. Cheek and one other man.

"This was the first house built in Hamilton. The carpenters boarded at Mr. Dodge's and walked it every morning and evening. They stepped it, and said it was three miles and seven steps from Mr. Dodge's place to the building site."

Writer has not searched to see if David Hull ever got married and had a family or not. It was reported that later he was injured in the raising of Chauncey Moore's barn. He did become a soldier in the Civil War and while still in the service he died 7 Nov. 1864 in a hospital in Rolla, Missouri.

Silas Dwight Dodge died 1 June 1880 at his farm in Hamilton and Mary Ann died there 7 October 1885. Both of them are buried in Kingston Cemetery.

In 1849 when gold was discovered in California, Elias and John became "forty-niners" and went overland to California. Several sources say they did succeed in making some money, though no details have come down about how they accomplished that. Dr. J.T. Dodge says they returned to "Far West," and George says the return trip was by "ship via the Cape of Good Hope," and that they got off a boat at Lexington. It is good there were other older family members in Missouri by then, to look after their families, for by then Elias had three young children and John two.

On the fact that he owned and operated, and which later passed into the hands of the son, Delbert David, he allowed the community to locate a school house, and in another location a small cemetery. "This same farm was reported to have a large amount of gold buried thereon during the Civil War and, although many have attempted to locate this gold, nothing has ever been found, so the knowledge of the writer (George)" he was told by his older half-brother, who was also named Elias Delbert. John Freeman Dodge was always to keep his money during the Civil War because of his knowledge being bad to his area, so it was entrusted to Elias to keep for him. It was hidden under the eaves of Elias's log house. It was gold, and the older brother said there was \$70,000.00. (Dodge said for those days before inflation.)

He said the following is an exact copy of a record they received from Aunt Susan Hamilton:

"Hamilton, Mo., was laid out by a Mr. Hamilton and Dr. A. G. Davis and one other man. Mr. Elias G. Dodge cut the main line on his place in the summer of 1850. He and Mr. David Hall lived out the winter and Mr. Dodge had the winter with an ox team for a horse pulled by a Mr. William Patton and a Mr. Chase and one other man.

"This was the first house-built in Hamilton. The carpenters worked at Mr. Dodge's and worked it every morning and evening. They stepped it, and said it was three miles and seven acres from Mr. Dodge's place to the building site."

Writer has not searched to see if David Hall ever got married and had a family or not. It was reported that later he was injured in the winter of 1850 by a runaway horse's team. He did become a soldier in the Civil War and while still in the service he died 7 Nov. 1864 in a hospital in Kansas, Missouri.

Elias Dodge is said to have died 1 June 1880 at his farm in Hamilton and Mary Ann died there 7 October 1885. Both of them are buried in Lexington Cemetery.

DODGE FAMILY

Children of Silas Dwight and Mary Ann (Hull) Dodge:

Susanna K. (30 Aug 1845-14 Jan 1927)M 19 Nov 1863 Franklin McCollum

* Dwight David (25 Dec 1846-23 Jan 1916) 27 Jan 1874 Lucy Cox
12 Jan 1904 Laura Scott

Eunice C. (29 Oct 1848- 7 Jul 1919) 22 Oct 1868 Fred. C. Gibson

Frances Nevada(12 Sep 1853-21 Oct 1920) 2 Feb 1874 Nathaniel Clarkson
7 Jun 1911 Jackson Edminster

A few notes first about the spouses and children of the daughters are given first, then followed by a longer discussion of the son, Dwight David, and his son George who wrote the book.

Franklin McCollum (1840-1911) lived on a farm southwest of Hamilton. He was a member of the voluntary infantry. They had two daughters, Florence who married Ernest E. Henry and Charlotte who married Leslie V. McCauley,

Frederick C. Gibson (1845-1927) was said to have been a Welshman. After Eunice died he spent his winters in San Antonio. They had five children, John Dwight, George F., Sylvia, Edwin, and Harry E. Gibson.

Nathaniel C. Clarkson (1849-1906) was a Hamilton postmaster. They had three children, Charles, Mary, and Egbert. (Frances is called "Fannie" in Latter Day Saint marriage records.) She and her last husband, Jackson Edminster had no children. She died in Excelsior Springs but is buried in Kingston Cemetery.

*Dwight David Dodge⁹ was born at Far West Missouri 26 Dec 1846 in the area that became Mirable TWP, to Silas Dwight and Mary Ann (Hull) Dodge. When he was an infant six weeks old his parents moved to the farm he grew up in and later inherited a little south of where Hamilton was later built.

When the Civil War broke out he was under 15 years old. Because of his youth he never became an actual soldier, but he became a member of the home militia and was actually involved in a skirmish against the rebels at Lexington under Captain Jacob Snider. He was brave but green--his Captain had to tell him to get behind a tree rather than stand boldly out in the open and get shot at.

On 27 Jan 1874 he married a devout Methodist girl named Lucy Frances Cox born 22 Oct 1854. They had four children and she died 19 May 1887 when the youngest was seven years old. His second wife, whom he married 12 Jan 1904, was Laura Scott born 15 Feb 1867 near Lancaster, Ohio, daughter of Mrms. Stephen Scott. Mr. Scott was a

Children of Elias Delight and Mary Ann (Hall) Dodge

Stephen K. (30 Aug 1842-14 Jan 1927) m 19 Nov 1861 Franklin McGowan

* Delight David (22 Dec 1846-23 Jan 1918) 27 Jan 1874 Lucy Cox
12 Jan 1874 Laura Scott

Emilie O. (129 Oct 1848-7 Jul 1919) 22 Dec 1868 Fred C. Gibson

Frances Newberry (22 Sep 1857-21 Oct 1920) 2 Feb 1874 Nathaniel Clarkson
7 Jan 1911 Jackson Newberry

A few notes first about the spouses and children of the daughters
are given first, then followed by a longer discussion of the
son, Delight David, and his son George and wife Lucy.

Franklin McGowan (1840-1911) lived on a farm southwest of Hamilton.
He was a member of the voluntary infantry. They had two daughters.
Frances was married first to Henry and Charles who married
Lillian V. McGowan.

Nathaniel C. Gibson (1842-1927) was said to have been a Weisman.
After Emilie died he spent his winters in San Antonio. They had
five children, John Dwight, George F., Sylvia, Edna, and Harry.
E. Gibson.

Nathaniel C. Clarkson (1849-1905) was a Hamilton postmaster. They
had three children, Charles, Mary, and Edgar. (Frances is called
"Emma" in later day Saint Lawrence records.) She and her last
husband, Jackson Newberry had no children. She died in Exeter
Newbury but is buried in Kingston Cemetery.

* Delight David Dodge was born at New West Windsor 20 Dec 1846 in the
area that became Kings Twp. to Elias Delight and Mary Ann (Hall)
Dodge. When he was an infant six weeks old his parents moved to
the farm he grew up in and later inherited a little south of where
Hamilton was later built.

When the Civil War broke out he was under 15 years old. Because of
his youth he never became an actual soldier, but he became a member
of the 9th militia and was actually involved in a battle against
the rebels at Lexington under Captain Jacob Shuler. He was brave
but green--his Captain had to tell him to get behind a tree rather
than stand boldly out in the open and get shot at.

On 27 Jan 1874 he married a devout Methodist girl named Lucy Frances
Cox born 20 Oct 1854. They had four children and she died 19 May
1887 when the youngest was seven years old. His second wife, whom
he married 12 Jan 1902, was Laura Scott born 12 Feb 1867 near
Lancaster, Ohio, daughter of Mrs. Stephen Scott. Mr. Scott was a

DODGE FAMILY

carpenter-contractor and a Civil War veteran. Though Laura was very active in the Methodist Episcopal church, Dwight David was baptized into the Reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints on 20 Aug 1906 by an Elder Pickering and a liberal contributor to the erection of Oakdale Church, to which his two daughters of his first marriage belonged.

Dwight David was a successful farmer. When he was 69 years old he disposed of most of his stock, rented out his farm, and bought a house in Hamilton but died 23 Jan 1916 before he could move there. The four living children shared equally in his will. His widow, Laura (Scott) Dodge died 29 Jan 1930 and is buried in the Scott lots in the Hamilton Cemetery.

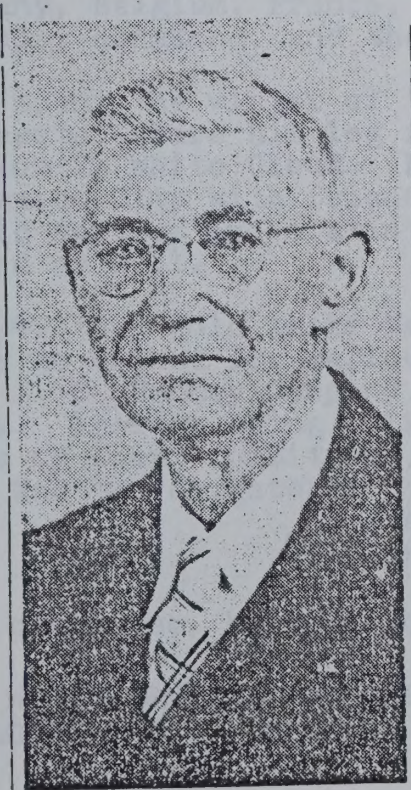
Children of Dwight David⁹ and Lucy (Cox) Dodge:

Silas Dwight (17 Dec 1874-3 Feb 1954) (see photo)	m 24 Nov 1897	Nora Maud Turner (1874-1942)
	4 children	
Nellie Lula (17 May 1876-13 Jul 1955) they were active LDS church	4 children	Ollie Clark Dunlop
Fannie May (11 Jun 1880-22 Jun 1963) he died suddenly of appendicitis	3 children	Coleman Snyder elder-LDS church

Children of Dwight David⁹ and Laura (Scott) Dodge:

**George Dwight (03 Apr 1905-) m 25 Oct 1836 Lois Margrete Schiller

This George Dodge is the man who let us copy his book, without which this writer could not have written so much of the material in this book.



COOK PHOTO



LEFT--Silas Dwight Dodge¹⁰

ABOVE--Lois (Schiller) Dodge,
pretty wife of George Dwight
Dodge¹⁰

...and a civil war veteran. ...
...in the Methodist Episcopal Church. ...
...into the Methodist Church of ...
...by an Elder ... and a liberal ...
...of ... Church, to which his two daughters of his first
... belonged.

... was a successful farmer. When he was 62 years old he
... of his stock, ... and bought a
... in Hamilton ... 23 Jan 1910 before he could move there.
... children shared equally in his will. His widow,
... (Scott) ... died 29 Jan 1920 and is buried in the Scott
... in the Hamilton Cemetery.

Children of Dwight David and Mary (Scott) Scott

... (17 Dec 1874-3 Feb 1920) m 20 Nov 1897 ...
... (1874-1902) 4 children
... (17 Nov 1875-13 Jul 1902) 4 children
... they were ...
... (11 Jan 1880-22 Jan 1902) 3 children
... of ...

Children of Dwight David and Laura (Scott) Scott

... (03 Apr 1902-) m 23 Oct 1898 ...

This George ... is the man who let us copy his book, without
... which this letter could not have written so much of the material
... in this book.



LEFT—Laura Scott
RIGHT—George Scott
... of George Scott
...

DODGE FAMILY

George Dwight Dodge¹⁰ was born 3 April 1905 on a farm a little south of Hamilton to Dwight David and Laura (Scott) Dodge. When he was 11 years old his father, age 69, had bought a house in town and was getting ready to move into it when he died. At that time George's older half-brother and sisters were all married with children of their own, some of them older than their little brother. The widow Laura Dodge moved into town and George finished school there. His mother died when he was 24 and he stayed with his aunt Emma A Scott and worked for a while, until he met with some kind of accident.

George's broken ankle refused to heal. That led into a romantic love story. He was hospitalized for a very long time. On 25 October 1936, in Room 520 of the Research Hospital in Kansas City, MO, he was wedded to pretty Lois Margarete Schiller, born 8 May 1912 near St. Joseph, MO. The ceremony was performed by a minister, Rev. Todd of Trenton. Between hospitalizations they lived at the Schiller farm at Trenton. Though he did not say so he probably gradually got around on crutches but must have had some bone infection such as osteomyelitis which gradually improved but required too much medication or trips to the doctor to allow him to hold down a job.

By 1938 his condition had improved enough that they took an extended auto tour through the midwest and most of the Atlantic seaboard states. On May 7th at New York City they embarked on an ocean liner going on a cruise to Plymouth, England. (Without knowing it, they were probably only a dozen or so miles from where Richard Dodge I was born!) They then visited England, Scotland, Holland, Germany, Belgium, France, Egypt, India, Ceylon and various Pacific Islands, Hongkong, and then Japan before returning to San Francisco.

They spent the winter of 1938-9 at the Mayo Clinic at Rochester, Minnesota, where his leg finally healed, then purchased a farm at auction in White Cloud. During that summer they took a vacation at Mexico City with friends. He worked at various jobs, including public service and a stint as a constable, and most likely Lois worked as well.

In 1947 they sold their farm, eventually moving back to Hamilton where he worked for various firms, including a very long stint with J. C. Penney Company. He was very active in the Masonic Lodge. Besides being a librarian at Hamilton, Lois served on all kinds of local committees. They were very active socially. They had two daughters,

Frederica Schiller Dodge born 7 Nov 1940
Sarah Margaret Dodge born 15 Nov. 1944

And, of course, he kept up the book.

NOW WE RETURN TO GENERATION 8 AND THE REST OF REV. DWIGHT DODGE'S CHILDREN--

George Dwight Dodge¹⁸ was born 7 April 1905 on a farm a little south of Hamilton to Dwight Dodge and Laura (Scott) Dodge. When he was 11 years old his father, age 62, had bought a house in town and was getting ready to move into it when he died. At that time George's older half-brother and sisters were all married with children of their own, some of them older than their little brother. The widow Laura Dodge moved into town and George finished school there. His mother died when he was 24 and he stayed with his aunt Emma A. Scott and worked for a while, until he met with some kind of accident.

George's broken ankle refused to heal. That led into a romantic love story. He was hospitalized for a very long time. On 25 October 1936, in Room 320 of the Research Hospital in Kansas City, MO, he was married to Gertrude Lela Marguerite Schiller, born 8 May 1912 near St. Joseph, MO. The ceremony was performed by a minister, Rev. Todd of Trenton. Between hospitalizations they lived at the Schiller farm at Trenton. Though he did not say so he probably gradually got around on crutches but must have had some bone infection such as osteomyelitis which gradually improved but required a much medication or trips to the doctor to allow him to hold down a job.

By 1937 his condition had improved enough that they took an extended road tour through the Midwest and most of the Atlantic seaboard states. On May 7th at New York City they embarked on an ocean liner going on a cruise to Plymouth, England. (Without knowing it, they were probably only a dozen or so miles from where Richard Dodge 1 was born.) They then visited England, Scotland, Holland, Germany, Belgium, France, Egypt, India, Ceylon and various Pacific Islands, Hongkong, and then Japan before returning to San Francisco.

They spent the winter of 1938-9 at the Mayo Clinic at Rochester, Minnesota, where his leg finally healed. Then purchased a farm at Madison in White Cloud. During that summer they took a vacation at Mexico City with friends. He worked at various jobs, including public service and a stint as a constable, and most likely left behind as well.

In 1947 they sold their farm, eventually moving back to Hamilton where he worked for various firms, including a very long stint with J. C. Penney Company. He was very active in the Masonic lodge. Besides being a librarian at Hamilton, Lela served on all kinds of local committees. They were very active socially. They had two daughters.

Gertrude Schiller Dodge born 7 May 1912
Lela Marguerite Dodge born 12 May 1940

And, of course, he kept up the book.

NOW WE RETURN TO GERTRUDE'S AND THE REST OF REV. DWIGHT DODGE'S CHILDREN...

DODGE FAMILY

Top--George Dodge's two little daughters are 5th & 6th from left
Bottom--His wife, Lois, and the dolls she collected on that world cruise.



GIRLS EXHIBIT THEIR DOLLS in the show last Thursday afternoon at the Legion Race Meet. Left to right are Loraine Barnes, Susie Tuggle, Doris Jean McCubbin, Alberta Van Camp, Frederica Dodge, Sarah Dodge, Susie Christmann, Sharolyn Kay Ochs, Carol Gillilan and Sandra Wilhoit.—
ADVOCATE PHOTO



HAMILTON WOMAN COLLECTS DOLLS ON WORLD TOUR—Mrs. George Dodge of south Hughes street has a most interesting collection of dolls which she bought while making a world tour with Mr. Dodge in 1938, two years after their marriage. The tour was postponed because of the severely fractured ankle suffered by Mr. Dodge, which required a long period of hospitalization. Mrs. Dodge and daughters, Frederica, 9, and Sarah, 5, came here from Barnard, Nodaway county in 1947, after selling their farm where they had lived for a number of years.

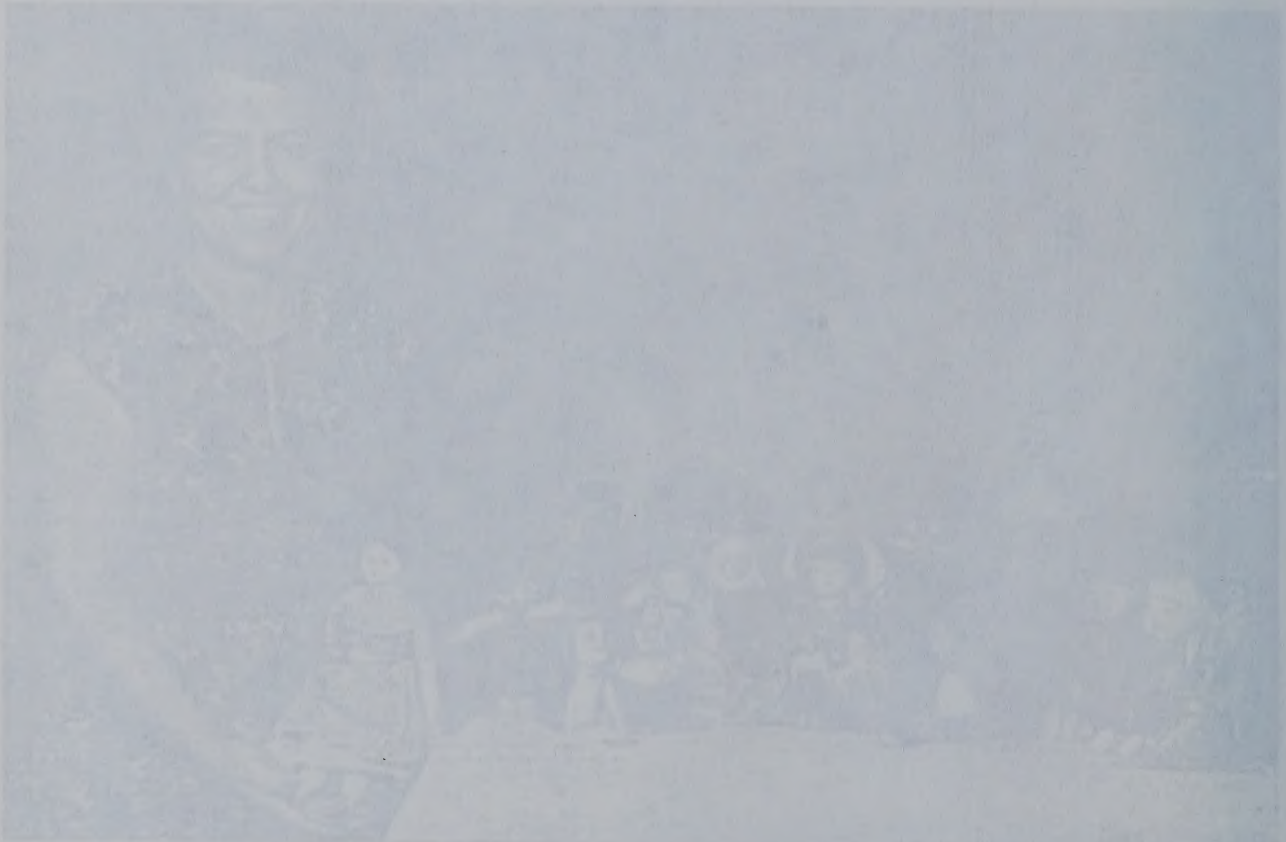
There are 21 dolls in the collection and all are dressed in the

authentic costumes of the countries they represent. The first doll on the left, pictured above, is a Mexican and furnished by Mrs. Dodge's aunt, who was a missionary in Mexico for 50 years. The others in order include two Chinese, Ceylon tea picker, another Mexican doll from Hawaii, Scottish, Indian Canadian, Russian, Japanese, Hungarian, English (the latter from England where Mrs. Dodge's brother lived for some time), Belgium, France, Holland, Philippine, Egyptian, Javanese and German dolls. The large doll Mrs. Dodge is holding belonged to Mr. Dodge's mother, the late Mrs. Laura Dodge.—PHOTO BY STRADE

Top-George Dodge's two little daughters are 5th & 6th from left
Bottom-His wife, Leta, and the dolls are collected on that
world cruise.



GEORGE DODGE'S TWO LITTLE DAUGHTERS ARE 5TH & 6TH FROM LEFT
BOTTOM-HIS WIFE, LETA, AND THE DOLLS ARE COLLECTED ON THAT
WORLD CRUISE.



HARRINGTON WOMAN COLLECTS DOLLS AND STUFFS TOYS
The Harrington woman is seen here with her collection of dolls and stuffed toys. She is standing in front of a large group of people, including children and adults. The image is somewhat faded and blurry.

DODGE FAMILY

Lucy Moriah Dodge⁸ the second child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 13 March 1820 In Newport, Cheshire (now Sullivan) County, New Hampshire. Page 169 of the 1820 census does show this little family there. Writer conjectures that they went back to New Hampshire at least partly because she wanted to be near her parents when the baby came. All must have gone fairly well, for next summer they were back in Sempronius.

The amount known about this daughter is rather sketchy. The census helps a little, also LDS marriage records. From the records we can conjecture that Lucy married about 1839 or 1840 in New York State, Martin Streeter born about 1817 in New York. They evidently moved to Missouri later than her parents, about 1850. Their first five children were born in New York and the last three in Missouri. In 1870 they were living near her brother, John Freeman Dodge, in Mirable area. Several years later his brother, Horace and his family also came west and lived near her brother Silas near Hamilton.

Martin Streeter became an Army Captain during the Civil War, and it is said that because she still had small children his being gone worked a hardship on the family, and that her two brothers tried to help her.

Lucy died about 1889 in Breckenridge but is buried in Kingston Cemetery. The notes do not say when he died. Maybe I can find his grave someday to find out.

Sorry I do not have more information on the children.

Children of Captain Martin and Lucy Moriah (Dodge) Streeter:

<i>on 1860 census</i> Ella W.	born ca 1841 ?	m. 28 Dec 1859 James Woosley
Evaline S.	1842	15 Nov 1865 William Northrup ? after 1870 () Cranby?
Hattie	1847	
Martin, Jr.	1849	13 Apr 1871 Emma Vanwinkle <i>Vanderpool</i>
Horace	1851	
Plumas	1857	
Dwight F.	1859	07 Mar 1883 Alicia A. Coit
Eugene	1864	

Ella and Mr. Woosley were married in Davies County. George said they had several children and spelled it Worsley. Evaline and William Northrup had one little son, William, Jr. William soon died. In 1870 she and little Willie, 4, were living with her parents. George said the little boy died young and she married a Mr. Cranby?? He called Martin's wife Emma Vanderpool. He did not list Dwight's wife. I could not find any other marriages, except a Horace J. Streeter married a Maria F. Cox but that seems to have been an older man.

Lucy Maria (Lucy) the second child of Dwight and Elizabeth (Harris) Jones was born 23 March 1830 in Newbury, Cheshire (now Sullivan) County, New Hampshire. Page 109 of the 1850 census does show this little family there. Visitor conjectures that they went back to New Hampshire at least partly because she wanted to be near her parents when the baby came. All about have gone fairly well, for next summer they were back in Hampshire.

The account known about this daughter is rather sketchy. The census helps a little, also the marriage records. From the records we can conjecture that Lucy married about 1859 or 1860 in New York State. Martin Streeter born about 1817 in New York. They evidently moved to Missouri later than her parents. About 1850, their three five children were born in New York and the last three in Missouri. In 1870 they were living near her mother, John Streeter Jones, in Lincoln area. Several years later his brother, Horace and his family also came west and lived near her brother Elias near Hamilton.

Martin Streeter became an army doctor during the Civil War, and it is said that because she still had small children his being gone worried a husband in the family, and that her two husbands tried to help her.

Lucy died about 1887 in Breckenridge but is buried in Kingston Cemetery. The notes do not say when he died. Maybe I can find his grave someday to find out.

Maybe I do not have more information on the children.

Children of Martin Streeter and Lucy Maria (Harris) Streeter

1. 10 Dec 1859 James Woodbury	1861	1861
2. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
3. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
4. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
5. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
6. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
7. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
8. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
9. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
10. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
11. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
12. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
13. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
14. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
15. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
16. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
17. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
18. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
19. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862
20. 12 Nov 1862 William Northrup	1862	1862

This and Mr. Woodbury were married in Newbury County. George said they had several children and called it Newbury. Twining and William Northrup had one little son, William Jr. William said died. In 1870 she and little William Jr. were living with her parents. George said the little boy died young and she married a Mr. Twining. He called Martin's wife Jane Woodbury. He did not list Dwight's wife. I would not know any other marriages, except a housewife. Streeter married a Miss E. Cox but that seems to have been an older man.

DODGE FAMILY

Levi Freeman Dodge⁸ third child of Dwight and Susannah (Monroe) Dodge was born 15 August 1821 in Sempronius, Cayuga County, NY. The Bible record says he died 18 August 1822 in Sempronius, "age one year and three days."

John Freeman Dodge⁸ fourth child of Rev. Dwight and Susanna (Monroe) Dodge was born 4 May 1824 in Sempronius New York. On the following page is a photostatic copy of a page from the Caldwell County History. It says that in 1829 the family moved to Cortland County and remained there until 1846 when they all came west. That does not agree with the US census reports, nor with the Dodge Family Bible which shows that all seven of the remaining children were born in Cayuga County.

John did come west in 1846 with his father's family. Others may have accompanied them, but if so I do not have their names. They settled in Blythe township. In a year or two (1847 or 1848) John married Louisa Mae Walters, born 10 Sep 1818 in Homer, New York to George and Mary (Alvord) Walter. Previous pages have explained her Eastern background. At the time of their marriage John was 23 or 24 and Louisa Mae was about 30.

The Walters family was in Far West, Caldwell County, Missouri by 1837 when they paid taxes there, if not earlier. George did not mention any Mormon background nor did the County history, but Dr. J. T. Dodge's book says that John settled in Far West and married the daughter of a Mormon neighbor after the others had gone to Nauvoo. I don't know about the Walters, but some of the Hulls did live in Palmyra, New York, the old stomping grounds of the Mormon Prophet, Joseph Smith. (The only note of George that even approached the subject says his father, in old age in 1906, Dwight David, his father and John's nephew, became a Latter Day Saint.) This writer is in no position to question any of this or attempt to reconcile it, but feels such matters should at least be reported for the record.

The following are said to be interred in John Dodge's family plot in the Kingston Cemetery: Louise's parents, George Walters (28 Sep 1796-25 Feb 1856) and Mary (Alvord) Walter (26 Nov 1796-7 Feb 1896)--99 years, 2 mos., 11 days! who had lived with John and his family, and Naomi Alvord who died 23 April 1850 age 35 years, 11 mo, 7 days thought to be Mary's much younger sister.

As reported before, John Freeman Dodge was a "49er" who went overland to California during the Gold Rush with his brother. They were said to have been successful, but nobody has said how they accomplished that. John was a successful and prosperous man, as shown in the illustration below. He credited his excellent education in New York for at least part of his success. The part of Far West he settled in became Mirable.

His mother-in-law lived with him, and her sister Lucy (Alvord) and George Houghton next door. Next door to them lived his

John (James) Dodge, third child of Dwight and Hannah (Hodge) Dodge was born 23 August 1821 in Southampton, Cayuga County, N.Y. This single record says he died 13 August 1882 in Southampton, age one year and three days.

John (James) Dodge, fourth child of Rev. Dwight and Hannah (Hodge) Dodge was born 4 May 1824 in Southampton New York. On the following page is a photostatic copy of a page from the Caldwell County History. It says that in 1829 the family moved to Cortland County and remained there until 1845 when they all came west. That does not agree with the US census reports, nor with the Dodge Family Bible which shows that all seven of the remaining children were born in Cayuga County.

John and some went in 1845 with his father's family. Others may have accompanied them, but it is not clear. They resided in Wayne Township. In a year or two (1847 or 1848) John married Louisa Mae Walker, born 10 Sep 1818 in Homer, New York to George and Mary (Alford) Walker. Previous pages have explained that Walker was born in Cortland County. At the time of their marriage John was 21 or 22 and Louisa was about 26.

The Walker family was in Far West, Caldwell County, Missouri by 1847 when they sold taxes there. It was earlier. George did not mention any known background nor did the County History. But Mr. J. T. Dodge's book says that John resided in Far West and married the daughter of a known neighbor after the others had gone to Europe. I don't know about the Walker, but none of the family live in Far West, New York. The old stopping ground of the Walker family, Joseph Smith. (The only note of George that even approached the subject says his father, in old age in 1868, bought land, his father and John's nephew, became a lawyer. But John is in no position to question any of this or attempt to reconcile it, but feels such matters should at least be reported for the record.

The following are said to be interested in John Dodge's family place in the Kingston Cemetery: Louise's parents, George Walker (23 Sep 1792-25 Feb 1856) and Mary (Alford) Walker (25 Nov 1792-7 Feb 1861-25 years, 2 mos., 11 days) who had lived with John and his family, and Naomi Alford who died 23 April 1830 age 37 years, 11 mo, 2 days thought to be Mary's much younger sister.

As reported before, John (James) Dodge was a "war" who went overland to California during the Gold Rush with his brother. They were said to have been successful, but nobody has said how they accomplished that. John was a successful and prosperous man, as shown in the information below. He credited his early education in New York for at least part of his success. The part of Far West he settled in became Missouri.

His mother-in-law lived with him, and her sister Lucy (Alford) and her husband George lived next door to them lived his

DODGE FAMILY

sister Lucy (Dodge) and Martin Streeter. Either his particular area or an ostentatious home may have attracted "bushwhackers" during Civil War, or he feared so, for he entrusted his brother Silas with \$30,000.00 in gold which was buried under the stairs of Silas's log home until the danger was over.

John died 20 July 1885 age 61 and Louisa 28 Jan 1902. Both are buried in the Kingston Cemetery.

Children of John Freeman and Louisa Mae (Walters) Dodge:

John (11 Nov 1849-1 Dec 1863) died age 18
Mary (^{1848 for 1860 census}) m. 12 Jan 1880 Frank Morris. They
had two children, Eugene Morris m. Elsie Rinkler
Louise Morris m. Kennedy

From Calwell County History, pp 372-3:

HON. JOHN F. DODGE

(Deceased).

The name that heads this sketch was that borne by one of the most highly respected and esteemed residents Caldwell county ever had. For three years John F. Dodge made his home in Hamilton, actively and closely identified with all movements of enterprise and merit. In an official capacity he had served the people at a time in the country's history when only men of broad but firm principles and ideas could discharge duties in a decisive manner. His death on July 20, 1885, was the occasion of universal sorrow, for all felt the loss which would be sustained by the departure of such a man. John F. Dodge was born in Cayuga county, N. Y., May 24, 1824. His father was a minister of the Christian Church — Rev. Dwight Dodge, and he was also by trade a blacksmith. His wife was formerly Miss Susan Monroe, whose father, M. Monroe, Esq., was a farmer and shoemaker by occupation. In 1829 the family removed from Cayuga to Cortland county, N. Y., John accompanying them, and in the latter county he was favored with such educational advantages as the district schools afforded. He remained there until 1846 and at that early day came West, locating in what now constitutes Caldwell county, engaging in farming at once. About the year 1861 he was elected county judge and served the county in that capacity for sixteen years, only resigning on account of ill health about 1878. He was obliged to decline further public preferment, though sought to do so. Of great popularity, Judge Dodge discharged his duties in a faultless manner and with great satisfaction. During the war he desired to enlist but was prevented by his constituents who would not release him from the position he then occupied. He was possessed of considerable property and at his death left a large estate. His wife was formerly Miss Louisa M. Walter, daughter of George Walter, of New York State. Two children were born to the Judge and his wife: John G. died when eighteen (18) years old, and Mary L. is now the wife of James F. Morris of Hamilton. Mrs. Dodge now resides in Hamilton, where she is held in great respect by those who are favored with her acquaintance.

Alister Doug (Dodge) and Martin Douglass. Either his particular name or an association name may have existed "Dodge" or "Douglass" as he lived as, for he entered his brother's name with \$30,000 in gold which was buried under the stairs of Alister's log home until the danger was over.

John died 20 July 1882 age 61 and Louise 28 Jan 1902. Both are buried in the Kingston Cemetery.

Children of John Preston and Louise Mae (Walcott) Dodge:

John (11 Nov 1863-1 Dec 1883) died age 19
Mary (12 Jan 1860-1880) Frank Morris. They had two children, Eugene Morris m. Elsie Hinkle
Louise Morris m. Kennedy

From Caldwell County History, pp 372-3

HON. JOHN N. DOUGLAS

(Continued)

The name that heads this sketch was first borne by one of the great highly respected and esteemed judges Caldwell county ever had. For three years John F. Dodge made his home in Hamilton, Kentucky and closely identified with the movement of enterprise and growth. In an official capacity he had served the people of a time in the country's history when only men of broad and high principles and those could discharge duties in a decisive manner. His death on July 20, 1882, was the removal of a great sorrow for all felt the loss which would be sustained by the department of such a man. John N. Dodge was born in Cayuga county, N. Y., May 24, 1824. His father was a minister of the Christian Church - Rev. Wright Dodge, and he was also a teacher. His wife was formerly Miss Susan Johnson, whose father, Mr. Johnson, had a farm and shop. In 1853 the family removed from Cayuga to Caldwell county, Ky. John accompanying them, and in the latter county he was favored with such educational advantages as the free schools afforded. He remained there until 1840 and at that early day came West, locating in what was then called Caldwell county, Ky. in 1840. About the year 1847 he was elected county judge and served the county in that capacity for several years, only resigning on account of ill health about 1852. He was also engaged in teaching and, though sought by no one, he taught privately. Judge Dodge discharged his duties in a business manner and with great satisfaction. During the war he was present at the battle of Shiloh, and was present at the battle of Stones River. He was present at the battle of Nashville, and at his death left a large estate. His wife was formerly Miss Louise M. Walker, daughter of George Walker, of New York. Two children were born to the Judge and his wife, John B. and Mary (18) years old, and Mary is now the wife of James F. Morris of Hamilton. Mrs. Dodge now resides in Hamilton, where she is held in great respect by those who are favored with her acquaintance.

DODGE FAMILY

Lydia Susannah Dodge⁸ was born 13 July 1830 at Locke, Cayuga Co., New York to Reverend Dwight and Susanna (Monroe) Dodge, and her 31-year old mother died three weeks and two days later.

The little newborn and the unfortunate suffering mother were tenderly nursed by a concerned and loving friend who tried the best she could to comfort the mother and take excellent care of the newborn. She grieved when her friend passed away, but before that happened Susannah named the baby Lydia in gratitude and affection. The rest insisted on the middle name of Susannah.

So soon after that it seems odd by modern standards, Dwight asked Lydia to marry him and she accepted. She was already extremely fond of the whole family and she loved the little baby and raised her as her own. They were married only four months after Susannah died. The whole family did mourn the loss, but they needed Lydia.

Writer regrets to say that Grandma did report more about this child, but I have forgotten all of it except that there was always a strong bond between the two Lydias. She did grow up, marry a Mr. DeHaven, before she and her younger sister Sarah and family migrated to California in the mid or late 1850's. She probably had children but I do not know their names or the first name of her husband. She died 1 November 1860 in California, only 30 years old.

Writer would be grateful for any further information at all.

Phebe Keziah Dodge⁸ was born 12 October 1831 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York, first child of Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge, eleven months after the wedding. Her name was special, for she was named for both of her grandmothers. Phebe (Wood) Pearce, a widow, was living nearby with her son, Phebe's Uncle Giles and saw the family often, partly because they belonged to Dwight's church.

Dwight's mother, Keziah (Ellis) Dodge was then living with her husband and children in New Hampshire. Her youngest child, Phebe's Uncle Ellis, was only six years older than she was. Details of her young life have not come down to us, but she and Lydia, only about a year older, doubtless played together happily. Her Grandmother Phebe died when she was twelve. Uncle Giles moved to Ohio and she moved with her parents, brothers, and sisters to Caldwell County, Missouri, when she was fourteen.

Little Phebe Keziah Dodge died 29 June 1847, aged fifteen years and eight months.

Lydia Susan Rodge was born 13 July 1870 at Jacks, Oregon Co., New York to Reverend Daniel and Susan (Horton) Rodge, and her 21-year old mother died three weeks and two days later.

The little newborn and the unfortunate suffering mother were tenderly nursed by a concerned and loving friend who tried the best she could to comfort the mother and take excellent care of the newborn. The friend who her friend passed away, but before that happened Susan named the baby Lydia in gratitude and affection. The rest insisted on the middle name of Susan.

So soon after that it seems odd by modern standards, Lydia asked Lydia to marry him and she accepted. She was already extremely kind of the whole family and she loved the little baby and raised her as her own. They were married only four months after Susan died. The whole family did mourn the loss, but they needed Lydia.

Lydia regrets to say that Grandma did report more about this child, but I have forgotten all of it except that there was always a strong bond between the two Lydias. She did grow up, marry a Mr. Johnson, before she and her younger sister Sarah and family migrated to California in the mid or late 1890's. She probably had children but I do not know their names or the time of her husband's death. She died 1 November 1888 in California, only 30 years old.

Lydia would be grateful for any further information at all.

Lydia Susan Rodge was born 13 October 1871 in Sumnerhill, Oregon Co., New York, first child of Rev. Daniel and Lydia (Horton) Rodge. Her name was spelled, for she was named months after the wedding. Three (born) Rodges, a widow, named her first of her grandchildren. Lydia's Uncle Elias and her mother living nearby with her son, Lydia's Uncle Elias and her mother living nearby with her son, Lydia's Uncle Elias and her mother living nearby with her son.

Lydia's mother, Lydia (Ellis) Rodge was then living with her husband and children in New Hampshire. Her youngest child, Lydia's Uncle Elias, was only six years old when she was. Details of her young life are not known to me, but she and Lydia, only about a year apart, shared a close relationship. Her grandmother lived with her when she was twelve. Lydia's Uncle Elias moved to Ohio and she moved with her brother, and sister to Caldwell County, Missouri, when she was fourteen.

Lydia Susan Rodge died 29 June 1897, aged fifteen years and eight months.

DODGE FAMILY

Obadiah Morrill Dodge⁸ was born 22 May 1833 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was 13 years old when he migrated with his parents to Missouri. In 1857 he married Nancy Long, born in 1840, and they had nine children. The amount writer knows is woefully sparse. Some from the family bible, three marriage records of his children, the census, and George's notes.

Writer would greatly appreciate any additions or corrections, for I am not at all satisfied with what I have but will print this, lacking better information. The 1870 census calls him a farmer. Another source says that same year he was hauling freight between Kingston and Hamilton. Obadiah died 23 March 1899, and Nancy died in 1910. Their graves are just north of his father's.

Children of Obadiah and Nancy (Long) Dodge:

Mary "Mollie" bca 1858 m.	18 Apr 1878	Matthew Cannon.	4 sons.
Florence "Flossie" 1861	10 Mar 1883	(1) Jesse V. Allee	
	18	(2) Marsh	
Robert (7/3/63-12/7/29)	18	Nora McFall	
Alice 1865	18	Glaziner? White?	
Gertrude	18	C.W. Dolly	1 son lived
Frances "Fannie" 1868	1 Jan 1884	David West	3 children
Emma 1870	18	?Vert Rogers	1 child, lived KCKS
Nannie)	18	? Dr. White	
Nettie) (1/8/76-9/27/37)	16 Jan 1901	Sam McMasters--	1 son Sammie d.y. & they left farm, ran groc.store

It appears that the census calls the 7th Emma but George says Effie. Gertrude, Nannie and Nettie are not on the 1870 census. Twins were born later. Would not be surprised if some of this is wrong.

Levi James Dodge⁸ was born 30 April 1835 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was named for both of his grandfathers. James Pearce was long since deceased, having died in 1820. Maybe his other grandpa, Levi Dodge, was then ill for he died the following December, in New Hampshire. This was Dwight's second attempt to name a child for his father.

When Little Levi was "nine years, nine months, and three days old" (Bible records) on a February day he slipped, skidded on the ice, and fell backwards, fracturing his skull. He became comatose and fell asleep; and he never regained consciousness.

The family felt that if only they had forced him to walk around to stay alert and awake he would have lived, so for the next hundred years the Dodges, and later descendants Dunns and even Whites, never let anyone who became ill pass out, but marched the ill person around to keep him/her alive. The date of Levi's death was 3 February 1844 in Summerhill, New York.

m. Sealey? *look at CC hxc + census*
Sarah C. Dodge⁸ was born 30 April 1837 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. Writer cannot find anything in print about her, other than what the Dodge family Bible says. However, My mother, Ada (White) Yoakum, recalls being told that Sarah was married in her teens, about 1854 or 5, though she cannot remember the husband's name. Children came quickly and she soon had her hands full. There were probably at least four.

There is an old family story to the effect that when the oldest was tiny Sarah needed my great grandmother Emma, four years younger, to help watch the baby and keep away the flies while she did some other necessary chore. Flies were especially bad that summer. They bit and were filthy pests. Back before the Civil War people did not have adequate ways to control insects as we can now. Some netting may have existed, but mostly they could just fly in through the windows.

All food had to be kept covered to keep insects away. The only way to keep food cool was to put it down a cistern or spring in a bucket tied to a rope. Usually the bucket was wooden. They sometimes made preserves or pickles, or dried fruit or certain meats in the sun or over a fire. (Nowadays we use the fancy word dehydration.) They also had root cellars. Canning food was not yet in vogue and was not safe--that came later.

Getting back to the subject, Emma was a careless teenager about fourteen years or younger. She did not do a very good job of keeping the flies away but Sarah paid her 10¢. Back then 10¢ was worth what several dollars would be nowadays. Emma put the dime in her mouth and accidentally swallowed it. Divine retribution?

Sarah, her husband, and four young children migrated to California with Lydia Susannah (Dodge) DeHaven and her family in the late 1850's. Crossing the desert a grain of sand blew into the baby's eye (another, younger baby than the one mentioned before, who was now a little child.) The baby cried piteously, and they attempted frantically to dislodge the offending object from his little eye, which became infected. The baby lost that eye.

Sarah did correspond with the folks in Missouri. The years slid by to approximately 1911 or 1912 or so, when Emma was an elderly widow, about 70 years old, living alone in a tiny house on the west side of Kingston. One day there was a lot of talking about a hanging that was going to take place in Mirable--people still liked to attend those grizzly events back then. All that talk made her so jittery that she asked her grandson, Mamma's older brother Benjamin White, who was probably about twelve at the time, to stay overnight with her. As luck would have it, they did have plenty of excitement, and it is good Uncle Ben was with her. A fire broke out nearby, with a big conflagration. During all the ruckus, word came to Emma that her sister Sarah had died.

John C. Douglas was born 30 April 1897 in Sumnerville, Oregon. His father was Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearson) Dodge. His mother was Mrs. (White) Yorkman, formerly being told that James was married in 1897 or 1898. The exact date of the husband's name. Children were probably at least four.

There is no old family story to the effect that when the oldest son, John, needed a good horse, his father, John, told him to go and find one. John was apparently not that young. They hit and were killed. John before the Civil War people did not have adequate ways to control insects as we can now. Some nothing may have existed, but mostly they could just fly in through the windows.

All food had to be kept covered to keep insects away. The only way to keep food cool was to put it in a cellar or spring in a bucket tied to a rope. Usually the bucket was wooden. They sometimes made preserves or pickles, or dried fruit or certain meats in the sun or over a fire. (Nowadays we use the large word refrigerator.) They also had root cellars. Canning food was not yet in vogue and was not safe--that came later.

Setting back to the subject, James was a careless teenager about fourteen years of age. He did not do a very good job of keeping the flies away but James paid for it. Back then the flies were what general children would be nowadays. James put the flies in her coat and accidentally swallowed it. (Dying?)

James, her husband, and four young children migrated to California with John (Douglas) (Dodge) (Pearson) and her family in the late 1890's. (Douglas was about a year or two old then and his mother was (another) younger than the one mentioned before, who was now a little child. The baby cried pitifully, and they attempted frantically to soothe the offending object from his little eye, which became infected. The baby lost that eye.

James did correspond with his folks in Missouri. The years since 1900 approximately 1911 or 1912 or so, when James was an elderly widow, about 70 years old, living alone in a tiny house on the west side of Winston. The day there was a lot of talking about a hanging tree was going to take place in Winston--people will find to attend these ghastly events back then. All that said, but so jittery that she asked her grandson, James's older brother Benjamin White, who was probably about twelve at the time, to stay overnight with her. In fact, she said it, that did have plenty of excitement, and it is good Uncle Sam was with her. A little more one nearby, with a big celebration. During all the trouble, word came to James that her sister Mary had died.

DODGE FAMILY

William O. Dodge⁸ was born 7 January 1839 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge. He was the childhood playmate of my great grandmother, Emma Adelia Dodge, two years younger, and she became a bit of a tomboy trying to keep up with him. She was not always successful, as another of those family stories illustrates.

Billy and Emma, when they were little, were always getting into mischief, and to show how brave they were, and how skillful, kept pulling pranks and daring each other to do "dangerous" stunts. Because of their personalities, older members of the family tried to keep a lid on their activity. Especially off limits was a creek with trees to climb and tempting grapevines. They were told never, never to go there without adult supervision and threatened with physical punishment or other dire consequences if they were ever caught near the place.

What kind of fun is that? The more forbidden, the more exciting and tempting. They were playing near the creek one day when the water was a little higher than usual, though it did not quite cover a big rock in the middle of the stream. There were long, sturdy grapevines hanging off a tree or so at that point, and they decided--or at least Billy did--that the other side of the creek looked inviting. They began swinging across the creek on the vines and Billy did quite well but Emma, being younger and not quite as skillful, and wearing a dress besides, had trouble hanging on and got stuck in the middle. She could not swim and was petrified. Billy had no choice but to go get help! What happened after that was left to the imagination.

One can tell from the story that the children were quite young, but whether that happened when she was five and he was seven, before they left the Finger Lakes area of New York, or later in Missouri is hard to figure out. It is true wild grapes sometimes grew along creekbeds in Caldwell County. On the other hand, the Finger Lakes area was, and still is, renowned for the fine wines it produces. Grapes grew in great abundance and the Dodge family may very well have made wine for their own consumption or for Communion services in Dwight's church. One reason I suspect so was the attitude of my Grandma, Mary Lydia (Emma's daughter), plus remembering that when the Dodges moved to Missouri in the 1840's, prohibition was an idea whose time had not yet come.

There was a time during our country's development when alcoholism was a national problem, especially because it was easier to take liquor to market than big loads of corn, but just after the Civil War, when Rev. Dwight Dodge organized that congregation, it most likely would have been considered almost sacreligious to use grape juice instead of wine. But during Prohibition that is exactly what they did, in that very building. But my Grandma always said she loved wine, and the way she said it we could tell she was thinking of a time long ago. Our whole family were

William O. Dodge was born 7 January 1857 in Sumnerville, Cayuga Co., New York to Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pence) Dodge. He was the youngest of six children. His father was a Congregational minister and a member of the New York State Legislature. He was a very successful businessman and a member of the New York State Legislature. He was a very successful businessman and a member of the New York State Legislature.

Billy and Emma, when they were little, were always getting into mischief, and to show how brave they were, and how skillful, kept pulling pranks and making each other do "dangerous" stunts. Because of their personalities, other members of the family tried to keep a lid on their activity. Especially off limits was a creek with trees to climb and tempting exposures. They were told never to go there without adult supervision and threatened with physical punishment or other dire consequences if they were ever caught near the place.

That kind of fun is what the boys forbade. The more exciting and tempting. They were playing near the creek one day when the water was a little higher than usual. Though it did not quite cover a big rock in the middle of the stream. There were logs, mostly grapevines hanging off a tree or at the point, and they decided--or at least Billy did--that the other side of the creek looked inviting. They began swinging across the stream on the vines and Billy did quite well but Emma, being younger and not quite as skillful, and wearing a dress besides, had trouble because she had stuck in the middle. She could not swim and was petrified. Billy had no choice but to go get help. What happened after that was left to the imagination.

One can tell from the story that the children were quite young. But whether that happened when she was five and he was seven, or later, is hard to figure out. It is true the grapes sometimes grow along creeks in Cayuga County. On the other hand, the vines are not very thick and still are, renowned for the time when it was a grape grower in great abundance and the Dodge family may well have made wine for their own consumption or for community service in Dwight's church. One reason I suspect it was the friends of my grandmothers, Mary Lydia (Pence) Dodge, who was the friend who when the Dodge moved to Niagara in the late 1850s, probably was an idea whose time had not yet come.

There was a time during the country's development when alcoholism was a national epidemic, especially because it was easier to take liquor to market than the harder to carry, but just after the Civil War, when Rev. Dwight Dodge organized that congregation, it was likely would have been considered almost unorthodox to use grape juice instead of wine. But during Prohibition that is exactly what they did. In that very building. For my grandmothers said she loved wine, and the way she said it we could tell she was thinking of a time long ago. Our whole family were

DODGE FAMILY

teetotalers. In fact, when I was little they did not dance, play cards, or do hardly anything. So one Christmas when my sister Billie and I were very young and daring adults, living and working in the city, we decided Grandma deserved a special treat. We gave her a nice bottle of wine. The startled look on people's faces was something to see, but Mamma later told me that Grandma enjoyed it. She drank all of it, a tiny bit at a time.

When the Civil War broke out in 1861, William O. Dodge, age 22, became a private (probably in the Cavalry) in the Union Army under Captain E. D. Johnson of Caldwell County. He was one of five men to be caught in an ambush as their company attempted to cross the Missouri River on horseback over a bridge at Blue Mill Landing in Clay County. (I think they mean near Liberty.) A group of Rebels, hiding under the bridge, "poured about 100 shot into the company."

Billy's right leg was so seriously wounded it partially incapacitated him the rest of his life, but four of his comrades were killed in that ambush. A photocopy of his captain's version of what happened, taken from a book of Caldwell County history, appears on another page.

Another page shows a list of Caldwell County "List of Pensioners on the Roll as of Jan. 1, 1888." The book it was copied from was an official government publication, published by act of the U. S. Congress the preceding year. It shows that William O. Dodge of Hamilton, Missouri, was receiving a government pension of \$10.00 per month due to injuries received in a wound to the right leg. The date the pension started is unclear, it either commenced December 1882 or earlier, and was probably from at least partial disability due to the war injury. (Also interesting on that list is the fact that a Mrs. Laura Scott was receiving the standard \$8.00 per month War of 1812 Widow's Pension. Was this lady related to the later George Dodge's mother? See bottom of page 88.)

Writer cannot resist including yet another page of illustrations, copied from George's book this time, typifying the frustrating "governmentese" forms received by Billy Dodge and later his widow, Hattie. I've run across that problem in various other family lines having nothing to do with the Dodges, in the 1880's. The system was especially frustrating for elderly War of 1812 widows trying to get the benefits they had coming, and have no doubt some of the poor souls simply gave up! So if you, the reader, receive some really garbled message from the IRS, Social Security, Medicare or whatever federal agency--remember, the government is good at that. They started practicing a long, long time ago. Wonder if it will be any better 100 years from now, or will new-found technology make it even worse?)

It seems that Billy applied for either an increased pension or some other benefit he was entitled to on 30 April 1901 but died

DODGE FAMILY

Description of the Civil War Battle in which William O. Dodge was wounded, as told by his Captain E. D. Johnson

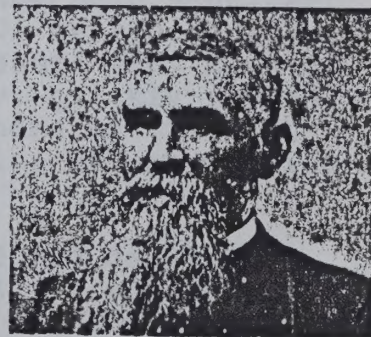
CAPT. E. D. JOHNSON

Submitted by Robert E. Cope

E. D. Johnson was born and bred a soldier in Coshocton County, Ohio, November 28, 1828. In 1846, upon the outbreak of the war with Mexico, he enlisted in Co. B., 3rd Ohio Inf. with which command he served fifteen months. After his return from the battle fields of Mexico, in the year 1848, he married Miss Emily Shaffer of his home county in Ohio, and with a land warrant in his pocket, one of the old fashioned lynchpin wagons, a yoke of cattle and twelve dollars in money, this couple wended their way to the prairies of Iowa and settled in Benton County and made his home there for five years. At the expiration of that period he moved to Caldwell County, Mo. It was merely a matter of chance that caused him to stop here as he was on his way to Texas. Here he settled with his family on a farm and he continued in that calling with much profit for several years. In the year 1861, when the tocsin of war resounded throughout the country and the rally cry for volunteers for the Confederacy were being made conspicuously at the county seat of this county, Johnson was on his farm employed in shingling his barn, with the roof half on, he got the word that a company of rebels was being raised in Kingston. It was more than this patriot could stand. He left his hammer and saw on the roof, came down with fire in his eye, with a declaration in his heart that Caldwell County at least, should be preserved to the Union flag. He mounted a sorrel horse that was famous for his racing and like the wind wended his way to a little town named Mirabile, located eight miles west of Kingston. At this place he found several young men anxious and ready to take a part in the momentous question of the hour. Couriers were sent out and the west part of this county was thoroughly aroused and a company of 150 men, men of iron nerve, was raised inside of 24 hours and he was unanimously elected its captain. This was the 12th day of May 1861, he with others, bonded their farms to Uncle Sam for arms and ammunition and the company inside of 10 days were thoroughly armed and equipped for war, the first company raised in North Missouri for the suppression of the rebellion and all within one month after the firing on Fort Sumpter. The most important incident of their service was their participation in the battle of Blue Mill Landing on the Missouri River, in Clay County, Sept.

✓ 17, 1861. They were ambushed as they crossed the river. About 100 shot poured into the company, by the rebels, some of whom were hidden under a bridge. Five Caldwell County men were shot clean out of their saddles, four of them being killed instantly, and the other desperately wounded. The four men killed were Linus Miller, Daniel Strobe, John Smith and James Bogan. The wounded man was Wm. O. Dodge. The federals attacked the rebels in ambush and concealment and were repulsed with a loss of 10 killed and 75 or more wounded. Wounded was Capt. Johnson. He fought nobly at the head of his company and when the retreat was ordered he was so far in the fight that word did not reach him, and in the heroic charge that was being made he was seriously wounded far in advance of the line, and the rebels getting in between him and his command and blood flowing from his wound, he sought shelter in a shock of hemp in a field near by, where he lay two days without food or medical attention. He was discovered by an old darkey and a white man who were friendly to the Union. They took him in and cared for him and put him in a wagon, keeping him well concealed and brought him to his father's residence near Mirabile. The family as well as every unionist in Caldwell County rejoiced, for the report had gone out all over the county that he had been killed and his body thrown, by the rebels, in the Missouri River. Immediately on recovery from his wounds he rejoined his company at Mirabile, where they were mustered out October 12, 1861.

He departed this life at Springfield, Missouri, 16th day of April 1895.



Captain E.D. Johnson
1828-1895

Photocopy, page 120, Vol I
"History of Caldwell County MO"
(1985)
(Madison WI State Hx Soc #F472 C2
copied 1993 C34)

DODGE FAMILY

6 September 1901 before a determination was made--then later Hattie was penalized because he had not been re-examined by a Government physician. Perhaps he didn't know to do that, or was too sick to get to that other doctor--no matter, it was all his fault!! It is hard to know how this all came out. Presumably Hattie eventually received a pension, though maybe not as much as if she had been able to carry out some obscure instructions.

On one of those forms, the name R. L. Dodge appears as the attorney they assigned William C. Dodge. George scribbled on this that the man was no relation, and that he was father of Judge R. K. Dodge. Not mentioned was another early settler in Caldwell County in 1837 of before, Erastus Dodge. He seems to have had a number of descendants. One wonders whether he came west when the Walters family did, or the Mormons. Writer has been unable to find any connection with any of those people, and also searched the Dodge Genealogy by Dr. J. T. Dodge. He seems to have been completely unaware of them.

William could not have been completely disabled, at least in midlife, for it is said he was Hamilton city marshall for a while. He also ran a hack between Kingston and Hamilton. Perhaps he and his older brother Obadiah were associated in the latter venture, though no evidence proving that has surfaced.

The information about Billy's marriage(s) is from George, who says there were two marriages. The first was of very brief duration, possibly to a Melissa Alexander, though he seemed very unsure of that name. He was told by an older cousin, Laura Kautz, that Hattie, "being modern for her day," came between Billy and his wife. Presumably a divorce or annulment followed, after which the couple eloped and were married by a preacher at Tom Creek. "Just why there the family did not know."

Whereupon, he continues, "The family gave them the cold shoulder" until Dwight David's child, Silas--generation 10, George's older half brother--was injured in a "runaway." I presume they mean a spooked horse? Billy, who must have been nearby, quickly picked up the injured child and rushed him to his own home to treat his wounds. "After that the family, except for Eunice Gibson, buried the hatchet."

Writer wonders if the whole Dodge family shunned the couple. Though others might not have approved, I suspect the snubbers were mostly Silas and John's clique. Billy had only one child, Sallie. The 1870 census shows him living next door to Obadiah, whom they call a farmer, and beyond them were his mother, the widow Lydia Dodge, then "Samuel" (really Lemuel) Dunn and his wife, their sister Emma, plus all the children of the families. William, an "expres" driver age 30, wife Mariah age 21, and Sarah age 6. If her nickname was Hattie she was 25, for her birthday was 11 June 1845 (though her maiden name has not been learned).

September 1941 before a determination was made--then later Hattie was permitted because he had been re-examined by a Government physician. Perhaps he didn't know to do that, or was too sick to get to that doctor-as matter, it was all his fault. It is hard to know how this all came out. Presumably Hattie eventually received a pension, though maybe not as much as if she had been able to carry out some specific instructions.

One of those letters, the name B. L. Dodge appears as the attorney they assigned William C. Dodge. George scribbled on this that the man was no relation, and that he was father of Judge R. K. Dodge but mentioned was another early settler in Caldwell County in 1837 of before, Elisha Dodge. He seems to have had a number of descendants. The wonder whether he came west when the Willits family did, or the Hornmans. Willits has been unable to find any connection with any of those people, and also mentioned the Dodge family by Dr. J. T. Dodge. He seems to have been completely unaware of them.

William could not have been completely disabled, at least in 1911, for he said he was Hamilton City married for a while. He also ran a race between Kingston and Hamilton, perhaps he and his older brother Charles were associated in the latter venture. Though no evidence proving that was furnished.

The information about Billy's marriage(s) is from George, who says there were two marriages. The first was at very brief duration, possibly to a Miss Alice Alexander, though he seemed very sure of that name. He was told by an older cousin, Laura Hattie, that Alice, "being broken for her day," came between Billy and his wife. Presumably a divorce or annulment followed, after which the couple eloped and were married by a preacher at Joe Creek. "Just why there the family did not know."

However, he continued, the family gave that the wife was named Alice, but he called, Alice--generation 10, George's older half brother--was injured in a "tragedy". I presume they mean a railroad accident. Billy, who must have been nearby, quickly placed up the injured child and rushed him to his own home to treat his wounds. After that the family, except for Emma's sister, Emma, the oldest.

Wife was born in the whole Dodge family abandoned the couple. Though others might not have approved, I suspect the women were mostly Alice and John's child. Billy had only one child, Emma. The 1870 census shows his living next door to Charles, whom they call a farmer, and beyond them were his mother, the widow Lizzie Dodge. Then Emma (really Emma) and his wife, their sister Emma. Plus all the children of the families. William, an "exposed" driver age 30, wife Emma age 21, and Sarah age 5. 12 per Nicholas was Hattie age 25, but her birthday was 11 June 1844 (though her maiden name has not been learned).

DODGE FAMILY

Marriage records show that Sarah L. Dodge married G. William Crist 22 December 1881. It is said they had three children, Pearl who married and lived at Blue Springs, Carrie who was injured on the ice at age 18 and died, and Chester--no further information. As stated before, William C. Dodge died 6 September 1901. Hattie died 6 October 1924, age 79.

CERTIFICATE DIVISION.

35-6447.
(Old No. 2-104 a.)

NOTICE OF ISSUE AND FEE.

Department of the Interior,

BUREAU OF PENSIONS,

Washington, D. C.

Apr 30, 1901

Sir

Herewith is transmitted a certificate, No. 93722, for
Inc pension, issued this day in your favor, accompanied
 by a voucher for the amount now due and payable thereon.

You should execute the voucher in accordance with the printed
 instructions, and return it to the pension agent at *Topeka*
 who will then send directly to your address
 check for the pension due.

Your required attorney is *R. L. Dodge*
 of *Kingston, Mo.* whose fee
 is *2* dollars, which is payable by the pension agent.

Very respectfully,

H. C. Brandt

Commissioner.

William C. Dodge
Hamilton
Mo.

BOARD OF REVIEW.

3-2113.
(Old No. 2-104 a.)

Ind. Ch. No. 93722
Wm. C. Dodge *Exr.*
Hattie M. Dodge and family
Capt James H. M. Hanely do
 Department of the Interior,
 BUREAU OF PENSIONS,
 Washington, D. C. *June 31, 1902*

Madam:

The above-entitled claim for increase of pension is rejected on the ground
 that the soldier died without a medical examination made under the pending
 claim, and that there is, therefore, no date from which an increase of pension
 can be allowed under existing law.

Section 4608 1-2, Revised Statutes, provides that, "except in cases of per-
 manent specific disabilities, no increase of pension shall be allowed to commence
 prior to the date of the examining surgeon's certificate establishing the same,
 made under the pending claim for increase."

Very respectfully,

Wm. Hattie M. Dodge
Hamilton

Commissioner.

Adm. Co.
Mo.

RECORD DIVISION.

3-834.
(Old No. 2-104 a.)

ACKNOWLEDGING RECEIPT OF CLAIM.

Department of the Interior,

BUREAU OF PENSIONS,

Washington, D. C.

Oct 23, 1901

Your claim for pension UNDER ACT OF JUNE 27, 1890, has been received,
 recorded, and numbered as below, and will be taken up for action in its regular
 order. When it is reached, you will be fully advised of the evidence necessary
 to complete it. In the meantime, calls for status will only delay its adjudication.

Claim No. *Wit. 99, 7 5, 0.0 0, 7*

Name of Claimant, *H. M. Hattie M. Dodge*

Name of Soldier, *William C. Dodge*

Co. *Adm. Co.* Regiment. *Mo.*

Give full name and number in all communications.

Very respectfully,

H. C. Brandt

Commissioner.

MISSOURI-Continued.

CALDWELL COUNTY.

No. of certifi- cate.	Name of pensioner.	Post-office ad- dress.	Cause for which pensioned.	Monthly rate.	Date of original allowance.
150, 308	Smith, Ben, F.	Black Oak	disease of lungs	\$12 00	Nov., 1878
153, 607	Smith, Thomas J.	do	inj. to left leg	4 00	June, 1878
157, 605	Lane, James J.	do	g. s. w. right hand	8 00	Nov., 1878
209, 581	Phillips, Jacob F.	do	g. s. w. left thigh	4 00	May, 1882
23, 607	Oren, Elijah	do	chro. diarrhoea	4 00	Dec., 1882
69, 623	Ross, Charles R.	do	g. s. w. right leg	18 00	Mar., 1882
204, 212	Gordon, Thomas J.	do	g. s. w. to head & inj. to hand	6 00	Feb., 1882
14, 400	Powell, Cordelia	do	widow	8 00	Mar., 1882
194, 757	McClannan, Elizabeth	do	widow	8 00	Mar., 1882
194, 757	Kern, Martin A.	do	widow	8 00	Mar., 1882
207, 162	Cox, Jacob	do	dep. mother	8 00	Mar., 1882
200, 163	McCormick, Sarah E.	do	g. s. w. right thumb	8 00	Mar., 1882
178, 153	Cobb, Robert S.	do	g. s. w. right thumb	8 00	Mar., 1882
104, 320	Carley, Samuel	do	chro. diarr. & dis. of abd. vis.	18 00	July, 1870
191, 386	Lewis, Robert G.	do	chro. spinalis	8 00	Nov., 1881
194, 385	Dunkin, Henry H.	do	g. s. w. of neck	2 00	Nov., 1881
193, 173	Reeder, Elias	do	widow & c.	12 00	Feb., 1882
184, 271	Trospert, Jennie	do	dis. of eyes	8 00	May, 1879
76, 677	Steele, Livonia	do	widow	8 00	May, 1879
28, 398	Higgins, Charles W.	do	inj. to spine & par. paralysis	31 25	Apr., 1881
180, 485	Holloway, John S.	do	dis. left knee	8 00	Apr., 1881
42, 707	Burger, Philip	do	epilepsy	8 00	Nov., 1878
11, 752	Landis, Elmore	do	widow 1812	8 00	Nov., 1878
203, 802	Ross, John G.	do	g. s. w. right side	8 00	Mar., 1882
198, 012	Davis, Nancy	do	disease of lung	8 00	Mar., 1882
74, 758	Stubblefield, Martha	do	widow 1812	8 00	Dec., 1882
30, 507	Claghton, Lee A.	do	dep. mother	8 00	Nov., 1880
100, 432	Mandy, Rouseau	do	widow 1812	8 00	Nov., 1880
13, 871	McCray, Andrew F.	do	widow	24 00	Sept., 1880
177, 785	Gaddy, Mary Ann	do	loss of left leg	10 00	June, 1877
21, 699	Webster, Elihu S.	do	wd. left thigh	4 00	June, 1877
76, 328	Harper, Joseph W.	do	wd. right forearm	20 00	June, 1877
3, 151	Volkenburgh, Lorenzo D.	do	disease of lungs	12 00	June, 1877
21, 809	Shelby, Wilson	do	wd. right arm & jaw	18 00	May, 1880
167, 484	Baker, Nancy A.	do	disease of eyes	18 00	May, 1880
36, 046	Traylor, William S.	do	disease of eyes	18 00	May, 1880
136, 075	Beeson, Levi	do	g. s. w. left leg	4 00	Nov., 1875
154, 937	Black, John G.	do	dis. of right thorax	4 00	Aug., 1878
14, 466	Allen, Mary Ann	do	widow 1812	12 00	June, 1879
170, 081	Martin, Marion O.	do	abscess left hip	12 00	June, 1880
131, 478	Mastere, Chas. M.	do	g. s. w. left leg	11 25	Jan., 1875
35, 364	McPetersen, Philip	do	dep. mother	8 00	Mar., 1884
36, 012	Pritchard, Susanah	do	injury to abdomen & g. s. w.	8 00	Mar., 1884
223, 258	Neal, William	do	asthma & dis. of lungs	8 00	Dec., 1882
62, 475	Orr, Moses	do	wd. right leg	4 00	Dec., 1882
83, 722	Dodge, William O.	do	wd. right leg	10 00	Nov., 1881
198, 069	Dell, John A.	do	g. s. w. of right hip	4 00	Nov., 1881
164, 962	Hooker, James J.	do	inj. to right eye & diar	12 00	Feb., 1880
124, 874	Gupin, Ebenezer	do	g. s. w. left forearm	4 00	Dec., 1878
189, 223	Howard, Abial G.	do	bronchitis & phtisis	8 00	May, 1881
25, 607	Hunter, John	Kidder	g. s. w. left thigh	2 00	May, 1881
125, 618	Cole, Lydia A.	do	g. s. w. right thigh	8 00	Mar., 1880
76, 429	McKee, Addison	do	dep. mother	17 00	Mar., 1880
187, 118	Plumb, William	do	injury to abdomen	20 00	Apr., 1881
37, 191	Wilson, James	do	g. s. w. right chest	18 00	Apr., 1881
102, 483	Brown, Harburt O.	do	g. s. w. left lung	8 00	July, 1881
151, 925	Benson, Alonzo P.	do	dis. of eyes	18 00	Mar., 1878
180, 851	Butte, Thomas J.	do	wd. right side of face	2 00	Mar., 1878
168, 510	Smith, Mary	do	incised wd. of head	18 00	June, 1881
106, 408	Deak, William P.	do	g. s. w. right arm	1 00	Apr., 1875
134, 457	Hooker, Samuel	do	injury to abdomen	8 00	May, 1881
64, 372	Kantz, George	do	diar. & abd. vis. & lungs	4 00	May, 1881
29, 007	Peddlford, Nancy	do	wd. right hand	8 00	Apr., 1880
71, 655	Harman, Ables	do	widow 1812	5 33 1/3	Sept., 1885
107, 284	Clovenager, Lewis B.	do	inj. head, l. shldr., arm, & c.	6 00	Nov., 1881

MISSOURI-Continued.

CALDWELL COUNTY-Continued.

No. of certifi- cate.	Name of pensioner.	Post-office ad- dress.	Cause for which pensioned.	Monthly rate.	Date of original allowance.
70, 007	Adams, John C.	Kingston	chr. spinal meningitis	\$50 00	Apr., 1871
100, 870	Sinclair, Thomas J.	do	inj. to hand	6 00	Apr., 1882
206, 013	Stewart, William J.	do	chro. diarrhoea	6 00	Nov., 1875
171, 117	Edwards, Phoebe	do	widow	8 00	July, 1883
4, 564	Johnson, George W.	do	chro. bronchitis, diar	6 00	Oct., 1877
215, 907	Cross, John A.	Miramble	inj. to spine & dis. of kidney	18 00	Jan., 1878
148, 961	Hilworth, Isaac B.	do	g. s. w. left thigh, & c.	20 00	May, 1882
181, 254	Smith, Angeline	do	ch. diar. & dis. of lungs	2 00	Dec., 1882
208, 056	Myhar, Isaac S.	do	inj. of left knee	6 00	Apr., 1882
198, 497	Clark, Thomas	do	g. s. w. left hip	6 00	May, 1882
208, 102	Brooks, Martin	do	atrophy & paralysis of legs	4 00	Dec., 1871
10, 305	Strope, George	do	widow 1812	8 00	July, 1879
28, 744	Wilson, Charles	do	wd. right shoulder	4 00	Dec., 1867
48, 534	Royd, William J.	do	widow	8 00	Jan., 1879
14, 918	Arms, Maria	do	disease of lungs	8 00	June, 1867
160, 768	Kelly, Joseph	do	dep. mother	8 00	Apr., 1880
95, 847	Snoad, Ruth	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	Aug., 1869
160, 958	Kelch, John	do	g. s. w. right leg	12 00	Aug., 1869
104, 663	Poehard, John	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	Aug., 1869
138, 330	Blann, Jacob	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	Aug., 1869
75, 806	Hilburn, Nicholas	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	Aug., 1869
127, 054	Eales, John M.	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	Aug., 1869
115, 005	Hawke, John A.	do	g. s. w. right leg	8 00	Aug., 1869

CALDWELL COUNTY.

No. of certifi- cate.	Name of pensioner.	Post-office ad- dress.	Cause for which pensioned.	Monthly rate.	Date of original allowance.
11, 112	Boyd, Jno	Aurvasse	surv. 1812	\$8 00	Jan., 1873
17, 080	Ellen, Elizabeth	do	widow 1812	8 00	Feb., 1879
102, 227	Kinworthy, Ellaha	Barkerville	chro. rheumatism	2 00	July, 1881
127, 022	Oliver, Phoebe	Cedar City	widow	8 00	Apr., 1880
110, 609	McKinney, Wm. B.	do	wd. of r. shoulder	8 00	Oct., 1872
129, 428	Adams, Sarah	do	widow	8 00	May, 1869
4, 019	Hughes, Abasdon	do	wd. of bth. legs below knee	12 00	Dec., 1882
32, 330	Hyten, Stephen H.	Concord	surv. 1812	8 00	Nov., 1882
8, 460	Hook, Cynthia Ann	Fulton	widow 1812	8 00	Apr., 1871
22, 241	Vinson, Betty L.	do	do	8 00	May, 1881
31, 773	Herring, Lucy	do	do	8 00	Aug., 1880
30, 159	Glover, Susan	do	do	8 00	Dec., 1879
151, 027	Harrison, Ann	do	do	8 00	June, 1871
188, 964	Dunlap, Pamela	do	do	8 00	Mar., 1871
148, 217	Plummer, Jno. W.	do	dis. of heart	12 75	Sept., 1877
38, 871	Parker, Wm. A.	do	g. s. w. of left arm	8 00	Dec., 1879
38, 220	Burritt, Elizabeth	do	widow 1812	8 00	Sept., 1881
181, 830	Derry, Milly	do	dep. mother	8 00	Mar., 1876
128, 630	Bradley, Nancy	do	do	8 00	Mar., 1869
128, 470	Butler, Ellen	do	chr. bron. & hypert. heart	12 00	Aug., 1870
122, 075	Reed, Jno. M.	do	g. s. w. of left hip	20 00	Sept., 1881
108, 005	Selbert, Thos.	do	rheumatism	4 00	Mar., 1876
183, 704	Bass, Minor	do	wd. of left thigh	8 00	Jan., 1882
80, 474	Eysfield, Frank B.	do	do	8 00	Jan., 1882
104, 070	Carson, Julia A.	do	wd. near spine	18 00	Jan., 1882
138, 020	Wings, Sarah	do	wd. l. scapula by cannon ball	8 00	Jan., 1882
71, 024	Craigh, Francis A.	do	wd. of left shoulder	8 00	Jan., 1882
17, 063	Chatham, Ewd. L.	do	wd. of left shoulder	8 00	Jan., 1882
3, 234	Gillmore, Wm.	do	wd. of left shoulder	8 00	Jan., 1882
91, 693	Holt, Harrison	do	wd. of left shoulder	8 00	Jan., 1882
77, 773	Dunkelberger, Edward	Guthrie	dis. of eyes	8 00	Feb., 1867
111, 043	Bradley, Margaret E.	Ham's Prairie	widow	8 00	Apr., 1868
151, 007	Duncan, Eliza	Holt's Summit	dis. of lungs	8 00	Aug., 1871
83, 399	McSchooler, Levi	do	surv. 1812	12 00	Aug., 1882
197, 088	Palmer, Joel	do	surv. 1812	8 00	Mar., 1873
20, 446	Miller, Mary K.	do	widow 1819	8 00	Nov., 1871
37, 777	Adcock, Joel J.	do	wd. of r. forearm	8 00	Mar., 1878
7, 935	Craig, Andrew J.	do	widow 1812	8 00	Apr., 1880
151, 772	Gray, Martha C.	do	surv. 1812	8 00	July, 1878
20, 181	Davis, James	do	do	8 00	July, 1878
23, 402	Davis, James	do	do	8 00	July, 1878

Emma Adelia Dodge⁸ the youngest child of Rev. Dwight and Lydia (Pearce) Dodge was born 9 March 1841 in Summerhill, Cayuga Co., New York. Her favorite childhood playmate was brother Billy, whom she tried the best she could to keep up with. You've already read about the grapevine incident. Emma was definitely a young tomboy, also a skillful horsewoman. She loved horses and grew up in the saddle--sidesaddle, that is.

Back in the 1860's women and girls rode sidesaddle because of their long skirts and dresses. There were still occasions when hoop skirts were worn, especially for extra dressup affairs, though the hoops were taken off for riding horses. Many stories have been repeated, with awe, about Emma galloping her horse, riding sidesaddle, which would certainly require a great more skill than doing it in a regular saddle. Of course her parents did not approve of such antics but that does not seem to have stopped her. It appears she did not always confide in her elders, but do girls nowadays? Apparently she did all right in school, and took direction very well in one way--she was an exquisite seamstress. Her father being a minister undoubtedly broadened her social contacts.

Emma seems to have attracted several beaux growing up, but instead of telling her parents about all of them, she gigglingly confided in her girlfriends. People in Kingston loved to socialize. In the very early days many of the homes were of logs, with blankets or curtains often used instead of at least some of the walls. Such a custom certainly seems quaint nowadays, but for the early settlers, in the days before central heating, it was a very practical solution. Children peeking behind curtains would have been considered a grave social error, resulting in good spankings.

On one occasion a boy who had a crush on Emma was showing off, trying to get her attention. That boy obviously was not her choice of the moment. Encouraged by her girlfriends, she did her best to ignore him, so he became even more boisterous and fell behind one of the curtains. Emma was pretty embarrassed by the incident and her brothers teased her. She and her friends thought he was "just awful" for doing that, and pretty dumb besides.

1858
Though there was really no scarcity of young men in the area, when Emma was about 18 she became attracted to an older widower in his late 30's, over twice her age, who joined her father's congregation in 1958, Dr. Lemuel Dunn.

Dwight and Lydia did not really know how to handle the situation. They could find no fault with the idealistic Dr. Dunn's character. Everyone knew he was a fine man, and brilliant besides. But they really had hoped she would find a nice young man her own age. Though they did not not encourage the relationship, they knew better than to forbid it, for Emma was a strong-minded girl.

DODGE FAMILY

Lemuel's first wife had been Sarah McCoy, born 7 September 1820, daughter of the late Rev. Rice McCoy, a pioneer Baptist preacher and his wife, Mahala (Pound) McCoy. Her father died in 1836. Lemuel had come to Washington County, Indiana, with his mother and some of his siblings a few years after the death of his father in rural Harrodsburg, Kentucky, in 1828. He and Sarah were married there on 14 November 1839. Both of them were 19 years old, a common age to get married in those years. Probably their oldest daughter, ~~Mahala~~ Cynthia, was born there before they moved to Ray County, Missouri, in 1841 where his older brother George, a young attorney, lived.

They emigrated to Missouri with the intention of owning a farm, but Lemuel went through a period of failing health and limited endurance which led him to seek medical treatment and also the study of medicine. Becoming a doctor in those years was a great deal simpler than it is today. After having completed an academic education--which he had already done in Kentucky--one studied medical textbooks for a while and convinced a competent practicing physician of one's basic medical knowledge, then entered into an apprenticeship program working in a doctor's office under his direct tutelage. When you learned enough you graduated. Writer does not know whom he studied under, but it was evidently in Grundy and Ray Counties, Missouri, likely in Richmond.

Upon graduation he moved to the area that became Kingston and hung out his shingle announcing his new medical practice. He had a special interest in the new town--his brother, Judge George Washington Dunn and two other men became responsible for establishing Kingston as the county seat, and even ordered the town laid out, according to the Caldwell County history, and as mentioned on a previous page.

The Dodges came from New York State to that same vicinity in that same year, 1846, and doubtless knew each other well. Dr. Dunn, who had to get around quite a bit to make housecalls, probably patronized Rev. Dwight Dodge's blacksmith business for household necessities and buggy parts, and so on while if someone was bad sick in the Dodge household the good doctor probably treated that person. Undoubtedly Dodge and Dunn children attended the same school. Both families were well liked and respected in the community.

The first courthouse, according to reports, was not much to look at, but at least it was better than the old school building they had used at Far West. The courthouse, built around 1843 according to a book about old courthouses, was $1\frac{1}{2}$ stories high, constructed of logs, and stood on the south side of Main Street opposite the City Square, which may have been a sort of village green at first. It was replaced in either 1847 or 1854 (both dates are claimed by different sources) by a nicer two-story brick building on the public square facing south. It was used by civic as well as church groups for all kinds of meetings including Sunday services, not just for court.

DODGE FAMILY

There were no railroads west of the Mississippi yet. Dr. Dunn was anxious for his area to be one of the first served, so he made stump speeches, organized public meetings, and gathered signatures for a petition to the legislature to allow contact with the railroad companies about lines and depots in Caldwell County, enabling local farmers to market their surplus products. That activity led to his election in 1850 as Representative to the State Legislature on the Whig ticket, as the person best suited to carry out those goals. While in office he got in touch with the counties along the desired routes and persuaded them to grant alternate sections requested by the railroads for right-of-ways. Another bill he sponsored led the State of Missouri to apportion overflowed and wetlands to the various counties for their own use.

In 1852, having accomplished his goals in such a short time, he ran for the office of Clerk of Caldwell County Courts, a position he preferred because it required less traveling. Two years later he ran for Clerk of Circuit Courts as well, successfully holding down both jobs simultaneously. His office was in the brick courthouse described on the previous page. All of the courts and county offices were on the ground floor, the second floor being unfinished and presumably available for other uses.

Lemuel, his first wife Sarah McCoy Dunn and their eight children seem to have had a happy family life. The family was popular in the Kingston area. But on 24 September 1858 Sarah passed away, leaving a large, grieving family. Writer does not know this as a fact, but it is possible Sarah had sometimes attended Rev. Dwight Dodge's Christian Church services. He and her late father, Baptist missionary Rev. Rice McCoy would have had very similar religious views. She undoubtedly had fond memories of her father and anything that reminded her of him would have appealed to her. Most likely the services were in the courthouse, since they had not yet bought their church building. In good weather they also held revival or "camp meetings" just as her father had done.

Though Lemuel was raised a Presbyterian, he had not officially joined any church as an adult, though he became a Master Mason at the lodge in Mirable in 1857. (Later he was member and Past Master of Kingston Lodge No. 118, A.F. & A.M.) Seeking solace in religion after Sarah's death may have motivated Lemuel to attend services. In 1859 he officially joined the Christian Church.

Soon thereafter he began to notice the Reverend's perky and attractive daughter. Before long young Emma was "smitten." While it was true Lemuel had a big family with at least one daughter a little older than herself, he still cut a dashing figure at age 39. He was tall, dark and muscular (six feet tall, 200 lbs) with warm, friendly brown eyes and the soft accent of a Kentucky gentleman. No matter that there had never been any Southerners in the family up to then--that made him all the more fascinating.

DODGE FAMILY

106

DODGE FAMILY

On 31 January 1860 Emma Adelia Dodge married Lemuel Dunn, Jr., born 2 January 1820 in rural Harrodsburg, Mercer Co., Kentucky the 5th of seven children. His father was the late Major Lemuel Dunn, Sr., a fuller and farmer by trade, who went there in 1806 from Southwest Virginia. Major Dunn's father was Michael Dunn, "of Irish parentage but a native of Virginia, and a noble defender of the American Colonies during the Revolution." Lemuel's mother was Sarah (Read) Campbell, daughter of John Campbell, "also of Irish extraction and also a soldier in the Revolutionary War."

(In much later years, my Grandma, Mary Lydia (Dunn) White used to say, laughingly to us kids, "My Grandma was a Camel!")

The next family story is about an incident that occurred to Dwight and Lydia right after their youngest child, Emma, got married. In those days, because of the long time it took to travel between towns with poor roads and all, it was the custom to stay overnight with friends along the way. People in rural areas, especially, were inclined to feel isolated, happy for a break in the monotony, and anxious to hear all the news.

Dwight was often begged to go on preaching trips to isolated locations where there were no churches close, or at least none of that faith. They had occasion to make such a trip, and were especially eager to see a family of dear friends they were lonesome for, and to talk about old times. But when they got there, the friends were unexpectedly rather cool toward them. They were perplexed but started making small talk in an effort to break the ice. When the subject of Emma's marriage came up, they remarked that they guessed Lemuel, being older, would be very good to her. The friends snapped back, "Well, don't you think our son would have been good to her?" They were amazed and blurted out, "Why, we didn't even know he was interested!" After that the friends were cordial, just as before.

So much for Emma's claim that she would probably be an old maid if she didn't marry Lemuel. Obviously she didn't tell her parents everything.

We can only wonder what the first few years of Emma and Lemuel's marriage were like. It was told that they were active socially and politically. They were especially enthralled over attending a rally at St. Joseph to hear President Abraham Lincoln speak. They were strong Lincoln supporters, and very impressed. It would be especially interesting to know how she fit into that family composed of so many step-children, most of whom were not far from her own age. ~~None of them were in a hurry to get married, either, unless Cynthia married earlier than writer has discovered.~~ The first to marry was Kate, five years later. Though Emma was technically the lady of the house, she certainly was in no position to tell other young adults what to do. We are told, however, that there was harmony in that house, so they must have worked it out.

DODGE FAMILY

Culturally Emma and Lemuel and the others reflected their period in history. They were very prim and proper Victorians, with all the high-flown ideas and prudery of that era. I don't know if the Dodges behaved in that same way, but expect they did. While growing up, I used to think elderly members of my family got their exaggerated moralistic speech and behavior from the Dodge's Puritan or Pilgrim background, especially because Great-Great Grandpa Dwight Dodge was a minister. Now that I know more about history, I know better than to blame it on the Pilgrims--who were moralistic, it is true, but their speech as revealed in unexpurgated form in old court documents and so on was often so explicit as to be considered almost pornographic, actually banned from some libraries years ago. They unblushingly said exactly what they meant! No, the Victorians were simply products of their time, not an earlier time. Possibly the Dodges, and certainly the Dunns, were prim and proper Victorians.

Grandma, Mary Lydia (Dunn) White, often said she did not allow any rough talk, and certainly not swearing, in her house. She cited her father as a shining example. "Pa only swore once in his life, when he got so excited and angry he could not stop himself, and said 'Darn it!'"

Writer's sister and her husband, Allan and Billie Gene (Hansen) Pringle, as well as myself, have been searching for many years for more data on the early Dunns or Campbells. We are not at all satisfied with the amount learned, but we have discovered enough to know that Major Lemuel and Sarah Campbell Dunn set very high standards for themselves and their seven children, of whom George was third and Lemuel, Jr. fifth.

The parents were Presbyterians. The American Presbyterian Church, with help from people in Edinburgh, Scotland, stressed literacy from the very beginning, and tried to provide schools or teachers for their people even in the mountain valleys, because they wanted them to read the Bible to save their souls. That church founded Princeton in 1745. Later they sponsored Transylvania University in Kentucky where George got his law degree, though he had to clerk at a store in Nicholasville and also work as a tutor to get college money.

Major Dunn died in 1828 when Lemuel was only eight. His will was that of a prosperous but not rich man. Nevertheless, his inventory included a desk and 50 books! For those days that's a lot of books. In no way would a family like that be satisfied with uneducated sons, even though his premature death limited the available funds. The children received primary educations in their immediate neighborhood, then were sent to Cane Run Academy in Mercer County to finish their secondary education.

DODGE FAMILY

It appears that the Kentucky family probably participated in religious revivals and camp meetings so popular in their area in the early 1800's. Some of the Dunn's idealism may have been fostered in those surroundings. Perhaps the Campbells were even more involved in revivals than the Dunns. Both families called themselves "Irish" but it is rather obvious they were descended from Scots who settled in Ireland about the same time the Dodge's settled in America. Having lived there about a century or so, they considered themselves Irish. Campbell is certainly a Scotch name, though there were ancient Dunns in England and Ireland as well as Scotland, who all settled in Ulster.

As for the Major and Sarah, it is hard to know whether they, also acted like Victorians. I would guess they were born a little soon for that but had overly idealistic ideas that fostered their sons' way of thinking. Whatever the case, as you will see, Lemuel was too idealistic, civic-minded and trusting for the good of his widow and younger children.

Getting back to Lemuel, Jr. and Emma, they had been married only a little over two months--on 19 April 1860, to be exact--when a fire consumed the Courthouse at Kingston and almost all of the Court and County records he had cared for so carefully. He was crestfallen by the awful news. Worse yet, the authorities were pretty sure arsonists had set the blaze but they could not prove it, so the crime went unpunished.

In 1860, for the county's third courthouse \$20,000 was appropriated for a new building to be completed by September 1861. It seems parts were utilized before the whole was completed. It was a temple-style building, "a large commodious two-story brick...with an old colonial portico in front...much admired for its antique and quaint architecture." It was built in much the same style as the Lafayette Co. Courthouse in Lexington and the Ray Co. Courthouse in Richmond (where Judge G. W. Dunn was on the bench) and constructed by the same builder. Photocopy of a drawing of that building appears on one of these pages. (PS--on 28 November 1896, several years after Lemuel's death, his records were again destroyed when this courthouse, also, was burned. The present courthouse was then constructed.)

When the Whig party disbanded, Great Grandpa became a Republican in spite of the fact that his brother was a Democrat. (Before I forget to mention it, each of them named a son for the other.) Lemuel and Emma admired Republican President Abraham Lincoln. They attended a rally in St. Joseph, Missouri, and heard him speak. That was a big occasion in their lives. Emma, an excellent seamstress, stitched a small flag to take to the rally. Mamma, Ada (White) Yoakum, still has the flag, which she keeps stored in a box, but it is now starting to crumble with age. When I was little I used to stare at it on those rare occasions when it was brought out. The stitching is the tiniest and most evenly

DODGE FAMILY

spaced I ever saw. It is so beautiful, I doubt that a microscope would reveal a flaw. This modern age has some marvellous things, but the time of needlework like that is long past. The age of machinery has spoiled us. Girls started to practice their needlework then practically in the cradle. The best examples were exquisite as a lovely painting. Her work was a joy to behold. I have seen other things she sewed, as well. The family said her sewing was as rapid as it was beautiful. Mamma used to watch her sew.

Emma and Lemuel did have a happy marriage. She enjoyed all the social activity and admired her handsome husband who not only was intelligent but always studying his books. While he was Clerk of Courts he made up his mind that eventually he wanted to become a lawyer.

Back then it evidently took longer to become a lawyer than a medical doctor--or it did in Lemuel's case. The way one became a physician back then was to first study one's books a while to acquire a theoretical background, and then go to work as an apprentice to some well established, experienced physician for a while. In spite of the ease with which he accomplished that, he must have had pretty good luck caring for patients. The reason I'm sure of that is that so many elderly people told me so around Kingston and at the church, who would just have said nothing had it been otherwise. Of course, nobody knew anything about germs in those days. That knowledge came after his death. The Dunns, nevertheless were fastidious people, so maybe keeping things so clean helped the healing.

Before this writer retired, I used to work in the court system in a large city. I've known a good many judges quite well. All of them, and every judge I ever heard of, was a well-respected lawyer first. Evidently in Civil War times that was not a requirement, for in 1862 Great Grandpa Dunn was elected Probate Judge on the Republican ticket, and served very successfully. He did have a pretty good background, however, for he had studied law for several years, always had his statute books with him for consultation, and it may also be supposed his previous experience as Clerk of Courts stood him in good stead.

In 1864 the couple's oldest son, Dwight Dunn, named for Emma's father, was born. Can you imagine the excitement in that home, with all the doting young aunts and uncles on hand. Do you think the little fellow was spoiled at first? I'm not sure whether it happened before or after the baby came, but during the Civil War Great Grandpa became a Curator of the University of Missouri, but he resigned in about a year, preferring to stay in Kingston and continue his studies to become an attorney. Being past the age when it was expected of him, he did not serve in the Civil War. I do not know if Rice, born in 1842, served or not. In 1865 Kate was married to veteran Richard Sackman.

*Rice did serve -
1st unit.*

DODGE FAMILY

Name of Compiler Norma Zaniewski
 Address 8924 W Plainfield
 City, State Greenfield WI 53228
 Date September 1993

FOUR GENERATION ANCESTOR CHART
 The numbers assigned to each person on this chart represent the standard numbering system starting with this compiler as #1 **Chart No. 1**

b. Date of Birth
 p.b. Place of Birth
 m. Date of Marriage
 p.m. Place of Marriage
 d. Date of Death
 p.d. Place of Death

(60) Levi Dodge

b. 22 June 1772 (Father of No. 30)
 p.b. Sutton, Worcester Co MA
 m. 15 Mar 1796
 p.m. Sturbridge, Worcester Co MA
 d. 8 Dec 1835
 p.d. Croyden, Cheshire, NH

(30) (Rev.) Dwight Dodge

b. 28 May 1798 (Father of No. 15)
 p.b. Sturbridge, Worcester Co MA
 m. 29 Dec 1830
 p.m. Sempronius, Cayuga Co NY
 d. 23 Aug 1869
 p.d. Kingston, Caldwell Co MO

(15) Reziab Ellis

b. 15 Feb 1780 (Mother of No. 30)
 p.b. Sturbridge, Worcester Co, MA
 d. 4 Feb 1845
 p.d. Palmer, Hampden Co, MA

(15) Emma Adelia Dodge

b. 9 Mar 1841
 p.b. Summerhill, Cayuga Co NY
 m. 31 Jan 1860
 p.m. Kingston, Caldwell, MO
 *d. 31 Jan 1932
 p.d. Kingston

* her 2nd wedding anniv.

(62) James Pearce

b. 15 Aug 1755 (Father of No. 31)
 p.b. Little Compton, Newport Co RI
 m. 3 July 1783
 p.m. Little Compton
 d. 22 July 1820
 p.d. Schoharie? NY

(31) Lydia Woodman Pearce

b. 6 Oct 1802 (Mother of No. 15)
 p.b. Schoharie, Schoharie, NY
 d. 4 Aug 1881
 p.d. Kingston, Caldwell, MO

(63) Phebe Wood

b. 9 Mar 1763 (Mother of No. 31)
 p.b. Little Compton, Newport Co, NY
 d. 25 June 1842
 p.d. Sempronius, Cayuga Co NY

Dr. (Judge) Lemuel Dunn, Jr.

b. 2 June 1820 (Spouse of No. 15)
 p.b. Harrodsburg, Mercer Co, Ky
 d. 7 Kingston, Caldwell MO
 p.d. 1883

(120) Richard Dodge V

b. Sep 1751 (Father of No. 120)
 p.b.
 m. 19 July 1770
 p.m.
 d. 25 Dec 1833
 p.d. Croyden, Cheshire NH (near Sullivan)

(121) Lois Towne

b. 30 Sep 1752 (Mother of No. 120)
 p.b.
 d. 9 Sep 1812
 p.d. Croyden, Cheshire, NH

(122) Jedediah Ellis

b. 9 July 1751 (Father of No. 122)
 p.b.
 m. 8 Apr 1774
 p.m.
 d. 14 June 1804
 p.d. Sturbridge

(123) Martha Freeman

b. 14 Sep 1757 (Mother of No. 123)
 p.b.
 d. 9 May 1804
 p.d. Sturbridge

(124) Giles Pearce

b. 23 Mar 1722 (Father of No. 62)
 p.b.
 m. 23 Aug 1744
 p.m.
 d. July 1792
 p.d. Little Compton

(125) Mercy Rouse (widow Sreen)

b. 13 Jan 1727 (Mother of No. 62)
 p.b.
 d. 17
 p.d. Little Compton?

(126) George Wood

b. 2 Nov 1730 (Father of No. 126)
 p.b.
 m. 10 Feb 1762
 p.m.
 d. June 1820
 p.d. Little Compton

(127) Desire Gray

b. 7 July 1733 (Mother of No. 127)
 p.b.
 d. Mar 1822
 p.d. Little Compton

Chart No. 2

9
c
B
2
W
1
N

480 Richard DODGE III
12 Jul 1670
Wenham, Essex, MA Bay
16 Nov 1694
Ipswich, Essex, MA
7 Apr 1739
Ipswich, Essex, MA

240 Richard DODGE IV
? 11 Nov 1710
Hamlet Parish Ipswich, Essex MA
27 Nov 1736
Hamlet Parish (now Hamilton)
17 Oct 1776
Sutton, Worcester, MA

481 Martha LOW
10 Mar 1669
Ipswich, Essex, MA Ba
Dec 1737
Ipswich, Essex, MA

120 Richard DODGE V
Sep 1751 (per gravestone)
Hamlet Parish, Essex, MA
19 Jul 1770
Sutton, Worcester, MA
25 Dec 1833
Croydon, Cheshire, NH
(now Sullivan Co)

482 Charles TUTTLE
31 Mar 1679
Ipswich, Essex, MA Ba
22 Mar 1702/3
Ipswich, Essex, NA
6 Oct 1752
Ipswich, Essex, MA

241 Sarah TUTTLE
5 Aug 1716
Ipswich, Essex, MA
7 Feb 1796
Sutton, Worcester, MA

483 Mary BURNHAM
25 May 1678
Ipswich-Chebacco, Ess
17
Ipswich?

Chart No. 2

120 Richard DODGE V Sep 1751 (per gravestone) Hamlet Parish, Essex, MA 19 Jul 1770 Sutton, Worcester, MA 25 Dec 1833 Croydon, Cheshire, NH (now Sullivan Co)	240 Richard DODGE IV ? 11 Nov 1710 Hamlet Parish Ipswich, Essex MA 27 Nov 1736 Hamlet Parish (now Hamilton) 17 Oct 1776 Sutton, Worcester, MA	480 Richard DODGE III 12 Jul 1670 Wenham, Essex, MA Bay Col 16 Nov 1694 Ipswich, Essex, MA 7 Apr 1739 Ipswich, Essex, MA	960 Richard DODGE II ca 1643 Beverly-Wenham MA Bay Colony 23 Feb 1667/8 Wenham 13 Apr 1705 North Beverly, Essex, MA	481 Martha LOW 10 Mar 1669 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col Dec 1737 Ipswich, Essex, MA	962 (Deacon) Thomas LOW ca 1631 (occup-"malster") Suffolk? England 4 Jul 1660 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col. 12 Apr 1712 Ipswich, Essex, MA	963 Martha BOREMAN (Boardman) 1641 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony 22 Apr 1720 Ipswich, Essex, MA	964 Simon TUTTLE 10 Jan 1630/1 St. Albans, Herts., England 1663 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony Jan 1692 Ipswich, Essex, MA	482 Charles TUTTLE 31 Mar 1679 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col 22 Mar 1702/3 Ipswich, Essex, MA 6 Oct 1752 Ipswich, Essex, MA	241 Sarah TUTTLE 5 Aug 1716 Ipswich, Essex, MA 7 Feb 1796 Sutton, Worcester, MA	966 James BURNHAM ca 1650/1 Ipswich-Chebacco, MA Bay Col ca 1676 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col 30 Jun 1729 Ipswich, Essex, MA	483 Mary BURNHAM 25 May 1678 Ipswich-Chebacco, Essex, MA 17 Ipswich?	967 Mary ?COGSWELL? ca 1662 Ipswich? Nov 1738 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1638* 1920 Richard DODGE I Salem ca 1602 St. Badaux, Devonshire ca 1627 (lived-Helgar Manor East Coker, Somersetshire 15 Jun 1691 Beverly, Essex, MA	1921 Edith ? ca 1603 SW England 27 Jan 1677/8 Beverly, Essex MA	1635*Hercules Watertown 1922 William EATON ca 1607 Staple, Kent, England 28 Jan 1727/8 St. John's, Thanet, Kent 13 May 1673 Reading, Middlesex, MA	1923 Martha JENKINS 23 Nov 1605 Thanet, Kent, Eng. 14 Nov 1680 Reading, MDX. MA	1924 Thomas LOWE before 1636* ca 1605 Ipswich Boxford, Suffolk, Eng. 22 Jun 1630 Polsted Hall, Suffolk 8 Sep 1677 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1925 Margaret TODD ca 1597 Polstead, Suffolk, Eng. ca 1647 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1926 Thomas BOREMAN 1635* Oct 1601 (a "cooper") Ipswich Claydon, Oxon., Eng(near Banbury) 17 Aug 1630 St. Helens Bishopgate, London May 1673 Ipswich MA	1927 Margaret OFFIN (aka Offing) ca 1605 St. Helen's Bishopgate parish, London 25 Nov 1679 ? Ipswich	1928 John TUTTLE 1635*Flanter" 4 Jun 1596 Ipswich Holcut, Hertfordshire, England ? 24 Nov 1627 St. Albans, Herts., Eng 30 Dec 1656 Carrickfergus, Antrim, N.Ireland.	1929 Joan ANTROBUS 25 Jun 1592 St. Albans, Herts, Eng. ca 1660 Carrickfergus	1930 John COGSWELL 1635*Angel Gabriel ca 1592 shipwreck Maine Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, Eng. 10 Sep 1615-St. Mary's Chapel Westbury under the Plains, Wilts 29 Nov 1669 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1931 Elizabeth THOMPSON ca 1595 -Braintree or Westbury under the Plains, Wilts. 2 Jun 1646 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1932 (Lt.) Thomas BURNHAM 1635*Angel Gabriel" ca 1620 shipwr. Narraganset & Pequot Wars ca 1620 Norwich, Norfolk, England ca 1645 Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA 19 May 1694 Ipswich Chebacco	1933 Marie LAWRENCE bp 10 Apr 1625 (posthumous) St. Albans, Hertfordshire, Eng. 27 Mar 1705 Ipswich MA	1934 COGSWELL?	3840 John DODGE d. Summer 1635 Middlechinnock 3841 Margery b. 15 Halstocke, Devonshire	3844 ?Peter EATON 3845 ?Elizabeth PATTERSON	3846 Edward JENKINS ca 1568 Coldred, Kent 21 Jul 1592 Wingham, Kent bur 17 Aug 1634 Thanet 3847 Mary PHILLIPS ca 1556 Wingham, Kent after 1624 Thanet? Kent	3848 Said to be Capt. John LOWE master of ship "Ambrose" & Vice- Admiral of Gov. Winthrop's Fleet in 1630--unconfirmed (for different theory see NER 52:67) 3849 ditto	3850 Ananias TOD of Polstead 3851 Bridget Hall, Suffolk	3852 Thomas BOREMAN ca 1570 Claydon 2 Feb 1595/6 Claydon bur 9 Mar 1627/8 Claydon 3853 Elizabeth CARTER ca 1575 Claydon, Oxfordshire bur. 11 May 1631, Claydon	3854 3855	3856 Symon TOOTILL fought Spanish Armada ca 1560 Ringstead NHants m ca 1592 d 15 Jun 1630 Ringstead, Northampton 3857 Isabel WELLS-"Flanter" ca 1565 Ringstead ca 1636 ?New Haven Colony(CT)	3858 Walter ANTROBUS warden-shoemaker's union b. Herts. or Cheshire m ca 1586/7 d 1614 St. Albans 3859 Joan ARNOLD-1635*Flanter" b ca 1570 d after 1635-Ipswich	3860 Edward COGSWELL b ca 1565 d 1616 Westbury Leigh 3861 Alice d 1616 Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire	3862 (Rev) William THOMPSON vicar-All Saints Church-Westbury b 15-- m 15--prob. Braintree d 1625 Westbury, Wiltshire, Eng. 3863 Phyllis b ?Braintree d 19 Jul 1698 Westb.	3864 Robert BURNHAM m 14 Oct 1606 Norwich	3865 Mary ANDREWS of Norwich, Norfolk 7730 Daniel ANDREWS 7731 Mary FEABOD.	3866 Sir Thomas LAWRENCE 2 Feb 1588/9 St Albans 23 Oct 1609-Abbey Church 20 Mar 1624 St Albans, Herts 3867 Joan ANTROBUS 1635*Flanter 1592-ca 1660 (same as 1929 above)	3868 3869	3870
---	--	---	--	--	---	---	---	---	--	---	---	---	---	--	---	--	---	--	--	---	---	---	--	--	---	---	-----------------------	---	--	--	---	--	---	----------------------	---	--	---	--	--	--	--	----------------------	-------------

60 Richard DODGE II ca 1643 Beverly-Wenham MA Bay-Colony 3 Feb 1667/8 Wenham 3 Apr 1705 North Beverly, Essex, MA	1638* 1920 Richard DODGE I Salem ca 1602 St. Badaux, Devonshire ca 1627 (lived-Helgar Manor East Coker, Somersetshire 15 Jun 1691 Beverly, Essex, MA 1921 Edith ? ca 1603 SW England 27 Jan 1677/8 Beverly, Essex MA	3840 John DODGE d. Summer 1635 Middlechinnock 3841 Margery b. 15 Halastocke, Devonshire
Col 61 Mary EATON Apr 1643 Watertown, Middlesex, MA Bay 8 Nov 1716 North Beverly, Essex, MA	1635* "Hercules" 1922 William EATON Watertown ca 1607 Staple, Kent, England 28 Jan 1727/8 St. John's, Thanet, Kent 13 May 1673 Reading, Middlesex, MA 1923 Martha JENKINS 23 Nov 1605 Thanet, Kent, Eng. 14 Nov 1680 Reading, MDX, MA	3844 ?Peter EATON 3845 ?Elizabeth PATTERSON 3846 Edward JENKINS ca 1568 Coldred, Kent 21 Jul 1592 Wingham, Kent bur 17 Aug 1634 Thanet 3847 Mary PHILLIPS ca 1556 Wingham, Kent after 1624 Thanet? Kent
962 (Deacon) Thomas LOW ca 1631 (occup-"malster") Suffolk? England 4 Jul 1660 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col. 12 Apr 1712 Ipswich, Essex, MA	before 1636* 1924 Thomas LOWE Ipswich ca 1605 Boxford, Suffolk, Eng. 22 Jun 1630 Polstead Hall, Suffolk 8 Sep 1677 Ipswich, Essex, MA 1925 Margaret TODD ca 1597 Polstead, Suffolk, Eng. ca 1647 Ipswich, Essex, MA	3848 Said to be Capt. John LOWE master of ship "Ambrose" & Vice- Admiral of Gov. Winthrop's Fleet in 1630--unconfirmed (for different theory see NER 52167) 3849 ditto 3850 Ananias TODD of Polstead 3851 Bridget Hall, Suffolk
963 Martha BOREMAN (Boardman) 1641 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony 22 Apr 1720 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1635* 1926 Thomas BOREMAN Ipswich Oct 1601 (a "cooper") Claydon, Oxon., Eng (near Banbury) 17 Aug 1630 St. Helens Bishopgate, London May 1673 Ipswich MA 1927 Margaret OFFIN (aka Offing) ca 1605 St. Helen's Bishopgate parish, London 25 Nov 1679 ? Ipswich	3852 Thomas BOREMAN ca 1570 Claydon 2 Feb 1595/6 Claydon bur 9 Mar 1627/8 Claydon 3853 Elizabeth CARTER ca 1575 Claydon, Oxfordshire bur. 11 May 1631, Claydon 3854 3855
964 Simon TUTTLE 10 Jan 1630/1 St. Albans, Herts., England 1663 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony Jan 1692 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1635* "Flanter" 1928 John TUTTLE Ipswich 4 Jun 1596 Holcut, Hertfordshire, England ? 24 Nov 1627 St. Albans, Herts., Eng 30 Dec 1656 Carrickfergus, Antrim, N. Ireland 1929 Joan ANTROBUS 25 Jun 1592 St. Albans, Herts, Eng. ca 1660 Carrickfergus	3856 Symon TOOTILL fought Spanish Armada ca 1560 Ringstead Mhants m ca 1592 d 15 Jun 1630 Ringstead, Northampton 3857 Isabel WELLS-"Flanter" ca 1565 Ringstead ca 1636 ?New Haven, Colony(CT) 3858 Walter ANTROBUS warden-shoemaker's union b. Herts. or Cheshire m ca 1586/7 d 1614 St. Albans 3859 Joan ARNOLD-1635* "Planter" b ca 1570 d after 1635-Ipswich
965 Sarah COGSWELL ca 1645 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony 24 Jan 1731/2 (not 1673) Ipswich, Essex, MA	1635* "Angel Gabriel" 1930 John COGSWELL shipwreck Maine ca 1592 Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, Eng. 10 Sep 1615-St. Mary's Chapel Westbury under the Plains, Wilts 29 Nov 1669 Ipswich, Essex, MA 1931 Elizabeth THOMPSON ca 1595 -Braintree or Westbury under the Plains, Wilts. 2 Jun 1646 Ipswich, Essex, MA	3860 Edward COGSWELL b ca 1565 d 1616 Westbury Leigh 3861 Alice d 1616 Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire 3862 (Rev) William THOMPSON vicar-All Saints Church-Westbury b 15-- m 15--prob. Braintree d 1625 Westbury, Wiltshire, Eng. 3863 Phyllis b ?Braintree d 19 Jul 1698 Westb.
966 James BURNHAM ca 1650/1 Ipswich-Chebacco, MA Bay Col ca 1676 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col 30 Jun 1729 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1635* "Angel Gabriel" 1932 (Lt.) Thomas BURNHAM shipwr. Narraganset & Pequod Wars ca 1620 Norwich, Norfolk, England ca 1645 Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA 19 May 1694 Ipswich Chebacco 1933 Marie LAWRENCE bp 10 Apr 1625 (posthumous) St. Albans, Hertfordshire, Eng. 27 Mar 1705 Ipswich MA	3864 Robert BURNHAM m 14 Oct 1606 Norwich 3865 Mary ANDREWS of Norwich, Norfolk 7730 Daniel ANDREWS 7731 Mary FEABOD 3866 Sir Thomas LAWRENCE 2 Feb 1588/9 St Albans 23 Oct 1609-Abbey Church 20 Mar 1624 St Albans, Herts 3867 Joan ANTROBUS 1635* "Flanter" 1592-ca 1660 (same as 1929 above)
967 Mary ?COGSWELL? ca 1662 Ipswich? Nov 1738 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1934 COGSWELL?	3868 3869

Chart No. 3

484 John TOWNE
20 Feb 1678
Topsfield, Essex,
Jan 1708
Danvers, Essex, M
3 Mar 1714
Danvers?

242 John TOWNE
23 Feb 1709
Danvers, Essex, MA
2 Apr 1729
Danvers?
1754
Sutton, Worcester, MA

485 Elizabeth REA
13 Aug 1687
Salem, Essex, MA
14 Dec 1711
Danvers? Essex, MA

121 Lois TOWNE
30 Sep 1752
Sutton, Worcester, MA
9 Sep 1812
Croydon, Cheshire, NH

486 William TOWNE
13 Mar 1659
Topsfield, Essex, M
22 Aug 1694
Topsfield, Essex, M
30 Jan(1750?) (age

243 Mercy TOWNE
19 Sep 1709
Topsfield, Essex, MA
17
Sutton, Worcester, MA

487 Margaret WILKINS
(widow John Willard,
executed for witch
ca 1667
Salem, Essex, Mass
5 Nov 1751
Topsfield, Essex, MA

60 Richard DODGE II ca 1643 Beverly-Wenham MA Bay Colony 3 Feb 1667/8 Wenham 3 Apr 1705 North Beverly, Essex, MA	1638* 1920 Richard DODGE I Salem ca 1602 St. Badesaux, Devonshire ca 1627 (lived-Helgar Manor East Coker, Somersetshire 15 Jun 1691 Beverly, Essex, MA 1921 Edith ? ca 1603 SW England 27 Jan 1677/8 Beverly, Essex MA 1635* "Hercules" 1922 William EATON ca 1607 Staple, Kent, England 28 Jan 1727/8 St. John's, Thanet, Kent 13 May 1673 Reading, Middlesex, MA 1923 Martha JENKINS 23 Nov 1605 Thanet, Kent, Eng. 14 Nov 1680 Reading, MDX, MA	3840 John DODGE d. Summer 1635 Middlechinnock 3841 Margery b. 15 Halstocke, Devonshire
Col 61 Mary EATON Apr 1643 Watertown, Middlesex, MA Bay 8 Nov 1716 North Beverly, Essex, MA	1924 Thomas LOWE before 1636* Ipswich ca 1605 Boxford, Suffolk, Eng. 22 Jun 1630 Polsted Hall, Suffolk 8 Sep 1677 Ipswich, Essex, MA 1925 Margaret TODD ca 1597 Polstead, Suffolk, Eng. ca 1647 Ipswich, Essex, MA 1635* 1926 Thomas BOREMAN Ipswich Oct 1601 (a "cooper") Claydon, Oxon., Eng (near Banbury) 17 Aug 1630 St. Helens Bishopgate, London May 1673 Ipswich MA 1927 Margaret OFFIN (aka Offing) ca 1605 St. Helen's Bishopgate parish, London 25 Nov 1679 ? Ipswich	3844 ?Peter EATON 3845 ?Elizabeth PATTERSON 3846 Edward JENKINS ca 1568 Coldred, Kent 21 Jul 1592 Wingham, Kent bur 17 Aug 1634 Thanet 3847 Mary PHILLIPS ca 1556 Wingham, Kent after 1624 Thanet? Kent 3848 Said to be Capt. John LOWE master of ship "Ambrose" & Vice- Admiral of Gov. Winthrop's Fleet in 1630--unconfirmed (for different theory see NER 52:67) 3849 ditto
962 (Deacon) Thomas LOW ca 1631 (occup-"malster") Suffolk? England 4 Jul 1660 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col. 12 Apr 1712 Ipswich, Essex, MA	1928 John TUTTLE 1635* "Planter" Ipswich 4 Jun 1596 Holcut, Hertfordshire, England ? 24 Nov 1627 St. Albans, Herts., Eng 30 Dec 1656 Carrickfergus, Antrim, N. Ireland 1929 Joan ANTROBUS 25 Jun 1592 St. Albans, Herts, Eng. ca 1660 Carrickfergus 1635* "Angel Gabriel" 1930 John COGSWELL shipwrck Maine ca 1592 Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, Eng. 10 Sep 1615-St. Mary's Chapel Westbury under the Plains, Wilts 29 Nov 1669 Ipswich, Essex, MA 1931 Elizabeth THOMPSON ca 1595 -Braintree or Westbury under the Plains, Wilts. 2 Jun 1646 Ipswich, Essex, MA 1635* "Angel Gabriel" 1932 (Lt.) Thomas BURNHAM shipwr. Narraganset & Pequot Wars ca 1620 Norwich, Norfolk, England ca 1645 Ipswich Chebacco Parish, MA 19 May 1694 Ipswich Chebacco 1933 Marie LAWRENCE bp 10 Apr 1625 (posthumous) St. Albans, Hertfordshire, Eng. 27 Mar 1705 Ipswich MA 1934 COGSWELL?	3850 Ananias TOD of Polstead 3851 Bridget) Hall, Suffolk 3852 Thomas BOREMAN ca 1570 Claydon 2 Feb 1595/6 Claydon bur 9 Mar 1627/8 Claydon 3853 Elizabeth CARTER ca 1575 Claydon, Oxfordshire bur. 11 May 1631, Claydon 3854 3855 3856 Symon TOOTILL fought Spanish Armada ca 1560 Ringstead Mhants m ca 1592 d 15 Jun 1630 Ringstead, Northampton 3857 Isabel WELLS-"Planter" ca 1565 Ringstead ca 1636 ?New Haven Colony(CT) 3858 Walter ANTROBUS warden-shoemaker's union b. Herts. or Cheshire m ca 1586/7 d 1614 St. Albans 3859 Joan ARNOLD-1635* "Planter" b ca 1570 d after 1635-Ipswich 3860 Edward COGSWELL b ca 1565 d 1616 Westbury Leigh 3861 Alice d 1616 Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire 3862 (Rev) William THOMPSON vicar-All Saints Church-Westbury b 15-- m 15--prob. Braintree d 1625 Westbury, Wiltshire, Eng. 3863 Phyllis b ?Braintree d 19 Jul 1698 Westb. 3864 Robert BURNHAM m 14 Oct 1606 Norwich 3865 Mary ANDREWS 7730 of Norwich, Norfolk 7731 Mary FEABOD
963 Martha BOREMAN (Boardman) 1641 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony 22 Apr 1720 Ipswich, Essex, MA	964 Simon TUTTLE 10 Jan 1630/1 St. Albans, Herts., England 1663 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony Jan 1692 Ipswich, Essex, MA y Col 965 Sarah COGSWELL ca 1645 Ipswich, MA Bay Colony 24 Jan 1731/2 (not 1673) Ipswich, Essex, MA 966 James BURNHAM ca 1650/1 Ipswich-Chebacco, MA Bay Col ca 1676 Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col 30 Jun 1729 Ipswich, Essex, MA x, MA 967 Mary ?COGSWELL? ca 1662 Ipswich? Nov 1738 Ipswich, Essex, MA	3866 Sir Thomas LAWRENCE 2 Feb 1588/9 St Albans 23 Oct 1609-Abbey Church 20 Mar 1624 St Albans, Herts 3867 Joan ANTROBUS 1635* "Planter" 1592-ca 1660 (same as 1929 above) 3868 3869

Chart No. 3

968 Joseph TOWNE
ca 1639 (bap 1648)
Salem, Mass. Bay Colony
ca 1665
Topsfield, Essex, MA Bay
1713
Topsfield, Essex, MA

484 John TOWNE
20 Feb 1678
Topsfield, Essex, MA
Jan 1708
Danvers, Essex, MA
3 Mar 1714
Danvers?

969 Phebe PERKINS
ca 1644
Topsfield, MA Bay Colony
after 1715
Topsfield, Essex, MA

242 John TOWNE
23 Feb 1709
Danvers, Essex, MA
2 Apr 1729
Danvers?
1754
Sutton, Worcester, MA

970 Joshua REA, Jr.
6 Aug 1664
Salem, Essex, MA Bay
Oct 168(5?)
Salem, Essex, MA
Fall 1710
Salem, Essex, MA

485 Elizabeth REA
13 Aug 1687
Salem, Essex, MA
14 Dec 1711
Danvers? Essex, MA

971 Elizabeth LEACH
1 Dec 1668
Rial Side, Salem, Essex, MA
2 Mar 1716
Salem, Essex, MA

121 Lois TOWNE
30 Sep 1752
Sutton, Worcester, MA
9 Sep 1812
Croydon, Cheshire, NH

972 Edmund TOWNE 1637*Salem
bap 28 Jun 1638 "Rose of Yarmouth
Yarmouth, Norfolk, England
ca 1654
Topsfield
ca 1677
Topsfield, Essex, MA Bay Col.

486 William TOWNE
13 Mar 1659
Topsfield, Essex, MA
22 Aug 1694
Topsfield, Essex, MA
30 Jan(1750?) (age 91)

973 Mary BROWNING
bap 7 Jan 1638
Salem, Mass. Bay Colony
before 1717
Topsfield? Essex, MA

243 Mercy TOWNE
19 Sep 1709
Topsfield, Essex, MA
17
Sutton, Worcester, MA

974 Thomas WILKINS
16 May 1647 (bap)
Dorchester, Norfolk, MA Bay Col.
May 1667
Salem, Essex, MA Bay
bef 27 Sep 1717 (est. settled)
Salem, Essex, MA

487 Margaret WILKINS
(widow John Willard,
executed for witchcraft)
ca 1667
Salem, Essex, Mass Bay Col.
5 Nov 1751
Topsfield, Essex, MA

975 Hannah NICHOLS
ca 1646/7
Salem?
after 1718
Salem, Essex, MA

1635*
1936 William TOWNE Salem
1599? Ep 21 May 1603
Lincolnshire
25 Mar 1620 St. Nicholas Ch.
Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng.
before June 1673
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1937 Joanna BLESSING
ca 1600
Yarmouth, Norfolk, England
ca 1682
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1938 (Deacon) Thomas PERKINS
27 May 1616
Newent, Gloucestershire, Eng
ca 1640
Topsfield, Essex, MA
7 May 1686
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1939 Phebe GOULD
27 Sep 1620
Hemmel Hempstead, Herts., Eng.
betw. 1680-1686
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1940 Joshua REA
ca 1629 ?Plymouth
26 Feb 1652
Salem Village
after 1701
Danvers(now), Essex, MA

1941 Sarah WATERS
1630
London, England
19 Mar 1720
Salem, Essex, MA

1942 (Sgt) John LEACH
King Phillip's War
3 Jul 1648
Rial Side, Salem, MA
22 May 1667
Salem
5 Mar 1771
Salem?

1943 Elizabeth FLINT
30 Apr or June 1650
Salem, MA
8 Feb 1719
Salem, Essex, MA

1635*
1944 William TOWNE Salem
1599? (bp) 21 May 1603
?Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.
25 Mar 1620 St. Nicholas Ch.
Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng.
before June 1673
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1945 Joanna BLESSING
ca 1600
Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng
ca 1682
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1637*
1946 Thomas BROWNING Salem
1588 England
before 1628
Feb 1671
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1947 Mary

30 May 1630*
1948 Bray WILKINS "Mary & John" Hull
ca 1611 (Nantasket)
Dorset, England
(2) ca 1636
Dorchester, MA Bay Colony
1 Jan 1701/2
Salem, Essex, MA

1949 Hannah WAY
3 Mar 1615/6
Bridport, Dorset, England
after 1702
Salem, Essex, MA

before 1638*
1950 William NICHOLS Salem
ca 1598 England
before 1640
?Salem MA
bef. 17 Feb 1695 (will pro.)
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1951 Margaret

3872 Richard TOWNE
12 Dec 1568 Haydor, Lincolnshire
16 Feb 1588/9 Haydor
d 16--Haydor or Braceby
3873 Ann DENTON
ca 1569 d after 19 Dec 1630(will)
Braceby, Lincolnshire, England

3874 William BLESSING
b 1575 Somerleyton, Suffolk, Eng.
3875

Sailed Dec-1630*
3876 "Sarge" John PERKINS "Lion" Boston
23 Dec 1583 Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.
9 Oct 1603 Hillmorton
26 Sep 1654 Ipswich, Essex, MA
3877 Judith GATOR
19 Mar 1588 Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.
ca 1669 Topsfield or Plymouth MA

1644*
3878 Zaccheus GOULD Ipswich
1589 Hant's Green, Bucks (near Potters
1619-lived at Gr. Missenden Row,
7 May 1689 Topsfield
3879 Phebe DEACON
3 Apr 1597 Hemel Hempstead, Herts.
20 Nov? 1663 Topsfield, Essex, MA

by 1630*
3880 Daniel Rea Plymouth
ca 1600 Suffolk, Eng
ca 1627 England?
Spring 1662 Salem, Essex, MA
3881 John ?Suffolk
1663 Salem

1635*
3882 Richard WATERS (gunsmith) Salem
3 Mar 1604 St. Botolph, Aldergate, London
ca 1629/30 London
25 July 1677 Salem, Essex, MA
3883 Rejoice PLASSE (husb. stepsister)
16-- London d after 1687 Salem

3884 (Captain) Richard Leach
King Phillip's War b 1618 Ash Martock,
1639 Salem Somerset
9 May 1687 Rial Side, Salem, MA
3885 Sarah FULLER
ca 1620 Somerset Eng.
after 1687 Salem

before 1642*
3886 Thomas FLINT Salem
born in Wales?
m before 1645, Salem
15 Apr 1663 Salem, Essex, MA
3887 Ann
16-- ?Salem d 1672 (as Mrs. John)

3888 Richard TOWNE (same as #3872)
12 Dec. 1568 Haydor, Lincolnshire
16 Feb 1588/9 Haydor
d 16-- ?Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.
3889 Ann DENTON
ca 1569 d after 19 Dec 1630 will
Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.

3890 William Blessing
1575 Somerleyton, Suffolk, Eng
16-- Yarmouth, Norfolk?
3891

3892

3893

3894

3895

3896

3897

30 May 1630* "Mary &
3898 Henry WAY John"-Nantasket
ca 1578 Allington, Dorsetshire, Eng.
(2) 22 Jan Jan 1614/5 Bridport
24 May 1667 Salem, Essex, MA
3899 Elizabeth BATCHELAR
b 1581 Bridport
d 27 Nov 1617 Bridport OR/23 Jn 1665
Dorchester MA

3900

3901

3902

968 Joseph TOWNE ca 1639 (bap 1648) Salem, Mass. Bay Colony ca 1665 Topsfield, Essex, MA Bay 1713 Topsfield, Essex, MA	1635* 1936 William TOWNE Salem 1599? Bp 21 May 1603 Lincolnshire 25 Mar 1620 St. Nicholas Ch. Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng. before June 1673 Topsfield, Essex, MA	3872 Richard TOWNE 12 Dec 1568 Haydor, Lincolnshire 16 Feb 1588/9 Haydor d 16--Haydor or Braceby 3873 Ann DENTON ca 1569 d after 19 Dec 1630(will) Braceby, Lincolnshire, England
	1937 Joanna BLESSING ca 1600 Yarmouth, Norfolk, England ca 1682 Topsfield, Essex, MA	3874 William BLESSING b 1575 Somerleyton, Suffolk, Eng. 3875
969 Phebe PERKINS ca 1644 Topsfield, MA Bay Colony after 1715 Topsfield, Essex, MA	1938 (Deacon) Thomas PERKINS ?7 May 1616 Newent, Gloucestershire, Eng ca 1640 Topsfield, Essex, MA 7 May 1686 Topsfield, Essex, MA	Sailed Dec-1630* 3876 "Sarge" John PERKINS "Lion" Boston 23 Dec 1583 Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng. 9 Oct 1603 Hillmorton 26 Sep 1654 Ipswich, Essex, MA 3877 Judith GATOR 19 Mar 1588 Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng. ca 1669 Topsfield or Plymouth MA
	1939 Phebe GOULD 27 Sep 1620 Hemmel Hempstead, Herts., Eng. betw. 1680-1686 Topsfield, Essex, MA	1644* 3878 Zaccheus GOULD Ipswich 1589 Mant's Green, Bucks (near Potters 1619-lived at Gr. Missenden Row) 7 May 1689 Topsfield 3879 Phebe DEACON 3 Apr 1597 Hemel Hempstead, Herts. 20 Nov? 1663 Topsfield, Essex, MA
70 Joshua REA, Jr. Aug 1664 alem, Essex, MA Bay Oct 168(5?) alem, Essex, MA Fall 1710 alem, Essex, MA	1940 Joshua REA ca 1629 ?Plymouth 26 Feb 1652 Salem Village after 1701 Danvers(now), Essex, MA	by 1630* 3880 Daniel Rea Plymouth ca 1600 Suffolk, Eng ca 1627 England? Spring 1662 Salem, Essex, MA 3881 Anne - ?Suffolk 1663 Salem
	1941 Sarah WATERS 1630 London, England 19 Mar 1720 Salem, Essex, MA	1635* 3882 Richard WATERS (gunsmith) Salem 3 Mar 1604 St. Botolph, Aldergate, London ca 1629/30 London 25 July 1677 Salem, Essex, MA 3883 Rejoice PLASSE (husb. stepsister) 16-- London d after 1687 Salem
971 Elizabeth LEACH 1 Dec 1668 Rial Side, Salem, Essex, MA 2 Mar 1716 Salem, Essex, MA	1942 (Sgt) John LEACH King Phillip's War 3 Jul 1648 Rial Side, Salem, MA 22 May 1667 Salem 5 Mar 1771 Salem?	3884 (Captain) Richard Leach King Phillip's War b 1618 Ash Martock, 1639 Salem Somerset 9 May 1687 Rial Side, Salem, MA 3885 Sarah FULLER ca 1620 Somerset Eng. after 1687 Salem
	1943 Elizabeth FLINT 30 Apr or June 1650 Salem, MA 8 Feb 1719 Salem, Essex, MA	before 1642* 3886 Thomas FLINT Salem born in Wales? m before 1645, Salem 15 Apr 1663 Salem, Essex, MA 3887 Ann 16-- ?Salem d 1672 (as Mrs John Southwick)
972 Edmund TOWNE bap 28 Jun 1638 Yarmouth, Norfolk, England ca 1654 Topsfield ca 1677 Topsfield, Essex, MA Bay Col.	1637*Salem "Rose of Yarmouth" 1944 William TOWNE Salem 1599? (bp) 21 May 1603 ?Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng. 25 Mar 1620 St. Nicholas Ch. Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng. before June 1673 Topsfield, Essex, MA	1635* 3888 Richard TOWNE (same as #3872) 12 Dec. 1568 Haydor, Lincolnshire 16 Feb 1588/9 Haydor d 16-- ?Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng. 3889 Ann DENTON ca 1569 d after 19 Dec 1630 will Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.
	1945 Joanna BLESSING ca 1600 Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng ca 1682 Topsfield, Essex, MA	3890 William Blessing 1575 Somerleyton, Suffolk, Eng 16-- Yarmouth, Norfolk? 3891
1) 973 Mary BROWNING bap 7 Jan 1638 Salem, Mass. Bay Colony before 1717 Topsfield? Essex, MA	1637* 1946 Thomas BROWNING Salem 1588 England before 1628 England Feb 1671 Topsfield, Essex, MA 1947 Mary	3892 3893 3894 3895
974 Thomas WILKINS 16 May 1647 (bap) Dorchester, Norfolk, MA Bay Col. May 1667 Salem, Essex, MA Bay bef 27 Sep 1717 (est.settled) Salem, Essex, MA	30 May 1630* "Mary & John" Hull 1948 Bray WILKINS (Nantasket) ca 1611 Dorset, England (2) ca 1636 Dorchester, MA Bay Colony 1 Jan 1701/2 Salem, Essex, MA 1949 Hannah WAY 3 Mar 1615/6 Bridport, Dorset, England after 1702 Salem, Essex, MA	3896 3897 30 May 1630* "Mary & 3898 Henry WAY John"-Nantasket ca 1578 Allington, Dorsetshire, Eng. (2) 22 Jan Jan 1614/5 Bridport 24 May 1667 Salem, Essex, MA 3899 Elizabeth ?BATCHELAR b 1581 Bridport d 27 Nov 1617 Bridport OR/23 Jn 1665 Dorchester MA
975 Hannah NICHOLS ca 1646/7 Salem? after 1718 Salem, Essex, MA	before 1638* 1950 William NICHOLS Salem ca 1598 England before 1640 ?Salem MA bef. 17 Feb 1695 (will pro.) Topsfield, Essex, MA 1951 Margaret	3900 3901 3902

Chart No. 4

488 Samuel ELLICE
14 Jul 1699
Medfield, Norfolk
14 Sep 1720
Wrentham, Norfolk
14 Aug 1769
E. Medway (now Mi

244 (Capt.) Samuel ELLICE (Ellis)
Revolutionary War Veteran
15 Feb 1726
Medway, Norfolk, MA
15 May 1750 -Brooklyn, Windham, CT
21 Dec 1802
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

489 Dorothy HALL
20 May 1700
Wrentham, Norfolk
13 May 1790
Medway-Millis, No

122 Jedediah ELLIS
9 Jul 1751
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA
8 Apr 1774
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA
14 Jun 1804
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

490 (?Thomas) S
ca 1705?
of "Canterbury"

245 Abigail SMITH
? 2 Apr 1734?
Pomfret, Windham, CT
17
Sturbridge? Worcester, MA

491 ?Abigail
Ca 1708?
Windham Co.

968 Joseph TOWNE
ca 1639 (bap 1648)
Salem, Mass. Bay Colony
ca 1665
Topsfield, Essex, MA Bay
1713
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1635*
1936 William TOWNE Salem
1599? Bp 21 May 1603
Lincolnshire
25 Mar 1620 St. Nicholas Ch.
Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng.
before June 1673
Topsfield, Essex, MA

3872 Richard TOWNE
12 Dec 1568 Haydor, Lincolnshire
16 Feb 1588/9 Haydor
d 16--Haydor or Braceby
3873 Ann DENTON
ca 1569 d after 19 Dec 1630(will)
Braceby, Lincolnshire, England

1937 Joanna BLESSING
ca 1600
Yarmouth, Norfolk, England
ca 1682
Topsfield, Essex, MA

3874 William BLESSING
b 1575 Somerleyton, Suffolk, Eng.
3875

969 Phebe PERKINS
ca 1644
Topsfield, MA Bay Colony
after 1715
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1938 (Deacon) Thomas PERKINS
27 May 1616
Newent, Gloucestershire, Eng
ca 1640
Topsfield, Essex, MA
7 May 1686
Topsfield, Essex, MA

Sailed Dec-1630*
3876 "Sarge" John PERKINS "Lion" Boston
23 Dec 1583 Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.
9 Oct 1603 Hillmorton
26 Sep 1654 Ipswich, Essex, MA
3877 Judith GATOR
19 Mar 1588 Hillmorton, Warwick, Eng.
ca 1669 Topsfield or Plymouth MA

1939 Phebe GOULD
27 Sep 1620
Hemmel Hempstead, Herts., Eng.
betw. 1680-1686
Topsfield, Essex, MA

1644*
3878 Zaccheus GOULD Ipswich
1589 Hant's Green, Bucks (near Potters
1619-lived at Gr. Missenden Row)
7 May 1689 Topsfield
3879 Phebe DEACON
3 Apr 1597 Hemel Hempstead, Herts.
20 Nov? 1663 Topsfield, Essex, MA

70 Joshua REA, Jr.
Aug 1664
Salem, Essex, MA Bay
Oct 168(5?)
Salem, Essex, MA
Fall 1710
Salem, Essex, MA

1940 Joshua REA
ca 1629 ?Plymouth
26 Feb 1652
Salem Village
after 1701
Danvers(now), Essex, MA

by 1630*
3880 Daniel Rea Plymouth
ca 1600 Suffolk, Eng
ca 1627 England?
Spring 1662 Salem, Essex, MA
3881 ~~Anna~~ - ?Suffolk
1663 Salem

1941 Sarah WATERS
1630
London, England
19 Mar 1720
Salem, Essex, MA

1635*
3882 Richard WATERS (gunsmith) Salem
3 Mar 1604 St. Botolph, Aldergate, London
ca 1629/30 London
25 July 1677 Salem, Essex, MA
3883 Rejoice FLASSE (husb. stepsister)
16-- London d after 1687 Salem

971 Elizabeth LEACH
1 Dec 1668
Rial Side, Salem, Essex, MA
2 Mar 1716
Salem, Essex, MA

1942 (Sgt) John LEACH
King Phillip's War
3 Jul 1648
Rial Side, Salem, MA
22 May 1667
Salem
5 Mar 1771
Salem?

3884 (Captain) Richard Leach
King Phillip's War b 1618 Ash Martock,
1639 Salem Somerset
9 May 1687 Rial Side, Salem, MA
3885 Sarah FULLER
ca 1620 Somerset Eng.
after 1687 Salem

1943 Elizabeth FLINT
30 Apr or June 1650
Salem, MA
8 Feb 1719
Salem, Essex, MA

before 1642*
3886 Thomas FLINT Salem
born in Wales?
m before 1645, Salem
15 Apr 1663 Salem, Essex, MA
3887 Ann
16-- ?Salem d 1672 (as Mrs John Southwick)

1637*Salem
972 Edmund TOWNE "Rose of
bap 28 Jun 1638 Yarmouth
Yarmouth, Norfolk, England
ca 1654
Topsfield
ca 1677
Topsfield, Essex, MA Bay Col.

1635*
1944 William TOWNE Salem
1599? (bp) 21 May 1603
?Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.
25 Mar 1620 St. Nicholas Ch.
Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng.
before June 1673
Topsfield, Essex, MA

3888 Richard TOWNE (same as #3872)
12 Dec. 1568 Haydor, Lincolnshire
16 Feb 1588/9 Haydor
d 16-- ?Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.
3889 Ann DENTON
ca 1569 d after 19 Dec 1630 will
Braceby, Lincolnshire, Eng.

1945 Joanna BLESSING
ca 1600
Yarmouth, Norfolk, Eng
ca 1682
Topsfield, Essex, MA

3890 William Blessing
1575 Somerleyton, Suffolk, Eng
16-- Yarmouth, Norfolk?
3891

1)
973 Mary BROWNING
bap 7 Jan 1638
Salem, Mass. Bay Colony
before 1717
Topsfield? Essex, MA

1637*
1946 Thomas BROWNING Salem
1588 England
before 1628 England
Feb 1671
Topsfield, Essex, MA
1947 Mary

3892
3893
3894
3895

974 Thomas WILKINS
16 May 1647 (bap)
Dorchester, Norfolk, MA Bay Col.
May 1667
Salem, Essex, MA Bay
bef 27 Sep 1717 (est.settled)
Salem, Essex, MA

30 May 1630*
"Mary & John" Hull
1948 Bray WILKINS (Nantasket)
ca 1611 Dorset, England
(2) ca 1636
Dorchester, MA Bay Colony
1 Jan 1701/2
Salem, Essex, MA

3896
3897

craft)
ay Col.

1949 Hannah WAY
3 Mar 1615/6
Bridport, Dorset, England
after 1702
Salem, Essex, MA

30 May 1630* "Mary &
John"-Nantasket
3898 Henry WAY
ca 1578 Allington, Dorsetshire, Eng.
(2) 22 Jan Jan 1614/5 Bridport
24 May 1667 Salem, Essex, MA
3899 Elizabeth BEACHELAR
b 1581 Bridport
d 27 Nov 1617 Bridport CR/23 Jn 1665
Dorchester MA

before 1638*
1950 William NICHOLS Salem
ca 1598 England
before 1640
?Salem MA
bef. 17 Feb 1695 (will pro.)
Topsfield, Essex, MA

3900
3901

975 Hannah NICHOLS
ca 1646/7
Salem?
after 1718
Salem, Essex, MA

1951 Margaret

3902

Chart No. 4

488 Samuel ELLICE
14 Jul 1699
Medfield, Norfolk, MA
14 Sep 1720
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA
14 Aug 1769
E. Medway (now Millis) Nfk. MA

244 (Capt.) Samuel ELLICE (Ellis)
Revolutionary War Veteran
15 Feb 1726
Medway, Norfolk, MA
15 May 1750 -Brooklyn, Windham, CT
21 Dec 1802
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

489 Dorothy HALL
20 May 1700
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA
13 May 1790
Medway-Millis, Norfolk, MA

122 Jedediah ELLIS
9 Jul 1751
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA
8 Apr 1774
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA
14 Jun 1804
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

490 (?Thomas) SMITH
ca 1705?
of "Canterbury" CT

245 Abigail SMITH
? 2 Apr. 1734?
Pomfret, Windham, CT
17
Sturbridge? Worcester, MA

491 ?Abigail _____
Ca 1708?

Windham Co., CT

976 John ELLICE, Jr.
26 Apr 1646/7
Dedham, Norfolk, MA Bay
7 Apr 1698
Boston, Suffolk, MA
14 Nov 1716
Medway, Norfolk, MA

977 Mary HILL
28 Oct 1662
Sherburne, Middlesex, MA
3 Mar 1729
Medway, Norfolk, MA

978 Benjamin HALL
7 Aug 1669
Rehoboth, Bristol, Plymouth Col.
5 Jan 1692
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA
26 Aug 1726
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA

979 Sarah FISHER
1668
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA Bay
17--
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA

980 SMITH
of Mass or Connecticut

981

982

983

1952 John ELLICE
ca 1615
Wrentham, Norfolk, England
12 Dec 1644
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
2 Apr 1697
Medfield, Norfolk, MA

1953 Susan LUMBER (Lombard)
16--
England
4 Apr 1953/4
Medfield, Norfolk, MA

1954 John HILL
1630
Chaffcombe, Somerset, England
ca 1653
?Sherburne, Middlesex, MA
23 Jan 1717/8

1955 Hannah _____
16--

ca 1692
?Sherburne, MA

1956 Edward HALL
16--

1636*
Duxbury

ca 1649
? Braintree MA
ca 27 Nov 1670-will
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1957 Hester _____
16--
after 1674, Rehoboth?
(as Mrs. Thos Jordan)

1958 Cornelius FISHER
1632
Denton, Norfolk, England
25 Jul 1665
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
2 Jan 1699 -Dedham?

1959 Sarah EVERETT
12 Apr 1644
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
28 Feb 1676
Dedham?

1960	SMITH
------	-------

1961

1962

3904	ELLICE
------	--------

15-- Norfolk, Eng? It is claimed
there were Welsh progenitors

3906

3907

3907

by 1633*
3908 John HILL Dorchester
ca 1602 Pitminster, Somerset, Eng.
ca 1629 Chaffcombe, Somerset
31 May 1664 Dorchester (Uncaty-bec Milt
3909 Frances TILLESTON (Tilden)
ca 1608 Chard, Somerset, England
18 Nov 1676 Milton, MA

3910

3911

3912

3913

3914

3915

1637* "Rose"
3916 Anthony FISHER Dedham
23 Apr 1591 Syleham, Jfk., Eng
16-- "Wignotte" at Syleham
18 Apr 1671- Dorchester, Norfolk MA
3917 Alice
ca 1600 Suffolk? England
12 Jan 1662/3 Dedham, Norfolk, MA

163 *

3918 Richard EVERETT Cambridge
ca 1615 England
29 Jun 1643 -Springfield (Pynchon's
settlement) claimed by MA Bay Col.
3 Jul 1682 - Dedham, Norfolk, MA

3919 Mary WINCH
ca 1619 Ipswich? Suffolk, England
after 1682 Dedham, Nfk. MA

3920 SMITH

3921

3922

3923

3924

3925

976 John ELLICE, Jr.
26 Apr 1646/7
Dedham, Norfolk, MA Bay
7 Apr 1698
Boston, Suffolk, MA
14 Nov 1716
Medway, Norfolk, MA

, MA

, MA

llis)Nfk,MA

977 Mary HILL
28 Oct 1662
Sherburne, Middlesex, MA
3 Mar 1729
Medway, Norfolk, MA

978 Benjamin HALL
7 Aug 1669
Rehoboth, Bristol, Plymouth Col.
5 Jan 1692
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA
26 Aug 1726
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA

, MA

rnfolk, MA

979 Sarah FISHER
1668
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA Bay
17--
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA

980 SMITH
of Mass or Connecticut

SMITH

CT

981

982

CT

1952 John ELLICE 1635*
ca 1615 Boston
Wrentham, Norfolk, England
12 Dec 1644
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
2 Apr 1697
Medfield, Norfolk, MA

1953 Susan LUMBER (Lombard)
16--
4 Apr 1653/4 England
Medfield, Norfolk, MA

1954 John HILL
1630
Chaffcombe, Somerset, England
ca 1653
?Sherburne, Middlesex, MA
23 Jan 1717/8

1955 Hannah
16--

ca 1692
?Sherburne, MA

1956 Edward HALL 1636*
16-- Duxbury

ca 1649
? Braintree MA
ca 27 Nov 1670-will
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1957 Hester
16--

after 1674, Rehoboth?
(as Mrs. Thos Jordan)

1958 Cornelius FISHER
1632
Denton, Norfolk, England
25 Jul 1665
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
2 Jan 1699 -Dedham?

1959 Sarah EVERETT
12 Apr 1644
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
28 Feb 1676
Dedham?

1960 SMITH

1961

1962

3904 ELLICE

15-- Norfolk, Eng? It is claimed
there were Welsh progenitors

3905

3906

3907

by 1633*
3908 John HILL Dorchester
ca 1602 Pitminster, Somerset, Eng.
ca 1629 Chaffcombe, Somerset
31 May 1664 Dorchester(Uncaty-bec Milt
3909 Frances TILLESTON (Tilden)
ca 1608 Chard, Somerset, England
18 Nov 1676 ?Milton, MA

3910

3911

3912

3913

3914

3915

1637* "Rose"
3916 Anthony FISHER Dedham
23 Apr 1591 Syleham, 3fk., Eng
16-- "Wignotte" at Syleham
18 Apr 1671- Dorchester, Norfolk MA
3917 Alice
ca 1600 Suffolk? England
12 Jan 1662/3 Dedham, Norfolk, MA

163.*
3918 Richard EVERETT Cambridge
ca 1615 England
29 Jun 1643 -Springfield (Pyncheon's
settlement)claimed by MA Bay Col.
3 Jul 1682 - Dedham, Norfolk, MA

1634* "Francis"
3919 Mary WINCH Roxbury
ca 1619 Ipswich? Suffolk, England
after 1682 Dedham, Nfk, MA

3920 SMITH

3921

3922

3923

3924

3925

Chart No. 5

492 (Deacon) Sam
1 Sep 1688
Eastham, Barnsta
1712
Eastham, Barnsta
1742
Eastham? Barnsta

246 (Lt) Samuel FREEMAN V
French & Indian War Veteran
22 Nov 1716 -Eastham, Barnstable
30 Apr 1744 (intentions)
Needham or Charlton, MA
31 Dec 1772 (Southbridge part)
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

493 Mary PAINE
28 Jan 1692/3
Eastham, Barnsta
5 Mar 1770
Eastham, Barnsta

123 Martha FREEMAN
14 Sep 1757
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA
9 May 1804
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

494 William CHU
1684
Salem, Essex, M
ca 1713
?Woburn?
17-- (said t
of Braintree

247 Mary CHUBB
8 Dec 1719
Woburn, Middlesex, MA
9 Sep 1807 (Mrs. Jos. Chamberlain)
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

495 ?Sarah

976 John ELLICE, Jr.
26 Apr 1646/7
Dedham, Norfolk, MA Bay
7 Apr 1698
Boston, Suffolk, MA
14 Nov 1716
Medway, Norfolk, MA

, MA
, MA
llis)Nfk,MA

977 Mary HILL
28 Oct 1662
Sherburne, Middlesex, MA
3 Mar 1729
Medway, Norfolk, MA

978 Benjamin HALL
7 Aug 1669
Rehoboth, Bristol, Plymouth Col.
5 Jan 1692
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA
26 Aug 1726
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA

, MA
rfolk, MA

979 Sarah FISHER
1668
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA Bay
17--
Wrentham, Norfolk, MA

980 SMITH
of Mass or Connecticut

MITH
CT

981

982

CT

983

1952 John ELLICE 1635*
ca 1615 Boston
Wrentham, Norfolk, England
12 Dec 1644
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
2 Apr 1697
Medfield, Norfolk, MA

1953 Susan LUMBER (Lombard)
16-- England
4 Apr 1653/4
Medfield, Norfolk, MA

1954 John HILL
1630
Chaffcombe, Somerset, England
ca 1653
?Sherburne, Middlesex, MA
23 Jan 1717/8

1955 Hannah

16--
ca 1692
?Sherburne, MA

1956 Edward HALL 1636*
16-- Duxbury

ca 1649
? Braintree MA
ca 27 Nov 1670-will
Rehoboth, Plymouth Colony

1957 Hester
16--

after 1674, Rehoboth?
(as Mrs. Thos Jordan)

1958 Cornelius FISHER
1632
Denton, Norfolk, England
25 Jul 1665
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
2 Jan 1699 -Dedham?

1959 Sarah EVERETT
12 Apr 1644
Dedham, Norfolk, MA
28 Feb 1676
Dedham?

1960 SMITH

1961

1962

3904 ELLICE

15-- Norfolk, Eng? It is claimed
there were Welsh progenitors

3905

3906

3907

by 1633*
3908 John HILL Dorchester
ca 1602 Pitminster, Somerset, Eng.
ca 1629 Chaffcombe, Somerset
31 May 1664 Dorchester(Uncaty-bec Milt
3909 Frances TILLESTON (Tilden)
ca 1608 Chard, Somerset, England
18 Nov 1676 ?Milton, MA

3910

3911

3912

3913

3914

3915

1637* "Rose"
3916 Anthony FISHER Dedham
23 Apr 1591 Syleham, Jfk., Eng
16-- "Wignotte" at Syleham
18 Apr 1671- Dorchester, Norfolk MA
3917 Alice
ca 1600 Suffolk? England
12 Jan 1662/3 Dedham, Norfolk, MA

163.*
3918 Richard EVERETT Cambridge
ca 1615 England
29 Jun 1643 -Springfield (Pynchon's
settlement)claimed by MA Bay Col.
3 Jul 1682 - Dedham, Norfolk, MA

1634* "Francis"
3919 Mary WINCH Roxbury
ca 1619 Ipswich? Suffolk, England
after 1682 Dedham, Nfk, MA

3920 SMITH

3921

3922

3923

3924

3925

Chart No. 5

984 (Capt.) Samuel FREEMAN III
26 Mar 1662
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
5 Feb 1684
Eastham, Barnstable Co., MA
30 Jan 1742/3
Eastham, Barnstable Co MA

492 (Deacon) Samuel FREEMAN IV
1 Sep 1688
Eastham, Barnstable, MA
1712
Eastham, Barnstable, MA
1742
Eastham? Barnstable, MA

246 (Lt) Samuel FREEMAN V
French & Indian War Veteran
22 Nov 1716 -Eastham, Barnstable,
30 Apr 1744 (intentions)
Needham or Charlton, MA
31 Dec 1772 (Southbridge part)
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

985 Elizabeth SPARROW
1663
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
either bef. 1694 or in 1706
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

986 (Deacon) John PAINE
(town off., whale boat maker, etc)
4 Mar 1660/1
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
26 Oct 1731
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

493 Mary PAINE
28 Jan 1692/3
Eastham, Barnstable, MA
5 Mar 1770
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

123 Martha FREEMAN
14 Sep 1757
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA
9 May 1804
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

987 Bennett FREEMAN
18 Feb 1670/1
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
13 May, 1716
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

(probably)
988 William CHUBB
(soldier in King Phillip's War
ca 1650?
Salem, Essex, MA Bay Colony
ca 1683?
Salem? 17-- MA

494 William CHUBB
1684
Salem, Essex, MA
ca 1713
?Woburn?
17-- (said to have been
of Braintree)

247 Mary CHUBB
8 Dec 1719
Woburn, Middlesex, MA
9 Sep 1807 (Mrs. Jos. Chamberlain)
Sturbridge, Worcester, MA

990

495 ?Sarah

991

1968 (Deacon) Samuel FREEMAN II
11 May 1638
Watertown, Mass. Bay Colony
12 May 1658
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
25 Nov 1712
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

1969 Mercy SOUTHWORTH
1638
Duxbury, Plymouth Colony
25 Nov 1712 (same as husb?)
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

1970 Jonathan SPARROW
ca 1631
England
28 Oct 1654
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
21 Mar 1706/7
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

1971 Rebecca BANGS
ca 1636/7
Plymouth Colony
ca 1666 (or 1677?)
Eastham, Plymouth Colony

1972 Thomas PAINE (mill builder,
ca 1614 official)
?Kent? England
ca 1650
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
Eastham, Barnstable MA (now Orleans)

1973 Mary SNOW
ca 1630
Plymouth
28 Apr 1704
Eastham, Plymouth Colony (Orleans)

July 1635*
"Abigail" Saugus
1974 (Major) John FREEMAN
28 Jan 1626/7
Bellinghurst, Sussex, England
13 Feb 1649 Sandwich-Ply. Colony
Sandwich, Plymouth Colony
28 Oct 1719 (age 98)
Eastham, Barnstable, MA (Orleans)

1975 Mercy PRENCE
18 Feb 1670/1
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
28 Sep 1711
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

by 1631*
1976 Thomas CHUBB Dorchester
ca 1607
Crewkerne, Somerset, England
(near Devonshire)
ca 1640
Salem, Essex, MA
17 Oct 1688
Beverly, Essex, MA

1977 Avis
ca 1609?
England
1661
Beverly, Essex, MA

3936 (Gentleman) Samuel FREEMAN
cl600-of E.Malling, Kent, England
14 Jul 1624 St. Ann Blackfriars London
During 1646 Watertown MA Bay
3937 Apphia QUICK
ca 1605 London
?Feb 1665/6 Eastham

1628*
3938 Constant SOUTHWORTH Plymouth
1614 Leyden, Holland
2 Nov 1637 Duxbury, Plymouth Colony
10 Mar 1678/9 Duxbury
3939 Elizabeth COLLIER
1614 ?London, England
1685 ?Duxbury

1632*
3940 Richard SPARROW Plymouth
b ca 1605 Eng m ca 1630 Eng
d 8 Jan 1660/1 Eastham, Plym. Col.
3941 Pandora
ca 1608 England
after 1665 Eastham (now East Orleans)

1623* "Anne" Plymouth
3942 Edward BANGS (shipwright)
28 Oct 1591 Panfield, Essex, Eng.
(3) ca 1635 Hingham MA Bay Col.
1678 Eastham, Plymouth Colony
3943 Rebecca HOBART (Hubbard)
29 Dec 1611 Hingham, Norfolk, Eng.
16-- Eastham

?ca 1624* Plymouth
3944 Thomas PAINE (Rep to Old Colony
ca 1590-England Court in 1639)
ca 1613? Kent? England
after 1650 Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony
3945

1623 "Anne" Plymouth
3946 Nicholas SNOW (governor's asst.,
25 Jan 1591/2 St. Nicholas Shoreditch,
ca 1626 Plymouth London (Hexton)
15 Nov 1676 Eastham, Plymouth Colony
3947 Constance HOPKINS-1620 "Mayflower"
Ca 1607 London
Oct 1677 Eastham, Plymouth Colony

1635* "Abigail"
3948 Edmond FREEMAN 1635* "Abigail"
25 Jul 1596 Fulborough, Sussex, Eng.
16 Jun 1617 Gravel cum Chesfield,
(Cowfold) Sussex, England
bef 2 Nov 1682-wp Sandwich, Fly. Colony
3949 Bennett HODSOLL
ca 1596 Cowfold? Sussex, England
bur. 12 Apr 1630 Fulborough, Sussex, Eng

1621* "Fortune"
3950 (Gov) Thomas PRENCE Plymouth
ca 1600- grew up in Lechdale, Glouc.
5 Aug 1624 Plymouth
29 Mar 1673 Plymouth, Plymouth Colony
3951 Fatiene BREWSTER- 1623 "Anne"
ca 1605 ?Scrooby, Nottingham, Eng.
just bef. 12 Dec 1634 (Epidemic)
Plymouth, Plymouth Colony

3952 Peter CHUBB
ca 1579
Somerset, England
16--

3953 Alice IVY
b 15-- England
d 16--

3954

3955

984 (Capt.) Samuel FREEMAN III
26 Mar 1662
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
5 Feb 1684
Eastham, Barnstable Co., MA
30 Jan 1742/3
Eastham, Barnstable Co MA

uel FREEMAN IV

le, MA

le, MA

le, MA

985 Elizabeth SPARROW
1663
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
either bef. 1694 or in 1706
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

986 (Deacon) John PAINE
(town off., whale boat maker, etc.)
4 Mar 1660/1
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
26 Oct 1731
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

le, MA

le, MA

987 Bennett FREEMAN
18 Feb 1670/1
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
13 May, 1716
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

(probably)
988 William CHUBB
(soldier in King Phillip's War)
ca 1650?
Salem, Essex, MA Bay Colony
ca 1683?
Salem?

17--

MA

BB

A

have been

989

990

991

1668 (Deacon) Samuel FREEMAN II
11 May 1638
Watertown, Mass. Bay Colony
12 May 1658
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
25 Nov 1712
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

1699 Mercy SOUTHWORTH
1638
Duxbury, Plymouth Colony
25 Nov 1712 (same as husb?)
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

1670 Jonathan SPARROW
ca 1631
England
28 Oct 1654
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
21 Mar 1706/7
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

1671 Rebecca BANGS
ca 1636/7
Plymouth Colony
ca 1666 (or 1677?)
Eastham, Plymouth Colony

1672 Thomas PAINE (mill builder,
ca 1614 official)
?Kent? England
ca 1650
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
Eastham, Barnstable MA (now Orleans)

1673 Mary SNOW
ca 1630
Plymouth
28 Apr 1704
Eastham, Plymouth Colony (Orleans)

July 1635*
"Abigail" Saugus
1674 (Major) John FREEMAN
28 Jan 1626/7
Bellinghurst, Sussex, England
13 Feb 1649 Sandwich-Ply. Colony
Sandwich, Plymouth Colony
28 Oct 1719 (age 98)
Eastham, Barnstable, MA (Orleans)

1675 Mercy PRENCE
18 Feb 1670/1
Eastham, Plymouth Colony
28 Sep 1711
Eastham, Barnstable, MA

by 1631*
1676 Thomas CHUBB
ca 1607
Crewkerne, Somerset, England
(near Devonshire)
ca 1640
Salem, Essex, MA
17 Oct 1688
Beverly, Essex, MA

1677 Avis
ca 1609?
England
1661
Beverly, Essex, MA

1630*Watertown
3936 (Gentleman) Samuel FREEMAN
c1600-of E.Malling, Kent, England
14 Jul 1624 St. Ann Blackfriars London
During 1646 Watertown MA Bay
3937 Apphia QUICK
ca 1605 London
?Feb 1665/6 Eastham

1628*
3938 Constant SOUTHWORTH Plymouth
1614 Leyden, Holland
2 Nov 1637 Duxbury, Plymouth Colony
10 Mar 1678/9 Duxbury
3939 Elizabeth COLLIER
1614 ?London, England
1685 ?Duxbury

1632*
3940 Richard SPARROW Plymouth
b ca 1605 Eng m ca 1630 Eng
d 8 Jan 1660/1 Eastham, Plym. Col.
3941 Pandora
ca 1608 England
after 1665 Eastham (now East Orleans)

1623* "Anne" Plymouth
3942 Edward BANGS (shipwright)
28 Oct 1591 Panfield, Essex, Eng.
(3) ca 1635 Hingham MA Bay Col.
1678 Eastham, Plymouth Colony
3943 Rebecca HOBART (Hubbard)
29 Dec 1611 Hingham, Norfolk, Eng.
16-- Eastham

?ca 1624* Plymouth
3944 Thomas PAINE (Rep to Cld Colony
ca 1590-England. Court in 1639)
ca 1613? Kent? England
after 1650 Yarmouth, Plymouth Colony
3945

1623 "Anne" Plymouth
3946 Nicholas SNOW (governor's asst.,
25 Jan 1591/2 St. Nicholas Shoreditch,
ca 1626 Plymouth London (Hexton)
15 Nov 1676 Eastham, Plymouth Colony
3947 Constance HOPKINS-1620 "Mayflower"
Ca 1607 London
Oct 1677 Eastham, Plymouth Colony

1635* "Abigail"
3948 Edmond FREEMAN
25 Jul 1596 Pulborough, Sussex, Eng.
16 Jun 1617 Gravel cum Chesfield,
(Cowfold), Sussex, England
bef 2 Nov 1682-wd Sandwich, Ply.Colony
3949 Bennett HODSOIL
ca 1596 Cowfold? Sussex, England
bur.12 Apr 1630 Pulborough, Sussex, Eng

1621* "Fortune"
3950 (Gov) Thomas PRENCE Plymouth
ca 1600- grew up in Lechdale, Glouc.
5 Aug 1624 Plymouth
29 Mar 1673 Plymouth, Plymouth Colony
3951 Patience BREWSTER- 1623 "Anne"
ca 1605 ?Scrooby, Nottingham, Eng.
just bef. 12 Dec 1634 (Epidemic)
Plymouth, Plymouth Colony

3952 Peter CHUBB
ca 1579
Somerset, England
16--

3953 Alice IVY
b 15-- England
d 16--

3954

3955

Father Born May 28 1798
your own mother B August 10 1799
your present mother B Oct 26 1802
Silas D Dodge B Aug 25 1818
Lucy M Streeters B March 13 1820
John S Dodge B May 4 1824
Lydia S Dodge B July 13 1830

Phoebe R Dodge B Oct 19 1831
Olivia E M D B May 22 1833
Levi J Dodge B April 30 1835
Sarah C Dodge B April 30 1837
William O Dodge B Jan 7 1839
x Emma A Dodge B March 18 41

Based upon the foregoing we find in "America Heraldica," by E. de V. Vermont, 1886.

DODGE.

The emigrant, *William Dodge*, came over from Cheshire, England, to Salem in 1629. He was issued from an old Kentish stock, the only one of the name noticed in Burke.

Several patents, granting arms or confirming preceding grants are preserved in the family to this day.

CREST.

A demi-sea lion, azure collared and finned, or.
[Authorities.]

See: Meeting of the Dodge family in Salem, Mass., 1879, by Robert Dodge. Sir Bernard Burke. *The General Armory of England, etc.*, 1883. *The Book of Family Crests*. II., 145.

HARLEIAN SOCIETY PUBLICATIONS., 1891.

Visitations of Norfolk, 1563, 1589 and 1613. p. 107.

DODGE.

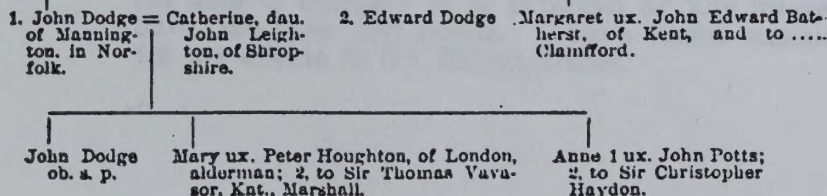
Har. 1552, ink fo. 114^b, pencil 108^b.

ARMS. — *Barry of six or and gules, on a pale of the second a woman's dugg proper distilling drops of milk argent.*

CREST. — *A demi sea-dog guardant sable, finned and purfled or, collared of the last.*

Richard Dodg of Rotham [Wrotham] in Kent =

John Dodge, of Rotham, in Kent = Elizabeth, dau. of John Carlton, of Epping, Esq.



HARLEIAN SOC. PUB., 1882.

Visitation of Cheshire, 1580.

Elizabeth Winnington, of Offerton (*Randle, George, Richard, Nicholas, of Offerton*), m. Oliver Dodge, of Stockport. She was alive 1553. They had 1, Oliver Dodge; 2, Margery Dodge; 3, Dorothy Dodge.

In "Visitation of Cornwall, 1621," Harleian Soc. Pub. 1874, page 78, n., *per Tavistock parish Register, Co. Devon*, John Dodge, Esq., m. 1635, Dionyse, dau. of the Rt. Worshipful Sir Fra. Glanvill, Kt.

NOTE.—[By J. T. D.] Rotham or Wrotham in Kent is about 25 miles s. e. of London. Epping is about 15 miles north of London.

It should be stated that from the time of Peter Dodge down to the time of John, of Rotham in Kent, no mention has been found of the arms of the Dodge family, and that may suggest the reason why John sought and obtained a confirmation of the grant to himself.

It would be easy to infer that John Dodge of Middlechinnock, Somerset, who d. in 1635, was the great grandson and heir of the honors of John of Rotham in Kent, if the record did not state positively that John, the *grandson*, died *without issue*. Still, it may be that John of Mannington, Norfolk, had other sons who were not heirs of his honors and his lands. Let each indulge in his own conjectures. The above quotations show conclusively that in the 16th and 17th centuries there were Dodges of honorable character and connections in the counties of Cheshire, Kent, Norfolk and Devon, but the statements of Mr. Vermont that William Dodge came from Cheshire and that he was from Kentish stock are not supported by good authority.

The above quotations also mark out in a general way the field in England to be explored by any interested who have the time and means. I have found sufficient scope for my efforts in the United States.

DODGES IN AMERICA.

In the course of the researches for this history only two main branches of the Dodge family have been found, one descended from William or Richard, of Beverly, Mass., and the other from Tristram Dodge who settled on Block Island, R. I. in 1660-61. Of this latter branch some account has been given in "Tristram Dodge and his Descendants," N. Y., 1886, by Robert Dodge, but no connection has yet been discovered between the two branches except the identity of some of the names.

On page 14 of the above book it is suggested that Tristram probably came from Devonshire and was allied to the Cheshire stock but no reasons are given for that suggestion. In an obituary of J. Wayne Dodge who died at Williamsville, near Buffalo, N. Y., in November, 1889, it is stated that he was a "descendant of John Dodge who was born in 1644, near the river Tweed, in northern England and who, with his brothers, Israel and Truxton, emigrated to America in 1667 and settled on Block Island, R. I., and died in 1729." No evidence as to the value of this testimony appears, except the fact that the line of descent from John, to J. Wayne Dodge is given with intelligent detail.

At the time of the meeting of the Dodge Family at Salem in 1879, it was supposed by the author of the call that all the Dodges in the United States were descended from either William or his brother Richard, but his later investigations have led him to abandon that opinion and to consider himself and a large body of others as descended from Tristram Dodge.

Progress has also been made since the Salem meeting in learning the precise locality from which William and Richard emigrated. From papers left by the late Capt. Fred L. Dodge, and now in the possession of the New Eng. Historic. Genealogical Society at Boston, it appears that in 1881 an examination was made of the Parish register of East Coker, Somersetshire Eng., with the result of finding the births of the children of Richard and of his brother, Michael, which will be shown later in a proper place. It was also learned that Richard Dodge in 1633 was duly admitted tenant, by entry-hold, of lands in Helyar manor, East Coker; that the manor of East Coker came into possession of a Devonshire family named Helyar, about 1616, and that said family still resided there; that Richard Dodge went to East Coker from St. Badeaux, Devonshire, about 4 miles from Plymouth, about the year 1616. Close exami-

nation of the parish register of East Coker did not show the name of William Dodge, brother of Richard.

In Vol. 44, p. 297 of the N. Eng. Hist. and Genealogic. Register for 1890, in Genealogical Gleanings in England, by Henry F. Waters, A. M., is found the following abstract of the will of "John Dodge of Middlechinnock, [Eng.] 2 April, 1635, proved 15 October, 1635. To be buried in church-yard there. To the church ten shillings. The same to the poor of the parish. To the minister for preaching funeral sermon, ten shillings. Wife Margery shall hold and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Co. Dorset, containing by estimation ten acres more or less, during her life natural if my sons Michael and William shall happen so long to live. To Wife Margery forty pounds and the bed that I now lie in and the bedstead and all things belonging thereunto. I give and bequeath unto her so much of my other household stuff as shall amount to four pounds, of such kinds as she shall think most needful and useful for her. Item. I give and bequeath unto my son William forty pounds more, over and above that portion which I have already given him. To my son Richard one sheep and to take his choice in my whole flock; and to John the son of the said Richard forty shillings. To Mary my daughter twenty shillings and to her son John forty shillings. And my will is that all these goods shall be delivered half a year after my decease.

Item. All the rest of my goods unmentioned I give and bequeath unto my son Michael whom I make and ordain the executor of this my last will and testament.

Witnesses Geo. Parsons, clerk, William Dodge, William Templeman. (*Sadler, 101.*)

[Chinnock and Coker are neighboring parishes in the extreme south part of Somerset Co., and Halstock, Dorset Co. is just over the line south of the above parishes.]

If William Dodge, one of the above witnesses, was not William the emigrant, then his relationship is at present unknown. Tradition says William returned to England and was married.

From Hubbard's Narrative in Young's Chronicles of Massachusetts Bay, it appears that Rev. John White of Dorchester, Dorsetshire, being grieved in 1626 at the failure of the first company, wrote to Mr. Roger Conant:

"Not to desert the business, faithfully promising that that if himself with three others, viz.: John Woodbury, John Balch and Peter Palfrey would stay at Naumkeag [Salem] and give timely notice thereof, he would provide a patent for them and likewise send them whatever they should write for, either men or provision, or goods wherewith to trade with the Indians." Answer was returned that they would all stay on those terms.

The delay in receiving returns was so great that the last three repented of their engagement and were on the point

of going to Virginia with Mr. Lyford. Mr. Conant's subline resolution to remain alone, finally prevailed with the others to remain with him. They then (1627) sent John Woodbury back to England "to procure necessities for a plantation." Gov. Endicott was sent over in the summer of 1628, arriving in September and making the colony to consist of about 100, including the new comers. His prosperous journey, safe arrival and good report, caused a large increase, and the Massachusetts company in 1629 sent over about 300 more, "most servants." In the second general letter of instructions to Gov. Endicott and his council, dated London, 28 May, 1629, the secretary states that Mr. White [Rev. John] desired the following to be recommended to your care, viz.:

"That you would show all lawful favor and respect unto the planters that come over in the Lion's Whelp, out of the counties of Dorset and Somerset; that you would appoint unto William Dodge, a skilful and painful husbandman, the charge of a team of horses, to appoint Hugh Tilly and William Edes for servants to Sir Richard Saltonstall, to give approbation and furtherance to Francis Webb in setting up his saw-mill, [Webb had subscribed £50, and was therefore one of the "adventurers,"] and to take notice that all other persons sent over by Mr. White are servants of the company."

The Talbot, a vessel of 300 tons, and the "Lions' Whelp, a neat and nimble ship of 120 tons," having taken on their supplies while lying in the Thames left Gravesend, 25 April, 1629, and reached Yarmouth, on the Isle of Wight on the 8th of May. Rev. Francis Higginson, who was on the Talbot, kept a journal of the voyage which has been preserved. According to his journal the Lion's Whelp had on board "over 40 planters specially from Dorchester and other places thereabouts," many mariners, 8 pieces of ordinance, provision and four goats. Both vessels sailed from Yarmouth May 11th, 1629, and arrived at Salem 29 June.

From the above we have the origin and arrival of the first of the name of Dodge in America.

William settled in that part now called Beverly, but, until 1668, a part of Salem and known as Bass River-side; being separated from Salem proper by the Bay. Tradition says that he was tall, with black hair and dark complexion, and that he returned to Lancashire (*doubtful*) where he married, and returned to Salem with his brothers Richard and John. Tradition is not distinguished for accuracy, and in this case it is possible that he returned to England to be married, but we find no trace of Richard in Salem till 1638, and the John of tradition is undoubtedly John the son of Richard, born in 1631, who, of course, came with his father.

William Dodge became "freeman" 17th April, 1637, and received a grant of 60 acres of land next to John Wood-

bury's, 3rd September, 1637. He bought for £40, 28th July, 1644, 200 acres, "late the property of Peter Palfry," near the head of Bass River, being a part of the Old Planters' tract, which, on the 25th January, 1635, the town of Salem granted to Peter Palfry, John Balch, William Trask, John Woodberry and Roger Conant, 200 acres each, the whole being 124 rods by about 1,290. These grantees were all settlers before Gov. Endicott's arrival, and hence were called Old Planters.

The fact that William Dodge came to Salem nine years earlier than Richard gave him more prominence in the community, but the same fact implies a greater degree of enterprise, if not ability, than was shown by the act of following where another had led the way. Hence, William has sometimes been called the father of all the Dodges. The records, however, indicate that the descendants of Richard Dodge are much more numerous than those of William, as might be expected, since the latter left but two sons while Richard left five.

Richard for a short time lived on land belonging to his brother. He was received as an inhabitant 29th October, 1638, was granted by the town of Salem, 12th November, 1638, ten acres of land, and 26th of November, 1638, the undivided half of eighty acres more, the other half being granted to his brother William. This last tract was on the east end of Conant's, John Woodberry's and John Balch's farms, whereof twelve acres were meadow. The 3d of December, 1641, the town granted to Richard forty acres more, making ninety in all. He was received into the church at Salem, 5th May, 1644. In 1667 he was one of the founders of the First Church, now of Beverly. Richard died in Beverly 15th June, 1671, leaving a will, by which it appears he left a brother Michael in England, and that Michael was to pay him £4 per annum for land which Richard either owned or had an interest in. The will of Richard, in connection with the will of his father, John Dodge, lately found in Somerset House, London, renders the origin of the Salem Dodges very certain. It is also shown by deeds recorded in Register's office of Essex County, vol., xi. p. 231, and vol. viii., p. 163, that William Dodge, senior, had a nephew William Dodge (Coker William, or William of Coker, son of Michael), to whom, by a deed dated 12th May, 1685, he gave "16 acres taken from *my home farm* next to the south end of Brimble Hill" (on which Beverly reservoir now stands). On the same date he also imposed upon his son, Capt. William Dodge, of Beverly, the duty of paying "to my brother, if he come to New England, and dwell in this town Beverly), £5 per annum, so long as he shall dwell here." This refers unmistakably to a brother then in England, and probably to

Michael, who was then no doubt his only brother, Richard having died in 1671. In 1692 *Coker William* still claimed that William Dodge, senior, had promised to give him ten acres of land, but William Dodge, senior, being dead, and the land being in the hands of his eldest son, known as Capt. John Dodge, the son honored the memory and good name of his father by giving the claimant *five acres*. This William Dodge, son of Michael, called also William secundus, in deeds, married Elizabeth, daughter of Roger Hascoll in Beverly, and is said to have had two sons and five daughters, among them a Mighill and a Margery. On the 20th February, 1696-7, he and his wife Elizabeth conveyed to Joseph Herrick, probably the son-in-law of Capt. William Dodge, "for £70-6s. in silver," one parcel of land in Beverly, containing five acres more or less, "with my dwelling house thereon," and another parcel in Beverly, containing ten acres more or less. After this conveyance, the name of William of Coker is not found in the records of Essex County.

Before proceeding to a detailed account of William and Richard Dodge and their descendants, it is proper to make some general observations about the family during its sojourn of 265 years in this country.

The Dodges for at least four generations very rarely engaged in any other occupation but farming. They gravitated to it by a kind of natural choice. They wanted to own land and they have enjoyed its cultivation and the independent life which that occupation gave them. They have been hard workers, they have rarely been irreligious, rarely seekers after office and very rarely intemperate. They have usually been willing and reliable supporters of churches, of schools, and all that conduced to the good order and well being of society. They have been among the bone and sinew of the country. Their character has been well portrayed in the following extract which appeared under the title.

BORN WORKERS.

The born workers are the real pillars of society. They are the Atlases that hold up the world—plain people, homely people, ungraceful people, perhaps, but were they all to be taken away things would fall into inextricable confusion.

We do not think of lifting up the born worker to places of great honor; these places are left for the people who pull the strings behind the scenes, who grace platforms, and make cunningly devised speeches to set forth their own merits. The offices are reserved for the brilliant, prominent, handsome people, well gifted with words, who often come in at the eleventh hour and receive every man his penny even the same as those laborious ones who rose in the dawn and brushed the dew and repaired the vineyard and worked all day in the heat and the dust. And verily the reward of the eleventh hour people is often greater than of those who have toiled early and late.—*Christian Register*, 25 August, 1892.

With the expansion of population after the middle of last century, they began to push out from their old homesteads to the unsubdued lands of the frontier, and they have been found on the frontier through the northern states ever since and are to be found now scattered all the way from New England to the Pacific.

With the growth of wealth and opportunity various members of the family have achieved wealth and distinction. Some have occupied the highest rank in the field of philanthropy, some have achieved military fame and many have laid down their lives for their country. Many have acquired more or less literary distinction, and there is scarcely any useful occupation in which the family is not well represented. They are found in the clergy of various denominations in the legal and medical professions and in the professorships of our colleges. Their aspiration for education is well indicated by the following record of the graduates of colleges.

COLLEGE GRADUATES.

HARVARD COLLEGE.

1701 Daniel Dodge, d. 1740.	1869 James Albert Dodge, Ph. D.
1749 Ezekiel Dodge, d. 1770.	1869 Wm. Lovell Dodge, M. D.
1771 Joshua Dodge, d. 1814.	1870 Wm. Walter Dodge, LL. B.
1777 Nathaniel Dodge, d. 1792.	1873.
1786 William Dodge, d. 1826.	1870 John Fred Dodge, LL. B.
1788 Oliver Dodge, d. 1802.	1873 Edward Sherman Dodge, LL.
1822 Samuel Dodge, M. D., 1833.	B. 1877.
1823 Pickering Dodge, d. 1863.	1873 Joshua Cleaves Dodge.
1826 Allen W. Dodge, d. 1878.	1880 Francis Faden Dodge.
1865 Levi Allen Dodge.	1882 George Smith Dodge, M. D.
1867 Frederic Dodge, LL. B. 1869.	

WILLIAMS COLLEGE.

1841 Charles Dodge, Lawyer.	1877 Samuel Douglas Dodge.
-----------------------------	----------------------------

YALE COLLEGE.

1826 David S. Dodge, M. D.	1872 Charles C. Dodge (hon).
1835 John Varick Dodge, M. A.	1874 Arthur Murray Dodge.
1840 Richard Varick Dodge.	1880 Arthur Dodge.
1857 David Stuart Dodge, M. A.	1884 Fred Herbert Dodge.
1866 Frederic Nevins Dodge.	1885 Charles Stuart Dodge.
1870 George Eggleston Dodge.	1890 Walter Dodge.

MIDDLEBURY COLLEGE, VT.

1876 Orange Wood Dodge.

DARTMOUTH COLLEGE.

1806 Joshua Dodge, Clergyman.	1844 Albert Dodge.
1833 James Madison Dodge.	1850 George W. Dodge, A. M.
1834 Roderick L. Dodge, med.	1860 Frederick Blake Dodge.
1838 Franklin Dodge, med.	1863 Samuel Delano Dodge.
1843 William Dodge, med.	1864 Levi P. Dodge, med.

THE DODGE FAMILY.

FIRST GENERATION.

We can now present in order the first generations in New England, in addition to the family of John who never came to America, and who died about October, 1635, leaving a will as before stated.

1

JOHN DODGE and his wife Margery had, in Somersetshire, England:

- 2 i. WILLIAM¹ came to Salem in 1629; d. between 1635 and 1692. A deposition of William Dodge, made in February, 1678-9, says, "aged about 70 years." Another deposition made by the same, 28th September, 1630, says, "aged about 76 years." The latter is believed to be the more correct. Hence, his birth may have been as early as 1604.
3. ii. RICHARD appears in Salem in 1638; d. 15th June, 1671; probably born as early as 1602 as will appear later.
- iii. MICHAEL lived and died in East Coker, Somerset Co., England; was church warden in 1670 in East Coker. Had children per parish register of East Coker:
 1. Margery,¹ bapt. 18th March, 1639-40.
 2. John,¹ bapt. 31st Jan., 1641-2.
 3. William,¹ bapt. 31st Jan., 1643-4; m. Elizabeth Haskell in Beverly, 10th July, 1665. (See Family 14).
 4. Michael,¹ bapt. 23d Feb., 1646-7.
 5. Richard,¹ bapt. 30th May, 1650.
- iv. MARY. d. in England. Had a son John.

2

WILLIAM¹ DODGE came to Salem in 1629, as before stated.

William Dodge

(1634.)

A tradition was handed down by Col. Robert Dodge to his son Francis. of Georgetown, D. C., that Farmer William came to America when about 21 or so to see how he liked it, and returned to England, telling his father that he had determined to settle in America and asking him for some present. His father said, "get married and I will give it." William is said to have met with two re-

fusals before he succeeded, but he got married and got his present, a pair of bulls.

The name of his wife is not known. It has been called Elizabeth Haskell; but Elizabeth Haskell was wife of "Coker" William, of which there are several proofs. Farmer William died between 1685 and 1692, as shown by deeds of land. During his lifetime only one deed shows the name of a wife; that was Mary, the wife of "Captain" William. She was a Conant, and at the time of her marriage to William Dodge was widow of John Balch.

The standing of Farmer William in the community is indicated by the fact that in thirty-five to forty instances, of which the records have been preserved, he was elected, or appointed, to various public services, such as selectman, grand jurymen, trial jurymen, committee service for town and church interests, laying out roads, etc. There are also evidences that he was on the best of terms with his pastor, Rev. John Hale, and that in the business of preserving public order and good morals he and his sons were clearly on the right side. In May, 1685, he disposed of his real estate by deeds which are of record, conveying his homestead to his son, Capt. William, and it is to-day in possession of Mr. Mason, and lies east of Cabot street and south of Herrick street.

Notes of Farmer William Dodge, collected by Hon. John I. Baker, of Beverly:

- 21 Feb., 1639. William Dodge was granted 5 ac. meadow, had 5 in family and $\frac{1}{2}$ acre therefor.
- 15 Dec., 1645. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.
- 20 Apl., 1646. William Dodge granted about 1 acre bet. his and Hugh Larkin's lot.
- 26 Oct., 1646. William Dodge and Roger Haskell to see to repairs of two bridges.
- 17 May, 1647. William Dodge and John Balch chosen to see to the 2 bridges near their houses; to be made suff. within 1 month. These are "presented."
- 16 Mar., 1649-50. William Dodge, Jac. Barney and Nath'l Putnam app'ted to lay out highway.
- 12 Aug., 1650. William Dodge and Mr. Conant to view land at upper end of William Dodge's and Roger Haskell's ground next swamp asked for by Robert Hibbert. By information of Mr. Conant, there being no exception, 20 ac. is granted to Hibbert for commonage and wood.
- 8 May, 1654. William Dodge, Capt. Hathorne, Mr. Batter and Sargt. Porter to exchange lands with Humphrey Woodbery and lay out the same.
- 20 Oct., 1653. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.
- 25 Dec., 1655. William Dodge had bill granted of £3-17-0.
- 4 Aug., 1656. William Dodge chosen to join with selectmen to make county rate.
- 20 Nov., 1656. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.
- 18 Aug., 1658. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.
- 18 Nov., 1657. William Dodge chosen for jury of trials.
- 15 May, 1665. William Dodge and Humphrey Woodbery to gather "rates" for ministry.

THE DODGE FAMILY.

3

RICHARD THE EMIGRANT

Probably had a house where No. 342, Dodge St., was in 1894. Mr. Issacher Lefavour, b. in 1816, says Dea. Richard Dodge, who purchased the farm of Jacob Edwards in 1819, moved a portion of the old house away, tore the remainder down and built a new house on the same site in 1830, which since 1894 has been removed to the south side of the street and remodeled by Mr. George R. Wales.

THIRD GENERATION.

34 and 39

Dea. Thomas Low of Chebacco in Ipswich married Martha Boreman (now Boardman), see Boardman Genealogy, 1895, where her ancestry is given five generations earlier. Martha was born in 1641 and d. 12 April, 1712, in Ipswich. Of their children

MARTHA Low, b. —; m. Richard Dodge, No. 34.

JOANNA Low, b. —; m. 1689, Antipas Dodge, No. 39.

37

JOSEPH¹ DODGE, b. 14 Feb., 1670. In addition to what is given on pages 41 and 42 "D. F.," it is found in the minutes of the select men of Boston that Joseph Dodge at lower end of North St. was licensed to sell strong drink as "Inholder" on the 6 July, 1719. A similar license was granted to him at the "Salutation" 4 July, 1720, and at his house in Lin Street (probably now Commercial Street), 10 July, 1722, but 13 July, 1724, his application was disallowed as "unfit to hold such employment." In 1725 and 1727 his applications were disallowed, but July 4, 1729, a license was granted to him in Hanover Street "to sell strong drink as a retailer."

3

RICHARD' DODGE appeared at Salem in 1638, and "desired accommodation." It was learned in 1881 from the Parish register of East Coker, Somersetshire, England, that in 1628, Richard, son of Richard, was bapt. date missing. Sept. 7, 1630, Margery, dau. of Richard was bapt. Feb. 2, 1630-1, Margery, dau. of Richard, was buried. Dec. 29, 1631, John, son of Richard was baptized. April 19, 1635, Marie, dau. of Richard and Edith was baptized.

As immigrants were admitted to the colony only by applying to the town and obtaining leave, it is quite certain that Richard and his family came in 1638, and as the King was at that time obstructing emigration, it is probable that he left England without royal permission.

After living awhile on land of his brother William, he settled on "Dodge Row" in North Beverly, not far east of Wenham Lake. The house he built stood probably where Mr. Lucius B. Dodge lately lived very near the present north line of Beverly, or possibly where Mr. H. W. Dodge now lives, a few rods farther east. The farm lately owned by Mr. Lucius B. Dodge was inherited from his father Richard, the son of Deacon Richard b. 1783, who bought it of his father-in-law, Jacob Edwards, b. 1746, by deed dated 23 April, 1819. Apparently the same land was bought by John Edwards, of Edward Dodge, cordwainer, Beverly, 15 March, 1781.

It had been held in the male line from the death of Richard.' Mr. Lucius B. Dodge says the house now occupied by Mr. H. W. Dodge was formerly used as a cabinet shop by his father Richard, and by him turned partly around and converted into a dwelling. It is unlikely that either house is as old as 200 years.

Richard, the immigrant, evidently gave his attention more to farming and the care of his domestic affairs, than to town or church business; although he was a loyal church member, and one of the most liberal contributors to the support of the church. He and his wife Edith were members of the Wenham church before 1648 according to its records, John Fiske being pastor.

He also had a high appreciation of the value of education, for in 1653, in a list of twenty-one subscribers to Harvard College, his name ranks first, while the next largest sum was only one fourth as much as his. He dedicated a piece of his land to a burying ground, which is now known as the Cemetery on Dodge Row. It was probably inherited by his son Edward, who died in 1727, for in February, 1780-1, the three sons of Edward, by a deed, confirmed the grant to their relatives and neighbors. The

near neighbors of Richard' were Zechary Herrick who married his daughter Mary, Peter Woodberry who married Sarah, John and Humphrey Woodberry and John Galle. He died 15th June, 1671, leaving an estate valued at the large sum of £1764 2s. He gave his sons John, Richard and Samuel each a good farm, valued in his inventory at over £100 each. To sons Edward and Joseph he gave the home farm, valued at £1000. To his wife Edith he gave certain appropriate personal property, "to be her own absolutely," and gave her "the sole and proper use of the parlor & chamber over it in my now dwelling house," and made liberal provision for annual payments to be made to her by her five sons. She outlived him seven years, dying 27th June, 1678, at the age of 75. (For wills, see appendix.) From this it is probable that Richard may have been born about 1602, and was about two years older than William. Edith, before her death, also made a will, and the inventory discloses a very comfortable state of worldly affairs. No grave stones, however, disclose their resting place. Their children were as follows:

7. i. JOHN, bapt. 29th Dec., 1631, in England; lived at No. Beverly; d. 11th Oct., 1711, aged 80.
8. ii. MARY, b. 1632; m. 1653, Zechary Herrick; d. 18th Aug., 1710.
9. iii. SARAH, bapt. 1644; d. 1726; m. (Peter Woodberry, b. 1640, d. 1704).
- 10. iv. RICHARD, b. 1643; lived at Wenham; d. 13th April, 1705, aged 63.
11. v. SAMUEL, b. 1645; lived at Ipswich; d. 4th Dec., 1705.
12. vi. EDWARD ... lived at No. Beverly; d. 13th Feb., 1727.
13. vii. JOSEPH, b. 1651; lived at No. Beverly; d. 10th Aug., 1716, aged 65.

SECOND GENERATION.

4

Capt. JOHN' DODGE (William'), 1636-1723, married Sarah Proctor for 1st wife, 10th April, 1659; married for 2d wife, Elizabeth, widow of John Woodberry; she died 6th January, 1726, aged 94. He lived in Beverly, and owned a mill at the head of Beverly Cove. In 1710 he gave thirty-three

acres in Wenham to his grandson John, the son of John, who died about 1700; and four acres to his grand-daughter Sarah, which, in case of her death, was to go to her sister Mary. Capt. John served against the Narragansetts in 1675, was chosen Representative to the General Court in

INTRODUCTION.

DODGES IN ENGLAND.

Something may be expected in relation to our ancestors in England. We have heard considerable about a grant of arms to Peter Dodge, of Stopworth, county of Chester, in 1306, and a later patent to John Dodge, of Rotham, in the county of Kent, in 1546, in which he is declared to be descended from the Peter Dodge born in Stopworth. These patents are on record in the college of Arms, London.

In Earwaker's history of East Cheshire, 1877, vol. II, pages 108-9, occurs as follows:—"The Dodge family were connected with Offerton for many generations. The name at first was spelt Dogge (the g's being pronounced soft), and sometimes Doggeson. One of the earliest references to them is the record of a very curious grant of arms, which was granted to Peter Dodge, of Stockport, so early as the 31th Edward I., 1306. From this date down to the end of the last century I have met with a large number of references to this family, chiefly in connection with Stockport and Offerton, and their names are frequently found in the Stockport registers, and also in those of Cheadle, Marple, etc. In 1384-5 is mention of Robert, son of Robert Doggeson, and in 1390 of William, his son, holding lands in Stockport. In 1422-3 William Doggeson, Stockport, had lands in the Hillgate, and in 1428 he is spoken of as William Dogge, mercer, of Stockport. The name then becomes more common, and members of this family are found filling the office of Mayor of Stockport. I have a pedigree of this family going back to the fourteenth century, in my MS. collections, but it is not sufficiently verified to entitle it to be here printed. Their connection with Offerton is shown from entries in the Stockport registers as early as 1592, and in the Parish Church a black marble tablet on the south wall records the burial of "Mr. Robert Dodge, of Holliday Hill, in Offerton, interred in Offerton pew, May 7th. 1765, aged 54." "A group of houses in this township is still known as Dodge Fold, on one of which are the initials and S. D., 1742; but there are traces of an earlier building." In a foot note on page 109 of the same work: "The Charity Commissioners, in their report for Cheshire, 1839, refer to a previous return, wherein it was stated that Samuel Dodge, about 1720 gave £8 for apprenticing poor children in Offerton; and that about 1765 Robert Dodge gave land, producing 10s per annum, for teaching poor children. After many enquiries, no trace could be found of either of these charities in 1839, and the commissioners came to the conclusion that they were irretrievably lost."

In Vol. I, pp. 346-7, we find: "The following members of the Dodge family filled this office up to 1674, and it is extremely probable that during the 126 years of which there is at present no published list of names, other townsmen of this name acted in the same capacity: 1433-4, William Dodge; 1454, William Dodge; 1475, William Dodge; 1483-4, William Dodge; 1485-6, William Dodge; 1499-1500, Oliver Dodge; 1571, Oliver Dodge; and 1671, Robert Dodge. In 1812 Samuel Dodge was mayor."

In Vol. I, p. 346. "In a deed, 1512, are the names of Ralph Dodge, Nicholas Dodge and Robert Dodge, burgesses of Stockport. On page 108, same volume, in the pedigree of Thomas Winnington, of Offerton. Elizabeth^{*} Winnington (*Randle, d 1591-2, George, Richard, Nicholas, Thomas.*) m. Oliver Dodge, of Stockport. She was living 1553.

Page 348. In a warrant of 1607, "Stopport" seems to stand for Stockport.

Page 349. William Doggeson, in 1422-3, and Ralph Dodge, 1437-8, were grantees of land. Rundle Dodge in 1511 appears as lessee.

On page 350 George Dodge, in 1577, makes oath.

Page 351. "Stopworth, a town of Cheshire," seems, in 1644, to be the name for Stockport; in 1538, Stopford; and in 1545, Stopforthe.

The Stockport *Advertiser* of 14 August, 1891, quotes Ormerod's History of Cheshire, p. 838, note, but in the edition of 1819 the note is not found. The quotation refers to the grant of Arms to Peter Dodge in 1306. It says "a family named Dodge held a small property in Offerton in the reign of Elizabeth, and were of Holliday Hill, in the same township, in the middle of last century. Dodge Fold is the name of a hamlet in Offerton, having acquired its name from some yeomen of the family."

Hence there is no doubt about Stockport, in the county of Chester, being the seat of a long list of Dodges who have been known there for nearly or quite 600 years. It is difficult to assign a limit to the probable descendants of Peter Dodge.

In Earwaker's "East Cheshire," before quoted, p. 231, William Dodge [prob. of Stockport] m. 26 August, 1639; Margaret Heginbotham; p. 410, Elizabeth, wife of Robert Dodge, Sen., Alderman, 27 March, 1704, was buried; p. 470; Robert Dodge, of Swyndells, gent., was juror 25 January, 1624; p. 411. 12 April, 1722, Samuel Dodge, of Offerton, yeoman, was buried at his house; p. 465, William Dodge is mentioned in 1408. In "Marriage Licenses by the Bishop of London," Vol. I, p. 17, John Dodge, of Christ Church, Newgate, and Agnes Goodwyne, of St. Margarets, Westminster, at St. Margarets, aforesaid. 1 September, 1555; Vol. I, p. 28, 1520-1610, John Dodge, of the city of London, and Anne Parrett, widow, of St. Clement Danes, were granted a general license 22 July, 1564.

In Berry's Genealogies of Kent, 1830. Francis Champney, son of Sir John Champney, who d. 1556, m. Mary, dau. of Edward Dodge, of Wrotham and died without issue. Perhaps the most tangible evidence that the Dodges of Essex county, Mass., are descended from Peter Dodge, of Stopworth, Cheshire, is to be found in a letter from the poet Tupper to Robert Dodge, of New York, in 1847, while

the latter believed he was descended from William or Richard Dodge. Robert Dodge was b. in N. Y., 15 Dec., 1820, and is author of "Tristram Dodge and his Descendants."

Martin Farquar Tupper, D. C. L., was b. in London in 1810, educated at the Chester House and Christ Church, Oxford, where he grad. in 1831, and was admitted to the bar at Lincoln's, Inn. He is the author of about 35 volumes; one of the most famous and most criticized was "Proverbial Philosophy." 1846.

[Copy.]

ALBURY NEAR GUILFORD, SURREY, ENGLAND.
October 14th, 1847

My DEAR DODGE:—

Before I answer your kind letter just received; I will descant on the interesting topic of your Coat Armor; and here I have to congratulate you on a matter always pleasing to an intellectual and high minded man; the undoubted antiquity and gentle blood of which you can boast.

Long before Virginia was christened; aye, long before Columbus found out your western world, your goodly ancestry were of honorable station in the dear "Old Land" and gladdened Norfolk and Kent and Cheshire with all the hospitality of good old English gentlemen, all of the olden time.

Now let me tell you that this is a point of respectability which many an ennobled man cannot boast, and I think it is one too, which gives secret satisfaction, even to a republican nature.

My heraldic friend has been able to collect this much about your Coat Armor and ancestry, and he tells me that on your return you can have as copious extract as you please, with an authorized drawing of your Arms for a trifling fee. I send you a sketch of your true Coat. and extract from my friend's note the following: "In the Herald College a manuscript volume of the time of Charles 2d. has the following entry:

DODGE, (Cheshire.)

Barry of 6 or and sa: on a pale gule: a woman's dug distilling milk proper. The above is the only record or allusion to the "Weeping Eye" and it is supposed to have arisen from ill done or defective emblazonment, which has mistaken the breast for the eye.

"In the College Books we find the second Coat granted to Peter Dodge, Stopworth, Cheshire temp: Edward 1st., the crest being a demi Sea Lion. These arms are repeated in three different MS. volumes in the College Library; once in pen and ink and twice in colors; with one is a notice of three generations of Dodges, with another. where the arms of Houghton and Dodge are in juxtaposition, is a record of the marriage of John Houghton, Alderman, and Sheriff of London to one of the Dodges."

Some of these days when you return, the thing will be worth looking into. Possibly you continue both Coats, but "Rouge Dragon" considers that your legitimate one is as within (Cheshire).

But enough; you will think me unphilosophic in having dwelt so long upon this, but I knew it would interest you.

Yours very sincerely,

Signed, MARTIN F. TUPPER.

MR. ROBERT DODGE,
Care HON. H. STILES,
Charge D'Affaires, Vienna.

- i. MARY¹ HERRICK, b. 1st Oct., 1654; m. John Batchelder, 14th Aug., 1673.
- ii. ELIZABETH¹ HERRICK, b. 2d March, 1657; m. Samuel Stone, 11th March, 1684.
- iii. HENRY¹ HERRICK, b. 25th March, 1659; d. an infant.
- iv. SARAH¹ HERRICK, b. October, 1662; m. Samuel Morgan, 22d Dec., 1692.
- v. MARTHA¹ HERRICK, b. August, 1665.
- vi. HANNAH¹ HERRICK, bapt. 19th Sept., 1669; m. Jonathan Stone.
- vii. HENRY¹ HERRICK, bapt. 25th Aug., 1672.
- viii. ABIGAIL¹ HERRICK, bapt. 10th May, 1674.

9

SARAH² DODGE (*Richard¹*), born 1644; died 11th September, 1726; married Peter² Woodbury; baptized September, 1640. Freeman 29th April 1668. Representative 1689 and 1691. Deacon at Beverly. Lived on his father's estate. Left property—£969. The house they lived in stands in Dodge Row, and has been in continuous possession of the male line of the Woodbury family till the present time. Peter² Woodbury had married Abigail Batchelder in September, 1665, and by her had a son:

- i. PETER, b. 12th Dec., 1665; m. 18th November, 1692, Mary¹ Dodge (*Edward², Richard¹*).

The mother, Abigail, died, and Peter² married in July, 1667, Sarah Dodge, as above. Their children were:

- ii. SARAH¹ WOODBURY, b. 12th Dec., 1668; m. 26th Feb. 1689, Jonathan Rayment.
- iii. ABIGAIL¹ WOODBURY, b. 13th April, 1671; m. 9th Aug., 1694, John Sampson.
- iv. ANNA¹ WOODBURY, bapt. 24th May, 1674; m. 29th Nov., 1694, John Herrick; d. aged 95.
- v. MARTHA¹ WOODBURY, bapt. 29th May, 1677; m. 31st March, 1693, Ichabod Browne.
- vi. JERUSHA¹ WOODBURY, bapt. 8th Feb., 1680; m. 28th March, 1698, George Rayment.
- vii. JOSIAH¹ WOODBURY, b. 15th June, 1682; m. 29th April, 1708, Lydia Herrick. He was gr. gr. grandfather of Hon. Levi Woodbury.
- viii. REBECCA¹ WOODBURY, b. 25th Dec., 1684.
- ix. PRISCILLA¹ WOODBURY, bapt. 31st July, 1687; m. 15th Jan., 1706, Richard Ober. *2d. Aug. 1729, 3rd. June 1729*

10

✓ RICHARD¹ DODGE (*Richard¹*) was born in 1643 in Beverly; died 13 April, 1705, at Wenham; married 23d February, 1667, Mary Eaton, born 1641; died 28th November, 1716, aged 75. Was a farmer and lived in south part of Wenham. "The old Wenham line was by Longham brook North of Longham bridge by Richard Dodge's." He owned a large farm in Ipswich; which he subsequently gave to his eldest son, Richard. He also had land near Chibocco

Chibocco

Lake in Ipswich. He owned a cider mill and press, and from the careful provision for its use, which he made in deeds to his sons, it is likely that they all lived in the same vicinity. About two years before his death, he divided his property among his children, giving his *negro man*, Mingo, to the eldest son. He and his wife were buried at North Beverly, where their grave-stones still remain. The children were as follows:

34. i. RICHARD,² b. 12th July, 1670; d. 7th July, 1733, at Ipswich.
- ii. MARY, b. 30th March, 1672; unm. in 1705. m. Charles Gott, of Wenham
- iii. MARTHA, bapt. 7th June, 1674; m. Dr. John Davidson, of Ipswich.

On 31st May, 1705, Richard,² Daniel, William and Mary joined in a deed of 4½ acres of marsh land in Chibocco, Ipswich, to John and Martha Davidson to carry out what they alleged was the purpose of their father.

35. iv. DANIEL, b. 28th April, 1677; grad. at Harvard College in 1700.
36. v. WILLIAM, b. 1673; m. 1699, Prudence Fairfield.

11

SAMUEL² DODGE (*Richard*¹), born in Beverly, 1645; per g. s. died 4th December, 1705; had wife Mary, dau. of Thomas Parker, of Reading. The wife died 6th August, 1717, aged 73. Grave-stones in cemetery, Dodge Row. Was a farmer and lived in Ipswich. He left a will, dated 26th June, 1705, proved 24th December, 1705. Inventory amounted to £1051 13s. The will gives "to my wife Mary half my personal estate and the use of the other till my youngest son become 21 years." To his sons, Joseph, Antipas, Jabez, Parker and Samuel he gave his lands, to Joseph certain lands at Brown's Hill and the house he then lived in, and to Antipas the house he lived in. The children were:

- i. SAMUEL,³ b. 22d Jan., 1668, in Ipswich; died soon.
37. ii. JOSEPH, b. 14th Feb., 1670; m. Marth White, Wenham.
38. iii. ANNANIAH, b. 9th Jan., 1672; became a tailor in Boston.
- iv. ANN, ANNE or ANNAH, b. 20th Dec., 1674; m. John Edwards.
39. v. ANTIPAS, b. 7th Sept., 1677; m. Joanna Low in 1699.
- vi. MARY, b. 6th June, 1680; m. Rice Knowlton. See will.
- vii. AMY (Ame, on g. s.), b. 27th Aug., 1682; d. 1719. By will, 1705, she received £14, in cattle and other sums, and £40 thereafter.
- viii. DEBORAH, b. April, 1683. By will she received the same as Amy.
40. ix. JABEZ or JABESH, b. 22d March, 1686; m. Margery Knowlton; lived in Ipswich, Manchester, and Shrewsbury where he died October, 1774.
41. x. PARKER, m. Elizabeth and Mary Choate; lived in Ipswich; d. Sept., 1742.
42. xi. SAMUEL, b. 11th Dec., 1692; m. Susannah Bishop.

- i. HANNAH, b. 7 July, 1699; d. 19 April, 1704.
- 105. ii. ANDREW, b. 26 Nov., 1703. Removed to Windham, Ct.
- 106. iii. DANIEL, b. 16 Aug., 1705; probably died in Beverly, 1740, leaving a small estate to be inherited by his brothers and sisters. He was a carpenter.
- 107. iv. THOMAS, b. 12 Feb., 1707-8; d. in Hamilton, 29 Aug., 1754.
- 108. v. SARAH, b. 18 April, 1710; m. Francis (*Jonathan, John, William*) Dodge, 19 Feb., 1729-30, and removed to Brookfield, Mass., about 1734 or 1735.
- 109. vi. BARTHOLOMEW, b. 11 April, 1712; m. Margaret Cleaves of Beverly, 10 April, 1742.
- 110. vii. HANNAH, b. 8 Sept., 1714; m. Solomon Dodge of Topsfield, 1742.
- 111. viii. AMOS, b. 20 Aug., 1717; m. Hannah Green of Salem, 9 Oct., 1751.

34

RICHARD¹ (*Richard*,² *Richard*), b. in Wenham, 12 July, 1670; d. in Ipswich, 7 July [June], 1739. Was a prosperous farmer of Ipswich, where he settled about the time of his marriage. He m. 16 November, 1694, Martha, dau. of Dea. Thos. Low, of Chebacco, in Ipswich. She died at the age of 68 years, 9 mos., but the date on her g. s. is illegible. They were both buried in the old cemetery on Dodge Row. December 1, 1703, little more than a year before his father's death, the father deeded to this son "the house, barn and outhousing in Ipswich which said Richard dwells in; also that farm on which it stands, viz., 100 acres which I bought of Mr. Hincksman, excepting just twenty acres to be cut off from the western end of said land by a line extending from the river on the northern side of said land, southerly, parallel to the line dividing said land and from White's land; also six or seven acres of low marsh that has been in his occupation for divers years, being part of what I purchased of James Burnam, of Ipswich; also so much as is bounded on east side by widow Fellows' marsh, south by creek, west by Lieut. Ingall's, and north by my brother, Samuel Dodge's, marsh. Also one third part of upper marsh I bought of Mr. Wade; also one third part of one acre I bought of Mr. Wise; also the privilege of grinding apples at my mill, not injuring my sons, Daniel and William, of making their cider; also the right of passage through my cow pasture; also my negro man, Mingo." Signed, Dec. 1st, 1703. Acknowledged, March 18, 1703-4, before Robert Hale, justice of the peace. Vol. 19 of Essex Deeds, page 120. This was a good start in life. His will was dated 5 July, 1734, proved, 18 June, 1739. Their children were:

- 112. i. MARTHA,⁴ b. 29 May, 1696; d. at Beverly 5 Oct., 1721. She m. Rev. John Conant, son of John and Bethiah Conant, b. 7 July, 1686.
- ii. NATHANIEL,⁴ b. 8 Oct., 1693; d. young.
- 113. iii. LUCY,⁴ b. 31 May, 1700; m. Daniel³ Conant 23 Jan'y, 1716-17.
- iv. NATHANIEL, b. 1 Dec., 1701, probably d. young.
- 114. v. MARGARET, b. 2 Sept., 1702.
- 115. vi. BARNABAS, b. 1706 or 7; d. 11 Oct., 1739, in 33d year; Dodge Row Cemetery.

116. vii. PAUL, b. 1709-10; d. 3 Jan'y, 1773, in 61th year; Hamilton Cemetery.
 117. viii. RICHARD, b. in Ipswich; m. Sarah TUTTLE; d. in Sutton.

35

DANIEL' (*Richard,*² *Richard'*), b. at Wenham, 26 April, 1677, where he d. 30 April, 1740. He married Joanna Burnham, 20 June, 1706. Of his early life it is only known that he graduated at Harvard College in 1700, being the first graduate by the name of Dodge in New England. In January, 1702-3 he was engaged as a teacher at Beverly and again in Sept., 1706. In 1715, he was chosen school-master of Reading for 3 years at 30 pounds per year. In 1703, Dec. 1st, his father, Richard,² by deed of gift (v. 19 p. 3) conveyed to his son Daniel Dodge of Wenham, clerk, "my now dwelling house and the dwelling house standing "in the same yard with it, my cyder mill, outhousing, "barns, together with my homestead lot in Wenham, being by estimation 50 acres more or less. Also all that "30 acres I bought of Capt. Wm. Dixey of Beverly and all "that 12 acres, more or less, of meadow, I bought of "brother John Dodge, lying southerly of Long Ham "meadow." Also all my piece of meadow in said Long Ham, bordering on the aforementioned 30 acres and extending in length from the bridge southwest of my house quite to the cross fence as it now standeth, containing 5 acres more or less. Likewise all "the Island" which I purchased of Mr. Robert Bradford of said Beverly, lying north easterly from Long Ham River and bounded on the N. E. by Town Common land of Wenham. Also 30 acres called the "Cow Pasture" in Wenham, which I bought of Nath. Waldern and Goodman Hobbs of said town. "Provided "only my son Daniel shall allow his brothers, Richard and "William right of way etc., through the "Cow Pasture" as the "path now is and same right to William over a part of the "homestead. I give said Daniel my common rights of land "in Common land of Wenham and one Common Right, "bought of Abraham Masters in Town Commonage of "Manchester. Also one-third part of all my marsh, upper "and lower, and landing marsh which be in Chebacco in Ipswich, excepting only the marsh bought "of Capt. Thomas Rayment, and that part of my marsh "near Wid. Fellow's marsh in Hogg Island marshes in "Chebacco; viz: that part which Richard has occupied for "divers years past, excepting also 4 acres of marsh in "Chebacco marshes which I bought of James Burnham in "Ipswich. Further, I give Daniel 110 trees on my 100 "acres which by deed of even date I have given to my son "William Dodge. Likewise I give Daniel my *negro boy* "and all cattle, horses, sheep, swine, money, goods and "chattels not otherwise disposed of.

- ii. JERUSHA, b. 7 March, 1738; was single in 1784; m. Paul Cunningham, of Edgecomb; she d. 20 March, 1821.
- 342. iii. BARNABAS, b. 24 Aug., 1740; m. Elizabeth Giddings, of Ipswich.
- iv. SARAH, b. 13 Jan., 1742; prob. d. young.
- 343. v. PAUL, b. 17 May, 1745; m. Sarah Dodge, 3 Oct., 1765. No. 246.
- 344. vi. HEPZIBAH, b. 2 May, 1747; m. Edmund Patch, Jr., and d. bef. 1778.
- 345. vii. HANNAH, b. —; d. before March, 1776. *Essex Deeds*, v. 136, p. 22 and 24.
- 346. viii. ANNA, b. about 1755, age 18, in March, 1773; was single in Nov., 1784, and was then living in New Castle, Me.

117

✓ RICHARD ' (Richard, Richard, Richard), probably b. in 1711 or 12 in Hamlet Parish. In a deed of division, in 1737,

Richard Dodge

Sarah Dodge

(1740)

between Barnabas, Paul and Richard, their names are placed in this order, and in 1740, after the death of Barnabas, in another deed of division, the name of Paul occurs before Richard's. Richard m. Sarah Tuttle, both of Hamlet, published 16 Aug., 1734. Barnabas had m. in

1728, and Paul in 1732, and these received from their father, deeds of one third of the farm bought of John Quarles, their deeds being dated, 3 July, 1734, but the father waited till after Richard was married before he deeded him one third of the same farm, and he did so on the 2d Oct., 1734. Richard acquired the share of Barnabas after the latter's death. 12 March, 1759, he sold his lands in Ipswich to Jacob Dodge, for £906, and same date bought of Isaac Dodge of Sutton, 100 acres in Sutton for £213. Three days later, he bought for £300, 200 acres, partly in Sutton and partly in Uxbridge; *Worcester deeds* v. 41-222, & v. 42-118. In March, 1762; he deeded to his son Rufus, carpenter and yeoman of Uxbridge, 50 acres of the above 200, and, in 1765, he sold to William Batchelor of Upton, cooper, another 50 acres of the same tract, with buildings. Besides other sales of his lands he sold to his son-in-law, Reuben Town, farmer of Sutton in 1767, 1772 and 1775, three pieces of land amounting to 69 acres. The signature of his wife, Sarah, appears last on the deed, of February, 1767, and his own appears last, in March, 1775. Before 11 April, 1777, Richard and his son-in-law, Town, were both dead, for in *Worcester deeds* v. 90-332 we find as follows: "We, Rufus Dodge and James Dodge of Gageborough, Berkshire Co., Nathaniel Dodge of Brookfield, Asa Dodge, Sarah Town, widow, Enos and Mary Buxton, all of Sutton, Thomas Dodge of Dudley, Worcester county, and all of Massachusetts, heirs to the estate of our Honored father, Richard Dodge, late of Sut-

ton, deceased,' for £200, sell to Richard Dodge, husbandman, of Sutton, 'eight ninths of all the lands and buildings' of said Richard, deceased, in Sutton, and contains 60 acres more or less, bounded east on road, south on John Wallis, W. partly on said Wallis and partly on John Burden, N. on Joseph Ellyott, Jr. and partly on John Henry Shiddle to the road first named, except about ten acres on the west side of said farm, reserved for Asa Dodge one of the said heirs." The names of the grantors are given in the covenant of warranty as follows: Rufus, Nathaniel, Asa, James and Thomas Dodge, Sarah Town and Enos and Mary Buxton, Jr. The acknowledgment by Sarah Town, 2 Dec., 1782, calls her then the wife of Samuel Wallis. The births of three children of Richard and Sarah Dodge, were found on Ipswich records before finding the above deed, as below:

Children probably b. in Ipswich:

- 347. i. RUFUS, b. 14 March, 1736; pub. to Elizabeth Dodge of Brookfield, 28 Oct., 1756; res. Gageborough, in 1777.
- 348. ii. RICHARD, b. 21 May, 1738; prob. d. young and a later child called Richard.
- 349. iii. NATHANIEL, b. 9 Dec., 1740; m. Sarah Dodge of Brookfield.
- 350. iv. ASA, —; m. Lydia Buxton, 9 Feb., 1779.
- 351. v. JAMES, —, of Gageborough, Berkshire Co.
- 352. vi. THOMAS, —, of Dudley, in 1777.
- 353. vii. SARAH, —; m. (1) Reuben Town, 7 July, 1767.
- 354. viii. MARY, —; m. Enos Buxton, 3 Jan, 1775.

See *History of Sutton, Worcester, Mass.*, 1878.

119.

DANIEL (*Daniel*,³ *Richard*,² *Richard*¹), b. 15 September, 1710; d. September, 1756, lived in Wenham till 1741, when he appears to have bought in Beverly, having three children born there from 1743 to 1749. He and his wife Jerusha, took letters from Wen. Ch. 5 April, 1752. He m. Jerusha Herrick 18 September, 1731; she died after 1749. 15th February, 1741, he bought of David Stone the Nath'l Stone homestead in Beverly, for £1,030, consisting of house, barn, 30 acres of land adjacent, and 50 acres in nine cow rights north of homestead in Rubly Hill pasture. 16th December, 1755, he deeds the east part of his house to Zachariah, his eldest son. His will, dated 24 Feb., 1756, proved 4 October, 1756, gives his wife Anna, one cow and 13s., 6s., 8d., in lieu of dower; gives Sarah, my only daughter, all the H. H. goods, which I had before my marriage to Anna, my wife, to be given her at 21, or time of her marriage, also 6s., 13s., 4d. The account of the executors shows a payment to widow of 2s., 10s., for bringing up one child nine months, 6 March, 1758, and to Mrs. Herrick £4 for same, one year and seven months (prob. grandmother). His will also mentions sons, Zachariah, Abraham, Daniel,

6250. iv. TRYPHENA, b. 15 March, 1769; m. 18 March, 1790, Lemuel Dowe.
 Ch'n: 1, *Lydia*; 2, *Mary*; 3, *Ruth*; 4, *Milton*.
 v. ISAAC, b. 1770, lived at Lempster, N. H., d. 1836.
 vi. EUNICE, b. —; m. — Cooper, had son John, late of Croydon.
 vii. LYDIA, b. —; m. Nathl. Rogers.
 viii. SARAH, b. —; m. Mr. Burnham.
 ix. LUCY.

326

ANDREW DODGE (*see p. 105*) appears to have moved from Ipswich to Woburn before September 29, 1771, with his wife, Mary, and four children, for the usual "notice" to new comers was served on them Feb. 17, 1772. Church records of Second Precinct show that Andrew, son of Andrew Dodge, was bapt. 29 Sept., 1771. Hence the date of his birth on p. 105 should read 1771 instead of 1772.

Woburn town records show that a son of Andrew Dodge died Sept. 12, 1781, 3 years old.

Andrew Dodge served in the Revolution from Woburn.

331

ELEANOR DODGE and Joseph Giddings, both of Ipswich, were pub. 9 Jan., 1768. They were ad. to church 2d precinct, Woburn, 26 May, 1771. He is said to have served in the Revolution from Woburn.

Children born in Woburn:

- i. ELEANOR, bapt. 16 June, 1771.
- ii. HANNAH, bapt. 7 March, 1773.
- iii. JOSEPH, bapt. 5 Feb., 1775.
- iv. THOMAS, bapt. 6 April, 1777.
- v. ISAAC, bapt. 3 Oct., 1779.
- vi. LUKE, bapt. 3 Oct., 1779.
- vii. JOHN, bapt. 2 Oct., 1785.
- viii. ELIZABETH, bapt. 2 Oct., 1785.

328

✓ RICHARD^s DODGE. In addition to what is stated on page 110, it is shown by the record of deeds in Cheshire county, N. H., that Richard and Stephen Dodge of Charlton, Mass. (probably father and son), bought 24 Aug., 1796, of Robert Duncan, gentleman, of New Grantham, N. H., for 250 dollars, lot 32, first division of New Grantham, being 100 acres, the right of Theodore Atkinson. August 28, 1802, Richard and Stephen Dodge of New Grantham sold for 90 dollars to Richard Dodge, Jr., of New G. one half of lot 32 as above, and on the same date Richard Dodge, Jr., for 8 dollars, gave a life lease to Richard Dodge for twenty acres, which appears to

In *Mass. Historical Society Proceedings*, vol. 15, p. 86, among officers commissioned 19 May, 1775, by the Mass. congress, in the regiment of which Samuel Gerrish was Colonel, one company had Richard Dodge, Captain. Robert Dodge, 1st Lieut., and Paul Dodge, 2d Lieut. Richard, Robert and Paul were brothers-in-law. Further evidences of his military service will probably come to light when the Mass. Archives are published. He purchased a large tract of land in Newcastle in 1778; he built a large house which is still occupied by his descendants. The farm was divided between his sons, David, Isaac and Washington; the latter had the portion occupied by the house. Children:

- 646. i. DAVID, b. 1766, in Ipswich; d. in Newcastle Feb., 1845; m. (1) Miss Tufts; (2) Miss Huston; (3) Miss Johnson.
- 647. ii. ISAAC, b. 1769; d. 10 Dec., 1847, in Newcastle.
- 648. iii. ASA, b. —; m. Rhoda Dodge, (335-xiii), res. Newcastle; was a sailor; lost at sea, 1796. 1 child, Almira.
- iv. LOIS, —; m. John Perkins, Nobleboro, Me.
- 649. v. WASHINGTON, b. 6 March, 1778; m. Nancy Perkins.

348

✓ RICHARD¹ (*Richard*,¹ *Richard*,² *Richard*,² *Richard*¹). b. at Ipswich, Hamlet, Mass., prob. 1750 or 1752; d. 25 Nov., 1833, aged about 83; m. 19 July, 1770, Lois Towne of Sutton, who d. 7 or 9 Sept., 1812, aged 60. *See Gen. Register*, vol. 37, p. 88, where it is stated that he and his wife were buried at Croydon, N. H., and their grave stones give his age as 81 years, 8 months. In 1776 he bought of his brothers and sisters their interest in his father's estate in Sutton, Mass., and perhaps lived on it until he went to Croydon, N. H., to live with one of his sons. There was, however, a mortgage made in 1787, by Richard Dodge and his wife Lois, of Charlton, of 89 acres in Charlton, which was discharged in 1810. Children, born in Sutton, Mass.:

- ✓ 650. i. ANANIAH,¹ b. 23 Nov., 1770; d. 26 Dec., 1846, in Palmer, Mass.
- 651. ii. LEVI, b. 22 June, 1772; d. 8 Dec., 1835.
- 652. iii. STEPHEN, b. 24 Oct., 1774.
- 653. iv. RICHARD, b. 2 March, 1779; d. 11 May, 1872.
- 654. v. SIMON, b. 22 Feb., 1781; d. 23 Sept., 1817; son, James S.
- vi. LOIS, b. 24 Aug, 1783; d. 13 Sept., 1872.
- 655. vii. JOHN, b. 11 Dec., 1785.
- 656. viii. PARLY, b. 24 March, 1788.
- ix. PATTY, b. 10 Aug., 1790.
- 657. x. AMASA, b. 15 Oct., 1792.
- 658. xi. JOSHUA, b. 23 Nov., 1795; living in 1875.

349

NATHANIEL¹ (*Richard*,¹ *Richard*,² *Rich.*,² *Rich.*¹), b. 9 December, 1740, at Ipswich, and d. at N. Brookfield, Mass., 18 February, 1813. Was a farmer; m. 22 February, 1763, Sarah, dau. of Francis¹ DODGE (*Jonathan*,¹ *John*,² *William*¹),

have been reconveyed to Richard Dodge, Jr., on the 5th February, 1820, for 150 dollars. On the last occasion the town was called Grantham.

Mr. Ellis Dodge now living at Palmer, Mass. (*see p. 168 "D. F."*), says his grandfather, Richard, moved to Grantham in 1798 and that the rest of his sons and daughters followed him the next year, with their families and two unmarried sisters of his mother, Keziah (Ellis), viz., Dorothy and Olive Ellis. They moved with ox teams about 125 miles through the wilderness to an unbroken tract, where everything was to be done. Levi built near his father on his father's land, and his father remained on the same farm till his death. Richard and his two wives were buried in Grantham (or Croydon). The name of his second wife has not yet been ascertained.

352

THOMAS⁵ DODGE (*Richard,⁴ Richard, Richard, Richard*), b. probably in Sutton, Mass., in 1759, d. in Barre, Vt., 11 August, 1827, age 68 years, g. s. in Farwell Burying Ground. His first wife, Abigail, d. in Barre, 22 Feb., 1802, age 40, g. s. He m. (2), 10 July, 1802, Abigail Harper of Barre, b. at Brookfield, Mass., 11 Apr., 1761, who d. 22 March, 1804, age 43, per g. s. He m. (3), pub. 5 April, 1807, Sarah Worth of Middlesex, who d. at Barre, 19 Nov., 1862, age 92 years, per g. s. His farm was on the road from Barre to Montpelier, about one mile below what is now N. Barre Station. Their children were, according to Barre records:

- 663b. i. JARED, b. at Dudley, Mass., 18 June, 1779; d. 1 March, 1859.
- ii. PHEBE, b. at Sturbridge, Mass., 27 March, 1781; m. Nath'l Wiggins of Montpelier, 7 March, 1802.
- 663d. iii. RICHARD, b. at Dudley, Mass., 19 May, 1783.
- iv. SALLY, b. at Charlton, Mass., 6 Sept., 1785.
- v. ABIGAIL, b. at Charlton, Mass., 27 Oct., 1787; d. 11 Jan., 1790.
- 663f. vi. THOMAS, b. at Norwich, Conn., 17 Aug., 1789; d. 31 March, 1867.
- 663g. vii. RUFUS, b. at Norwich, Conn., 1 Jan., 1791; d. 2 June, 1804, "age 12," g. s.
- 663h. viii. PHINEAS, b. at Norwich, Conn., 31 Dec., 1792; s. p.; prob. d. Nov., 1841. He appears to have owned a "white two-story store" in Montpelier from 1818 to 1825. By his will, dated 1 March, 1833, presented in court 27 Oct., 1841, he was called "late of Monroe" [now Woodbury, Washington Co., Vt.]. He appointed his wife, Charlotte, executrix, but she declined to serve, and D. P. Thompson, of Montpelier, was appointed administrator. He probably left no children, because he "willed" all his personal property to his wife and the use of his real estate which, was to descend, after her death, to his brothers and sisters.
- ix. ELEAZER, b. in Barre, Vt., 26 Jan., 1802; d. 29 Oct., 1822, in his 21st year, but he was engaged in a brisk boot and shoe

- iv. ASA, b. 9 or 15 Nov., 1802; graduated at Bowdoin college in 1827; M. D., 1831. In 1834 went to Jerusalem as missionary to Syria, and d. 28 Jan., 1835, aged 33 years. He m. Martha W. Merrill of Portland, Me.
- v. RACHEL, b., 1805; d. 1828; unmarried.
- vi. SARAH, b. 1807; m. Gen. James Varney; d. 1842.
- vii. WILLIAM, b. 1809; d. 6 Sept., 1847; m. Elizabeth Tilton of Brunswick.
- viii. JOHN CALVIN, b. 6 Nov., 1810; d. 17 July, 1890.

649

WASHINGTON* (*Paul,* Paul,* Richard,* Richard,* Richard**), b. 6 March, 1778; in Newcastle, Me., where he lived till his death, 29 September, 1855. He was a farmer and cooper, and for many years an honored deacon of the Congregational church. He m. 13 December, 1802, Nancy Perkins, b. at Newcastle, 6 March, 1783 and d. 9 May, 1867. She was a dau. of Abner Perkins, a farmer of Newcastle. Their children all settled in that part of Maine, except Mrs. Joshua (Caroline) Blenn, who died in California in 1858. All were comfortably situated and looked upon as among the best people. Children, all b. at Newcastle:

- i. OLIVER, b. 7 Feb., 1804; d. 6 Oct., 1833; m. Martha Wade of Newcastle, May, 1826.
- ii. MARY, b. 12 March, 1806; d. 12 March, 1885; m. Robert Bickford of Dresden, Me., Oct., 1831.
- 965. iii. ELIZA, b. 5 March, 1808; m. Samuel Wilson.
- iv. EMILY, b. 17 Nov., 1810; d. 28 Jan., 1835; m. Wm. Kenniston, 1833.
- 966. v. RICHARD, b. 12 April, 1814; m. Maria Dodge.
- vi. NANCY, b. 23 Aug., 1815; d. 21 Feb., 1833.
- vii. NEWELL ATWOOD, b. 16 June, 1820; d. 18 April, 1877; m. Thirza Ann Gond of Dresden, in Alna, Jan., 1846.
- viii. CAROLINE BAILEY, b. 27 Jan., 1824; d. 16 Aug., 1858; m. Joshua Blenn of Dresden, Dec., 1842.
- 967. ix. CORDELIA GARDINER, b. 22 May, 1825; m. Wm. Heath, 1846. Only two of the above now living.

650

ANANIAH* (*Richard,* Richard,* Richard,* Richard,* Richard**), b. in Sutton, 23 November, 1770; d. 26 December, 1846, at Palmer, aged 76; m. Elizabeth Janes, b. 29 August, 1772, at Brimfield, Hampshire Co., Mass.; d. 15 June, 1830, at Swanville, Me., aged 58. He was a shoemaker. Children:

- 968. i. WILLIAM JANES, b. 26 Feb., 1795, at N. Adams, Mass.
- ii. SUSAN, b. 23 Oct., 1796, at N. Adams; d. 7 Aug., 1856, at Palmer.
- 969. iii. CHENEY, b. 21 Jan., 1799, at Croydon, Cheshire Co., N. H.; d. 14 Aug. 1879, at Plymouth, Mass.
- iv. MARTHA, b. 16 June, 1801, at Grantham, N. H., living at North Searsport, Me., in 1893.
- v. ELIZABETH, b. 14 Nov., 1803, at Cornish, N. H.; d. 4 Dec., 1825, at Palmer, Mass.
- vi. ANANIAH, b. 17 Aug., 1806, at Cambridge, Mass.; d. 27 Oct., 1875, at Neutral City, Kans.

966

RICHARD' (*Washington, * Paul, * Paul, * Richard, * Richard, * Richard*'), b. in Newcastle, Me., 12 April, 1814, where he d. 29 November, 1849. He was a farmer and brickmaker, and m. at Edgecomb, November, 1837, Maria Dodge, dau. of Ebenezer and Sarah (Trask) Dodge of E. She was b. at E., 16 June, 1816, and d. at E. Boston, 16 February, 1886. Children:

- i. HELEN MARIA, b. 16 Aug., 1839, at Newcastle, Me.; m. (1) 13 Aug., 1863, John L. Foster; m. (2) 26 Oct., 1889, Guy M. Ford; res. Whitefield, Me.
- ii. EDWIN SEABURY, b. 22 Oct., 1841; m. 30 June, 1864, Abbie Clifford; res. 71 Livingston street, East Boston.

967

CORDELIA G.' (*Washington, * Paul, * Paul, * Richard, * Richard, * Richard*'), b. at Newcastle, Me., 22 May, 1825; m. 16 April, 1846, William Heath, b. in Jefferson, 18 January, 1816, and d. at Newcastle, 5 February, 1892. The homestead built by Col. Paul in 1778, descended from Washington Dodge to his youngest daughter, Cordelia G. The house stands on a level piece of land; to the northwest rises a steep hill whose top commands a charming view; to the southeast the ground slopes to the banks of the Damariscotta river, about a half mile wide at this point. Travelers say that nowhere in Maine are to be found more lovely views than along the Damariscotta river. Mr. Heath was son of Samuel Heath, a farmer of Jefferson in the same county, and was himself a farmer and ship-carpenter. Their children, all born in Newcastle, were:

- i. EMMA FRANCES HEATH, b. 14 May, 1847; d. 15 June, 1893; m. Wm. F. Morgan, 13 May, 1872, and (2) Frederic A. Forsuith, Oct., 1890.
- ii. EDWARD CUTTER HEATH, b. 26 Nov., 1848; d. 19 Oct., 1896.
- iii. RICHARD DODGE HEATH, b. 20 Feb., 1850; m. Ella C. Kenney of Boston, 20 Oct., 1880.
- iv. ANGIE HARVENA HEATH, b. 22 Aug., 1858; lives with her mother.
- v. HARVEY ANGELO HEATH, b. 5 Jan., 1863; m. Annie B. Feltes of Bristol, 6 Oct., 1866; res. at Damariscotta, Me.
- vi. ROBERT BICKFORD HEATH, b. 29 April, 1867; d. 19 Aug., 1867.

968

WILLIAM J.' (*Ananiah, * Richard, * Richard, * Richard, * Richard, * Richard*'), b. at N. Adams, Mass., 26 February, 1793; d. at Searsport, Me., 27 April, 1888, aged 93 y., 2 mo., 1 d. He was a tanner and shoemaker at Prospect, Me. Served as drummer in Massachusetts infantry, war of 1812. Was a member of the Methodist church 60 years. He m. 2 February, 1813, at Prospect, Me., Elizabeth Colcord, b. at Tamworth, N. H., 10 July, 1798. She d. at Searsport, Me.,

2 December, 1877. Neither was m. but once. Children, b. at Prospect, Me.:

- 1159. i. AMASA, T. C.,³ b. 5 Nov., 1816; m. (1) 18 April, 1839, Margaret Towle. He is claim agent in Washington, D. C.
- ii. WILLIAM, b. 27 Sept., 1818; m. Adeline Dodge.
- iii. FLAVILLA JAMES, b. 15 Nov., 1820; d. 10 March, 1862; m. twice (1) Wm. H. McGlathry, Nov., 1840; (2) Hosea B. Goodell, 2 Sept., 1857; all dead.
- iv. STEPHEN L., b. 24 March, 1823; m. (1) Almira Stearns, 1846, who d. 1885; m. (2) Helen Seavy. Lives at Belfast, Me.
- v. ELIZABETH, b. 27 June, 1825; d. 17 July, 1875; m. (1) John L. Sanders, 1846; (2) A. Southworth; all dead.
- vi. REBECCA ANN, b. 1 July, 1827; d. 4 Sept., 1828.
- vii. SUSAN R., b. 23 Sept., 1829; d. 15 Nov., 1857; m. Charles McGlathry, 23 Jan., 1850; both dead.
- viii. PERSIS ANN, b. 11 Dec., 1831; m. (1) Wm. Mugridge, 6 Nov., 1852; m. (2) Charles O. Fernald, 23 Sept., 1887.
- ix. DAVID COLCORD, b. 20 March, 1834; d. 14 June, 1837.
- 1160. x. MARY HESTER, b. 20 May, 1836; m. Levi Rosenbaum, 26 Sept., 1855; res. Washington, D. C.
- xi. ASAPH, b. 9 July, 1838; m. Laura Pentz, 4 Oct., 1865; res. Washington, D. C.
- xii. ADALINE, b. 21 Aug., 1840; d. 3 Dec., 1892; unm.
- 1162. xiii. MARCUS N., b. 24 Dec., 1842; d. 19 Feb., 1891; m. Nancy Chapman, 17 April, 1867.
- xiv. WESLEY, O., b. 10 Dec., 1845; res. Minneapolis, Minn.

970

LEWIS WILLIAMS' (*Ananiah*,⁶ *Richard*,⁵ *Richard*,⁴ *Richard*,³ *Richard*,² *Richard*¹), b. 16 May, 1811, at Swanville, Hancock Co., Me.; d. at Grafton, Mass., 3 March, 1889. Was a currier and leather dealer in Grafton, where he acquired a large property and was a leading citizen. He m. 16 May, 1838, Martha Haven Adams, dau. of Joseph Adams, farmer and pump-maker, Grafton. She was b. 6 March, 1816, and is living 1893. Children, all b. in Grafton:

- i. MARTHA ELIZA, b. 25 April, 1841; d. 20 April, 1870; m. Rev. Geo. L. Biscoe, now of Waverly, Neb.
- ii. JOSEPH ADAMS, b. 21 April, 1846; m. 20 Jan., 1874, Ella G. Wood, of Pawtucket, R. I. Children: 1, *Irring Bigelow*, b. 5 Jan., 1876; 2, *Kathrina A.*, b. 22 Feb., 1879; 3, *Louise Whitney*, b. 5 March, 1881; 4, *Rachel Alice*, b. 7 May, 1886.
- iii. WILLIAM H., b. 15 May 1849; d. 1850.
- iv. LUCY M., b. 29 Feb., 1851; m. Henry M. Riggs, son of Stephen Riggs, the Indian missionary.
- v. SUSAN ELIZABETH, b. 9 Aug., 1855; m. John E. McClellan of Grafton.

976

SIMON' (*Joshua*,⁵ *Richard*,⁶ *Richard*,⁴ *Richard*,³ *Richard*,² *Richard*¹), b. in Grantham, N. H., 29 May, 1820. By occupation a carpenter and a cabinetmaker; he was a colonel in N. H. militia for many years and has been a member of the city government of Manchester, N. H., where he still lives. He m. 1 January, 1845, at Canaan, N. H.,

- xi. LEWIS RICHARD, b. 16 July, 1844, at W.; d. 15 March, 1884, insane, at Augusta, Me.
- xii. JOSEPH CLARENCE, b. 17 Aug., 1847, at W.; d. 25 Dec., 1880, Kansas City.

972

FREEMAN⁷ (*Levi,⁸ Richard,⁹ R.,⁴ R., R., Richard*), see pp. 168 and 409, was b. 17 February, 1809, at Croydon, N. H. He m. 24 October, 1830, Candace Stockwell of Croydon, dau. of Charles and Caroline (Bellows) Stockwell, and granddau. of David and Abial (Giles) Stockwell. He and his wife joined the First Congregational church of Troy, N. Y., in 1840. While a resident of Palmer, Mass., he had a class of young men in the Congregational church, by whom he was presented with a beautiful steel engraving of "The Last Supper," much prized by his son. They celebrated their golden wedding, 24 Oct., 1880. He died 15 January, 1886, and was buried at Palmer, his funeral being in charge of the Free Masons of Thomas Lodge. Children:

- 1163*a*. i. FRANCES, b. 16 July, 1835, at Wilmot, N. H. She m. at Palmer, 14 Sept., 1854, Geo. M. Stacy. Ch'n: 1, *Alson M. Stacy*, b. at P., 5 May, 1859; m. 13 June, 1883, at South Bend, Ind., Mary G. Spencer. 1 child, Le Roy Stacy, b. in New London, Conn., 7 Dec., 1884; 2, *Clara Stacy*, b. at P. 20 Dec., 1857; m. 15 Oct., 1885, at New London, Conn., Will. Pendleton; 1 child, Harold Dodge Pendleton, b. at New London, 29 Dec., 1890.
- d* 1163*a*. ii. FREEMAN MORGAN, b. 22 Aug., 1840, at Milton, Saratoga Co., N. Y.

974c

ELLIS⁷ DODGE (*Levi,⁸ Richard,⁹ Richard,⁴ Richard, Richard, Richard*), born at Croydon, N. H., 7 May, 1825, was left by the death of his father in December, 1835, without means of support and had to go to the home of his sister, Mrs. John Stockwell at Rumney, N. H. Before going he had to earn a pair of shoes, and in October, 1836, with 50 cents in his pocket for expenses, he started for Rumney on foot. The lunch his mother had provided and his scanty clothes were in a pack on his shoulder and he walked about 25 miles the first day without serious difficulty. The seriousness of his journey began to dawn upon him the next morning while eating his breakfast by the roadside, but he pushed on as well as he could and about the middle of the afternoon, a lady, noticing him as he passed, called to him to stop and made numerous friendly inquiries, after which she offered him a bowl of bread and milk which revived his strength and spirits and enabled him to complete his journey of 50 miles about 7 P. M. After living

with his brother-in-law three years he engaged with a neighboring farmer for a year at \$25, and to clothe himself. In December, 1840, his sister, Adeline, having just married William Dodge of Palmer, Mass., and visiting Rumney on their wedding trip, took him home with them to learn the carpenter's trade of his brother-in-law. He staid there till August, 1845, when he went to Troy, N. Y., and worked at his trade till 1 November, 1849. He then commenced work on the Rens. & Saratoga R. R., and after a year was made master car builder. After a few years he took the same position on the Albany, Northern R. R., at Albany. Next he worked for the Troy & Boston, at Troy, and in November, 1855, went to Brooklyn as master car builder for the Brooklyn City street railway company, where he remained till 1860, when he returned to Troy and for some years was employed in that vicinity in his former capacity. So that from 1849 till 1886 he was employed in connection with railroads, while in the mean time he took out four patents, viz.: on a wagon wheel hub, on hames for harness, on a self acting switch for street railway, and on an insulator chip.

About 1886 he came to Palmer and engaged in building until about 1892, when he went to Troy to build two miles of street railway from Waterford to Cohoes, completing a circuit. He now lives at Palmer.

He married 30 May, 1846, at Troy, N. Y., Ellen Jane Cook, born at Troy, 15 Aug., 1820, and died at Lansingburg, 10 Oct., 1861. Her mother was a Waters, b. in Mansfield, Ct., 3 August, 1785, and died at Troy, 6 Nov., 1879. He m. (2) 11 Sept., 1862, in Lansingburg, N. Y., Edna Louise Wager, b. in L. 15 Jan., 1848, her father and grandfather having been born in Brunswick, Rens. Co., N. Y. An uncle of Mrs. Edna L. Dodge is still living at Lansingburg, well and hearty at the age of 105 years. No children.

974d

AZEL DUNBAR⁷ (*Stephen P.*⁶ *Richard*,⁵ *Richard*,⁴ *Richard*,³ *Richard*,² *Richard*), b. 13 November, 1809, at Malone, N. Y., d. 6 November, 1857, in New York. Was a stage driver. Married about 1835, Susan St. Clair, who was b. 1st June, 1814, and d. at So. Reading, Vt., 19 January, 1892. In 1865 she m. Henry Austin at So. Reading. Children:

- i. SUSAN LIVONIA, b. 5 Oct., 1836; d. 29 Aug., 1893; m. (1) Lorenzo D. Kenney. (2) James Bixby.
- ii. ESTHER LORINDA, b. 8 Nov., 1833; d. 13 March, 1870; m. Henry Allen.

1135

WILLIAM⁸ (*Wm. James,⁷ Ananiah,⁶ Richard,⁵ Richard,⁴ Richard,³ Richard,² Richard¹*), b. 27 September, 1818, at Prospect, Me. (now N. Searsport); m. 23 November, 1840, at Palmer, Mass., ADELINE⁷ DODGE, b. 2 April, 1820, at Croydon, N. H. (see Nos. 651 and 973). William is by occupation a carpenter. He served from 1862 to 1864 as captain N. Y. Vols. Has been collector of taxes, census enumerator, and is now lighthouse keeper at Sister Islands, St. Lawrence River. The above facts speak for themselves. Children:

- i. FLAVIUS OSTENILLA, b. 9 Feb., 1842, at Palmer; m. and lives in Norfolk, N. Y.; a miller.
- ii. CHARLOTTE FLAVILLA, b. 1 July, 1843, at P.; d. 25 Feb. 1845.
- iii. ELLEN JANE, b. 23 Jan., 1847, at Munson; m., res. Pooles Resort, Canada.
- iv. WILLIAM ORISON, b. 21 April, 1851, at Palmer; m., res. Alexandria Bay, N. Y.

1136

FREDERICK L.⁸ (*Samuel John,⁷ Joseph,⁶ Jabesh,⁵ Benjamin,⁴ Ebenezer,³ John,² Richard¹*), b. 9 August, 1840, at Portsmouth, N. H.; d. Sept. 11, 1891, at Detroit, Mich.; m. December 27, 1873, Prescott, Arizona, to Laura Clement, b. Sept. 10, 1848, at Cologne, Prussia, dau. of late Maj. Francois and Bertha (Baroness von Gaier) Clement, of the Prussian army. Maj. Clement d. in Berlin in 1857; his widow, Bertha, d. in Cologne in 1859. Capt. Fred. L. Dodge was an officer in the U. S. Army from 7 March, 1867, till his death. He took great interest in the genealogy of the Dodge Family and collected considerable information, that would otherwise have been lost. He did not reach the stage of bringing his material into systematic form, but by bequeathing it to the *New England Genealogical Society*, he made it available for this work. It is much to be regretted that his papers show scarcely anything personal to himself, and that even the affectionate tribute of his army friends has eluded my search. One son, viz.:

HUBERT ANTOINE Dodge, b. 23 March, 1875, at Omaha Barracks, Nebraska.

1137

DANIEL GATES⁸ DODGE, first son of Daniel⁷ and Judith, was a man of more than ordinary ability. high integrity and manly ways, of a genial and pleasant disposition; was a medical student of Dr. Aldin March and a graduate from Albany medical college. Stood at the head of his profession in the northern part of the state of New York. At one time he had charge of Binghampton inebriate asylum, and was invited by members of the House of Parliament of England, traveling in this country, to visit England at

- vii. MARY, b. 10 Sept., 1808, at Prospect, Hancock Co., Me.; d. in Thorndike, Mass., 10 Sept., 1891; m. Jonathan McElwaine, who d. 17 Sept., 1879.
- 970. viii. LEWIS WILLIAMS, b. 16 May, 1811, at Swanville, Me.; d. 3 March, 1889. Was a carrier at Grafton, Mass., where he became a respected and wealthy citizen. He left a son, Joseph A. Dodge of Grafton, a man of high standing.
- ix. RICHARD TOWNE, b. 23 April, 1813, at Swanville, Me.; living.

651

✓ LEVI* (*Richard, Richard, Richard, Richard, Richard*), b. at Sutton, Mass., 22 June, 1772; d. at Croydon, N. H., 8 December, 1835. Was a blacksmith; m. Keziah Ellis, b. at Sturbridge, 15 February, 1780, and d. at Palmer, 4 February, 1845. Their children:

- i. CHARLOTTE, b. 9 June, 1796, at Sturbridge, Mass.; d. 8 Dec., 1866; m.
- ✓ ii. DWIGHT, b. 28 May, 1798, at Sturbridge, Mass.; d. 23 August, 1869; m. twice.
- iii. JEDEDIAH, b. 7 March, 1800, at Grantham, N. H.; d. 20 August, 1825; m.
- iv. LEVI, b. 17 March, 1802, at Grantham; d. 1862; m.
- v. KEZIAH, b. 27 August, 1804, at Croydon, N. H.; d. 25 March, 1875; m. twice.
- vi. JOHN, b. 17 Jan'y, 1807, at Grantham; d. 26 Feb., 1807.
- vii. FREEMAN, b. 17 Feb., 1809, at Croydon; d. 15 Jan'y, 1886.
- viii. SIMON, b. 6 July, 1811, at Croydon; d. 8 Sept., 1811.
- ix. SILAS, b. 21 Feb., 1814, at Grantham; d. 1 Oct., 1818.
- x. SAMUEL ORISON, b. 19 April, 1818, at Croydon; d. 7 Oct., 1839.
- 973. xi. ADALINE, b. 2 April, 1821, at Croydon; m. William^s Dodge (1135).
- 974. xii. ELLIS, b. 7 May, 1825, at Croydon; res. Palmer, Mass.

*to John Packard
dans l'annuaire
de la ville
(par Geo.)*

654

SIMON,* (*Richard, Richard, Richard, Richard, Richard*), b. 22 February, 1781, at Sutton, Mass., and d. at Damariscotta, Me., 23 Sept., 1817. He was a musician in the war of 1812, stationed at Castine, Me. He was a boot and shoe maker. He m. at Damariscotta, Miss Mary Turnbull, who, after the death of her husband, m. Mr. John B. Gibbs of Scotland, and had three children by him. Children of Simon Dodge:

- i. MARY, —; m. Liberty Packard of N. Bridgewater, now Brockton, Mass. Both dead.
- ii. EMELINE, —; m. Robert Hiscock. Both died in Cambridgeport, Mass.
- iii. ELEANOR, P., —; m. John Rogers. She still lives at Hopewell Hill, Albert Co., Province, N. B.
- iv. ELIZA TOWN, —; m. Avery F. Howe, at Cambridgeport. Both dead.
- 975. v. JAMES S., —; b. 1817, at Damariscotta; m. Edna Snow, of Pomfret, Vt., in 1851. Children: 1 son and 3 daus. James S., at the age of 76, still keeps a jeweler's shop and repairs watches in Chelsea, being remarkably well preserved.
- vi. HULDAH, —; d. at the age of 14.

651

✓ LEVI* (Richard,³ see p. 168, "D. F."), born 1772 at Sutton, Mass. Children:

- i. CHARLOTTE, b. 9 June, 1796; m. John Stockwell in Croydon, N. H., had 3 ch. Moved to Palmer, Mass.
- ✓ ii. DWIGHT, b. 28 May, 1798; m. at Sempronius, N. Y., a lady from Croydon, N. H. Had 7 children. He was a blacksmith, farmer and Baptist preacher. His two oldest sons, Silas and John, went to California "overland" and after making some money, returned to Far West, Mo., where the Mormons had been, before going to Nauvoo, Ill. John bought a farm in "Far West" and m. the dau. of a Mormon neighbor. Silas bought one in the town of Hamilton, Caldwell Co. Their father, Dwight, also moved to Kingston, where he died. Silas and John were strong union men and incurred serious dangers during the war. John Dodge was county judge.
- iii. JEDEDIAH, b. 7 March, 1800; m. Miss Martha Blanchard. Ch'n: 1, Martha, b. at Croydon, N. H., 1823; unm.; 2, Martin, b. at Croydon, 14 May, 1825; m. and live in Croydon.
- iv. LEVI, b. 17 March, 1802; m. Olive Blanchard of C. and lived at Grantham. Ch'n: 1, *Elias*, d. at Lowell, Mass.; 2, *Elbridge*; 3, *Austin*; 4, *Henry*. Levi moved to Chelsea, Vt., in 1832, and later to Randolph, where he died. Elbridge went to Wisconsin. Austin, with his mother, moved to Hamilton, Mo., where they died. Henry "went west."
- v. KEZIAH, b. 27 Aug., 1804; m. (1) Nathan Holbrook at Croydon. Of 4 children only one is living, Mrs. Palmer, in Worcester, Mass. She m. (2) Cyrus Olds at Troy, N. Y., moved to Milford, Mass., where she died, 25 March, 1874. Cyrus Olds died 19 Nov., 1874, aged 71. One dau., Mrs. Wakefield, lives in Keokuk, Iowa, and another, Mrs. Judd, lives in Salina, Kansas.
972. vii. FREEMAN, b. 17 Feb., 1809; m. Candace Stockwell of Croydon at Troy, N. Y., where they lived awhile, moved to Milton, Saratoga Co., where a dau., Frances, was born in 1838; a son, Freeman M., was born 22 August, 1840. See p. 409, "D. F." Thence he moved to Wilmurt, Herkimer Co., thence to Trenton Falls, N. Y., thence to Palmer, Mass. His dau., Frances, m. Oct., 1865, Geo. M. Stacey, now lives at New London, Ct., where Mr. Stacey died.
- xi. ADALINE, b. 2 April, 1820. See No. 1135, p. 348, "D. F."
- 974c. xii. ELLIS, b. 7 May, 1825.

652

STEPHEN P.* (Richard,³ Richard,⁴ Richard, Richard, Richard), was b. in Royalston, Mass., 24 Dec., 1774; came to live in the town of New Grantham, N. H., in March, 1797; was m. to Mary Dunbar of the same town, 10 Nov., 1799. She was b. in Bridgewater, Mass., 24 Sept., 1779. The above as well as the names of their children below are on a paper in his own handwriting, dated 8 May, 1834. He served in the war of 1812. Children:

- i. SALMON H., b. 31 July, 1800, in Croydon, N. H.
- ii. MALYNDA, b. 9 April, 1802; d. 21 Nov., 1803.
- iii. IRA, b. 28 February, 1804.
- iv. LOIS, b. 27 January, 1806.

had 11 children - see next page of Dodge Jan.

Based upon the foregoing we find in "America Heraldica," by E. de V. Vermont, 1886.

DODGE.

The emigrant, William Dodge, came over from Cheshire, England, to Salem in 1629. He was issued from an old Kentish stock, the only one of the name noticed in Burke.

Several patents, granting arms or confirming preceding grants are preserved in the family to this day.

CREST.

A demi-sea lion, azure collared and finned, or.
[Authorities.]

See: Meeting of the Dodge family in Salem, Mass., 1879, by Robert Dodge. Sir Bernard Burke. *The General Armory of England*, etc., 1883. *The Book of Family Crests*. II., 145.

HARLEIAN SOCIETY PUBLICATIONS., 1891.

Visitations of Norfolk, 1563, 1589 and 1613. p. 107.

DODGE.

Har. 1552, ink fo. 114^b, pencil 108^b.

ARMS. — *Barry of six or and gules, on a pale of the second a woman's dugg proper distilling drops of milk argent.*

CREST. — *A demi sea-dog guardant sable, finned and purpled or, collared of the last.*

Richard Dodg of Rotham [Wrotham] in Kent =

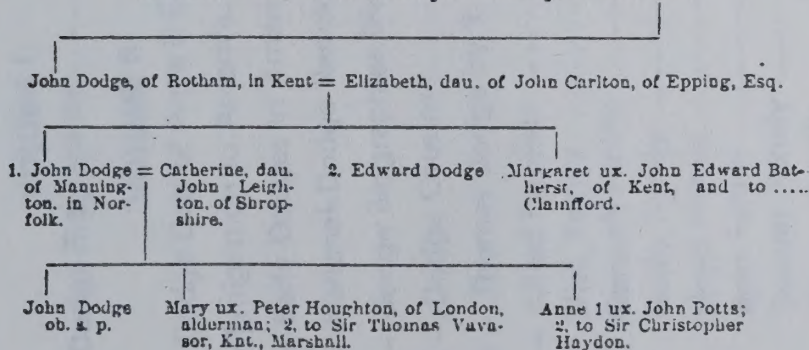


TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOLUME I

CHAPTER I – Dodge Biographies	
-------------------------------------	--

VOLUME II

CHAPTER II – Dodge Coat of Arms & Origin of Name ..	141
CHAPTER III – Emigration to America	152
CHAPTER IV – Early Dodges in America	161
CHAPTER V – National Dodge Reunion	165
CHAPTER VI – Dodge Biographies (Part II)	175
CHAPTER VII – Dodge Cousins	182
CHAPTER VIII – Thomas Dodge by R. H. Dodge	184
CHAPTER IX – Allied Families	238
Bliss Family	238
Gorsuch Family	244
Healy Family	272
Lloyd Family	277
Ross Family	282
Sawyer Family	304
Slinger Family	310
Stancer Family	358
Steiner Family	360
Waterworth Family	362
CHAPTER X – Additions and Corrections	384
INDEX I – Index of Dodges	388
INDEX II – Index of Others	391

This book is the second in a series of books on the Dodge family.

We plan to devote space in each subsequent volume for updating the family history, correcting any errors and adding new information.

This family history is to serve two purposes: (1) provide general Dodge family history for anyone interested and (2) provide specific family information on John Dodge (1816-1898), his ancestors and his descendants.

This line of Dodges probably has as rich a Dodge family background as any line. John Dodge had 24 Dodge ancestors in eight generations leading back to John Dodge (-1635) who lived and died in England and whose two sons, William and Richard, came to America nine and eighteen years after the Mayflower respectively. They are the fathers of the largest branch of the Dodge family in America today. John Dodge (1816-1898) was descended from both of these sons because of several intermarriages of Dodges. The names of John Dodge and his 24 ancestors are charted on the inside of the front cover.

Volume I published in 1976 dealt only with the biographies of John Dodge (1816-1898), his ancestors and descendants. This volume contains general Dodge family history subjects on the Dodge Coat of Arms and Origin of Name, Emigration to America, Early Dodges in America, and the 1879 National Dodge Reunion. Also included is a chapter on Dodge Cousins. A chapter on Thomas Dodge 5 (b. 1724) of Brookfield, Worchester Co., Mass., his ancestors and descendants was submitted for publication by Richard H. Dodge of Denver, Colorado. Dodge biographies and a chapter on allied families pertain exclusively to John Dodge's (1816-1898) descendants.

This volume contains an index which includes Vol. I. Pages under 141 will be found in Volume I while pages 141 and higher will be found in Volume II.

A special note of gratitude must be offered to Mr. Richard H. Dodge who submitted the material for chapter VIII.

Much of the work submitted by Richard H. Dodge was previously compiled by three Dodge Family Historians. They were: Loyal I. Dodge (1857-1940), Maude (Dodge) Dungay (1879-1927), and Beulah (Dodge) Shearer (1898-). With the help of over fifty genealogical researchers across the country and the help of family tree members, Richard H. Dodge greatly expanded the tree to about fifty biographical sketches.

A second Dodge family line descended from Tristram Dodge is also prevalent in America but at this writing no connection has been made between the two families. An attempt was made by the authors to establish whether there was a connection in England before 1635. A professional genealogist in England determined that no Dodge history has been written in that country. Known information on Dodges in England will be presented in a later volume.

Several Dodge histories, covering both Dodge families, have been written in America since 1879. During a national Dodge family reunion in 1879 it was decided to gather the family history. At that time it was thought that all Dodges were of the same family. During the collection of data the two branches were discovered. Robert Dodge 7 (1820-1899) (Robert 6 Samuel 5, Wilkie 4, Samuel 3, William 2, Tristram 1) wrote the Tristram Dodge family history and Joseph Thompson Dodge 8 (1823-1904) (Joseph 7, Asa 6, Nathaniel B. 5, Elijah 4, Joseph 3, Joseph 2, Richard 1) of Madison, Wis., wrote two volumes in 1894 and 1898 on the William-Richard Dodge lines. In 1904, Theron Royal Woodward 9 (Mary 8, Joel 7, Joel 6, Rev. Jordan 5, John 4, John 3, Israel 2, Tristram 1) updated the Tristram Dodge history. Theron Royal Woodward's parents moved from Vt. to Kingston, Wis., and lived out their lives there.

It is from Joseph Thompson Dodge's works that the bulk of the information on the early Dodges through the seventh generation is taken. Only in a few cases have the authors changed the biographical information, mainly in the form of including additional information on land deeds and wills pertaining to John Dodge's ancestors. Where there appear to be discrepancies in spellings of family names it is as it appears in the original work. Also the practice of double-dating years during the transition from the old style (Julian) to the new style (Gregorian) calendar is retained as in the original work. Throughout the books Joseph Thompson

Dodge will be referred to as J.T.D.

The subjects planned for future volumes are: Dodge background in England, Second National Dodge reunion, Dodges and patriotic organizations, Tristram Dodge branch of the Dodge family, Dodge descendants of note, Mass. to Wis., 1629-1844, Dodge Memorial Society, Dodge baseball, review of other published Dodge histories, a continuation of Dodge cousins, the Dodge chronological history and the Magna Charta and other ancient lines of descent.

Principal abbreviations used in this volume are: b. born; bapt. baptized; bro. brother; d. died; dau. daughter; g.s. gravestone; grad. graduated; l. living or lives; m. married; pub. published; res. resides or residence; unm. unmarried; wid. widow. When the name of the state in which a town or city is situated is not given, Massachusetts is understood unless the context shows otherwise.

The writers would like to acknowledge the following people for assisting in the publication of Volume II: Mary Jane Herber and the reference librarians at the Brown County Library in Green Bay, Wis., for their assistance and cooperation in obtaining microfilm and other reference materials; Ray Meliza of Green Bay, Wis., for designing and drawing the cover; and Gladys (Dodge) Blirt of Dallas, Texas, for all of the genealogical assistance she has furnished us since 1969.

Pictures were kindly furnished for publication by those people whose names appear in parentheses in the picture captions.

Special recognition is due to the following people who assisted on the Allied Families chapter: Rose Giese of Pardeeville, Wis., and Della Leary of Cambria, Wis., for the Gorsuch and Ross families; Mabel Johnson of Sioux Falls, S.D., for the Healy family; Della Gorsuch of Cambria, Wis., for the Gorsuch, Stancer and Steiner families; David and Marion Lloyd of Cambria, Wis., for the Lloyd and Ross families; Harriet Hopkins of Madison, Wis., for the Sawyer family; William and Margaret Slinger of Cambria, Wis., Lois Heddens of Charles City, Iowa, and Francis Charles Peter Slinger of England for the Slinger family; Eva Mae Steiner of Pardeeville, Wis., for the Ross, Stancer and Steiner families; Mae Ufer, Luella, Vernon and Dorothy Waterworth, of Milwaukee, Wis., Violet Kelpin of Brookfield, Wis., Illa Lattimer of Highland, Ind., and Amanda Pierce of Fall River, Wis., for the Waterworth family; and Louise Bryan of Neenah, Wis., Robert L. Ross of West Pasadena, Ca., and Alice Ross Zens of Kenosha, Wis., for the Ross family.

A special thanks to Lyna Slinger for typing help.

Marilyn M. Slinger
Phillip J. Slinger
1978

ancient, original Patent of the Family Arms; and to the same effect is Gwillim's Display of Heraldry.

Our name has always remained without change, which is so frequent in other Surnames.

In the recent edition of Milton's Poetical Works, by Prof. David Masson; and in the Editor's note to the Sonnet on the University Carrier, will be found an effort upon inferior authority to give the etymology of our name, when used as a verb by Milton.

If Richardson and Wedgwood, whom he quotes, had studied Spelman and our ancient Patent of Arms, it is safe to say, that neither they nor Masson would have resorted to conjecture or secondary application, for the original meaning of a simple and original Saxon word.

As the Patent is of itself an historic curiosity, and the armorial Bearing depicts the meaning of the name, according to its Saxon origin; besides reciting the achievements and locality of the Patentee, and Founder of the Family in England, I may be allowed, on this occasion, to re-produce the original Patent, as certified from the Herald's College, London.

The original Patent is in Norman French, of which I give a literal translation from the parchment copy in my possession, with emblazonment of the Arms: certified as "Extracted from the Records of the College of Arms, London. Thom. Wm. King, York Herald, 30 March, 1850."

First Patent.

Another Patent Grant of Arms, of a much later date viz: 1547: or 38th Hen. VIII., is also on record in the College of Arms, London, and likewise Certified.

It is shorter, to JOHN DODGE of Rotham, Kent; and inasmuch as it confirms the first patent, as then very ancient; and describes the Crest also: I may be allowed here to give it in modernized English.

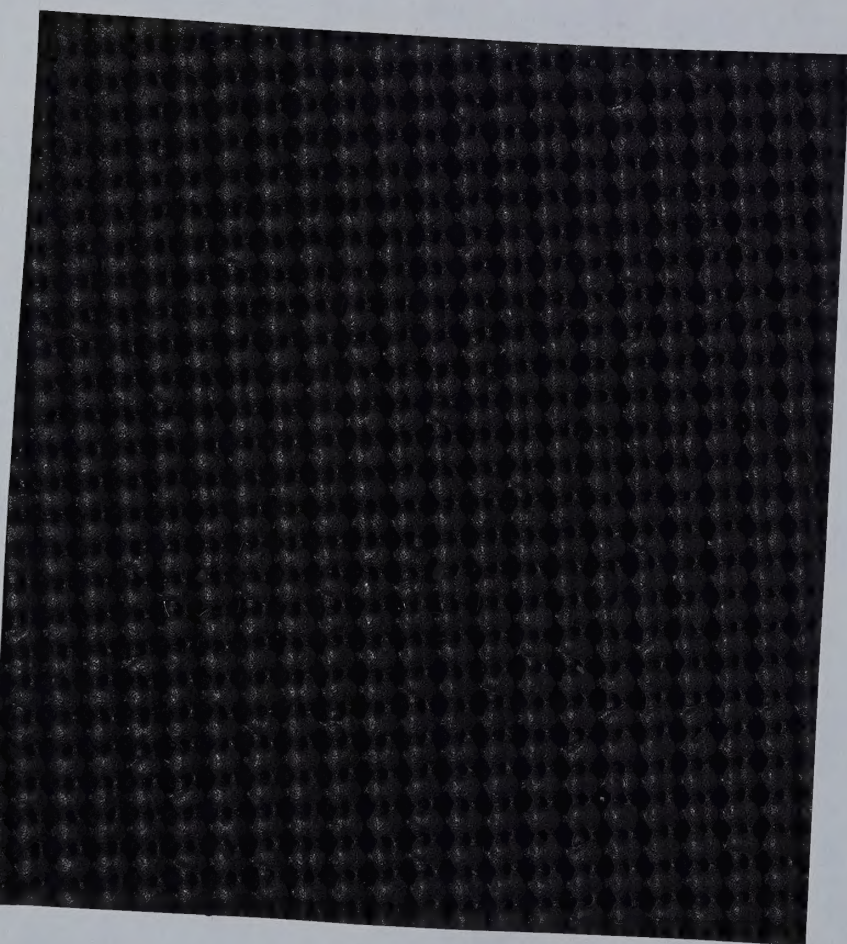
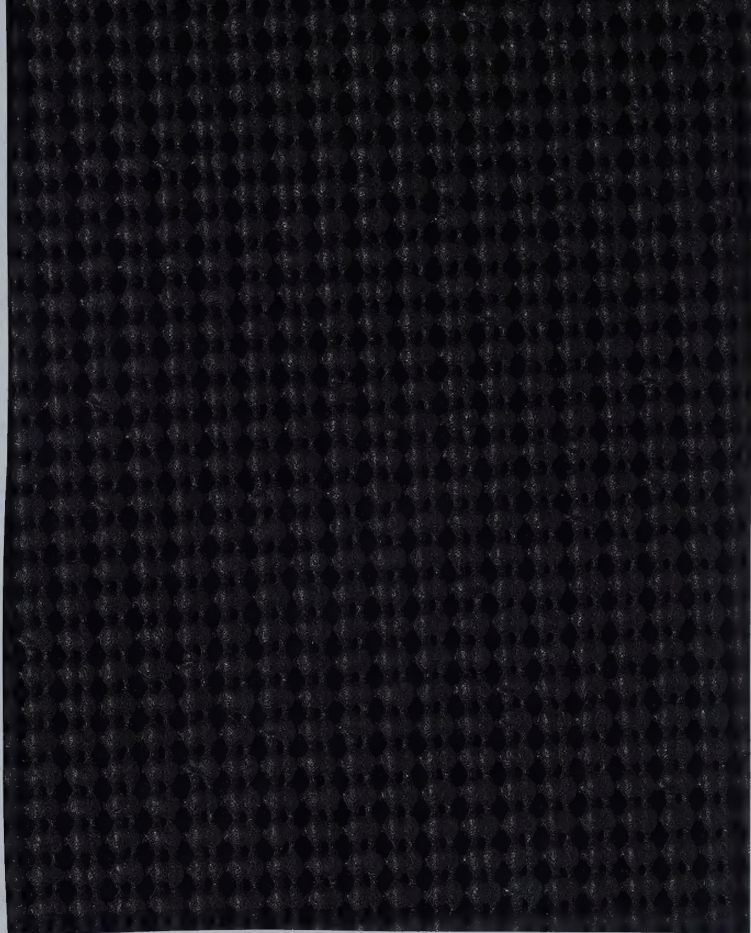
SECOND PATENT

This Patent contains two errors of date; viz. of the First Patent as granted 38th Ed. I, who died in the 35th year of his reign (1307) and the record as we have seen dated it the 34th Ed. I; and also in that of Henry the Eighth, who died January 28th, 1547; just entering on the 38th year of his reign; this Patent issued the previous month of December, 1546; 37th Hen. VIII.

Before leaving these Heraldic honors and history of our English Parent stock; I may add that the Herald's College has on record the Pedigree for a few generations of JOHN DODGE of Mannington in Norfolk to 1563, or 5th Eliz.: also the funeral Hatchment or Escutcheon of Arms, Houghton and Dodge families combined, viz: PETER HOUGHTON, Alderman and Sheriff of London, 1596, funeral conducted by the Herald King of Arms, 38 Eliz. The same Crest and Arms also appear again of record there on the funeral Hatchment and Pennon of EDWARD DODGE of Campo in the County of Kent, Esquire, who died at his house in Lachlad in the County of Gloster, 26 Dec. 1597, and was interred 30th March, 1598, 40 Eliz. by the Herald King of Arms.

These Heraldic honors of the old time and Country may of themselves be of little worth to us, under our Constitution and Laws, prohibiting Rank and perpetuities of Estate in any family, but they are significant here; to show the antiquity, origin, and chief settlements of our English stock.

The first Patent (1306) to "PIERRE," or PETER DODGE is among the most ancient records of the Herald's College; and the curious student will be interested, if not amused, to read the laudatory comments thereof, with quaint texts from the



Book of Esdras, by old Gwillm in his "Display of Heraldry."

It will be observed that this First Patent bears date in the 34th year in the reign of Edward, the First of that name, in the Norman Line of Kings, after the Conquest of England.

This Edward, was the son of Henry III: and his Queen Eleanor of Provence, and the sixth English King after the Conquest. He was born in Westminster Palace 1239; succeeded to the Throne in 1272 on the death of his father, reigned thirty-five years till his death in 1307, July 7, at Burgh on Sands, on his last invasion of Scotland.

His Scottish wars began in 1289: to punish the revolt of his Liege, and appointed King of Scotland, John Baliol, who became a public enemy. The Scottish Crown was also then claimed by Robert Bruce and his army; which was supported by the forces led by Sir. William Wallace.

These wars engaged all the Military Power of Edward I, from 1289 to 1307, and have been amply illustrated by all the Bards and chroniclers of Scotland and England.

Scott's Border Minstrelsy rings with its story, and in the following ballad he introduces the ancient Baron of Coldingham; reviving in its measure and spirit the Mediaeval Lays of the Troubadours, sung to the Harp.

EVE OF ST. JOHN

by Walter Scott.

His arms shone full bright: - in the beacon's red light
His plume, it was scarlet and blue;

On his shield was a hound, in a silver leash bound,
And his crest was a branch of the yew.

Yet hear but my word, my noble Lord!
For I heard her name his name:

And that lady bright, she called the Knight
Sir. Richard of Coldingham.
* * * * *

The varying light deceived thy sight;

And the wild winds drowned the name;
For the Dryburgh bells ring, and the white monks do sing,

For Sir. Richard of Coldingham.
There is a nun in Dryburgh bower,

Ne'er looks upon the Sun,
There is a Monk in Melrose Tower,

He speaketh word to none.
That Nun, who ne'er beholds the day,

That Monk who speaks to none,
That Nun, was Smaylhome's Lady gay,

That Monk, the bold Baron.

This Ballad is without date of its epoch; but from his Arms, Color and Crest, this Richard, Baron of Coldingham, was of the ancient nobility of Scotland: by the fortune of was his Barony was seized by the English King and granted out to his military siege, PIERRE DODGE. Perhaps he then turned a white Monk of Melrose Abbey. Coldingham lies on the coast of Scotland, eleven miles distant from Berwick, in its Shire, near Tweeddale; on the border and in the charmed vicinity of Dryburgh and "fair Melrose" Abbeys. The ruined walls of the Choir and Clerestory of Coldingham Priory have been preserved by being built into a church of the last Century. Those fine Gothic arches and capitals, in the style of Melrose, are mellow with history. This Priory, very anciently a cell of the Monks of St. Cuthbert of Durham, was in A.D. 1098, by Edgar King of Scotland, founded as a Benedictine Priory. In 1216 it was burnt by King John. In 1554 the English Invaders (Temp. Mary) occupied it as a Fort. After the Reformation it was granted to Earl Bothwell. Cromwell, in his campaign against Leslie and the King, besieged it, and blew up a large portion; and finally its old 90 foot tower fell in 1774; leaving only these sturdy old walls that have met a better fate.

The Village and Parish of Coldingham, in which this ruined Priory is situate, is about Town of Berwickshire of about 3000 inhabitants; eleven miles

NorthWest of Berwick and eighteen miles from Dunbar; and in the old wars frequently lay on the path of the invader and became the scene of many battles. The Priory remains are beautifully engraved in Billing's Antiquities. Upon the confiscation of Bothwell's estates its lordship passed to Lord Hume, in whose family it still remains. Our family name, or that of PETER DODGE, nowhere appears in its history: and the other gift of a Lordship, Podenhughe, is not now to be found in any work of authority, and doubtless is long extinct.

Our libraries lack Scotch Healdic books or lists of their landed Nobility and Gentry.

These are mostly preserved in the Lays of its Minstrels. But the antiquarian of leisure might perhaps find in the Confessions of the Refugees to its Mediaeval Sanctuary; now preserved in the library of Durham Cathedral, among the many narratives of Border Frays, and Seiges of Berwick and Dunbar; some record of the deeds of PETER DODGE, the new English Lord of the Barony of Coldingham and Podenhughe, and their description at that epoch.

I have seen many of these Confessions: they are on parchment, in old monkish Latin, bound in heavy folios, and stand in many ranks, in that curious old Library, in the twilight and silence of the Cloisters of Durham.

It was from early time, the great Sanctuary Shrine of St. Cuthbert. In the constant Border turbulence and bloodshed, the manslayer fled to this Sanctuary as a Refugee from Justice, or the vengeance of the kinsman of his victim. He knocked at the old Griff-in-head knocker on the North door (in 1847 fully preserved), was admitted and shaven by an attendant Monk, who recorded his confession; he then assumed, for thirty days, the gown and cross of the order of St. Cuthbert; and then, if not demanded meanwhile by the King, was shipped to Sea at the Abbey's Sea-port of Lindifarne or Holy Island, near modern Bamborough, on the North Eastern Coast of England.

.....
England, at this period, was a poor and almost depopulated country; devastated by the Plague that carried off more than half its people, and often left once flourishing towns a total solitude. Crime went unpunished: rapine, violence, slavery and pauperism prevailed. The people crushed by their woes, became victims of warrior Knights and Barons, and the enormous levies of the King for his wars. The Nation had dwindled to less than two million souls: and the land, in large part, was dense forest; the haunt of beasts of prey, and the armed and titled robbers, often fierce as they.

From their smoky and squalid huts, meanly clad in wool or leather, and scantily fed, the people looked to the Court and Aristocracy, issuing from castles of little more comfort, in vain for relief; but, as the scourged slave in his dungeon, they brooded on their wrongs, and wondered if the Baron's act that in 1215 had wrested from weak King John the vaunted Magna Charta, could minister to their relief against these Barons and Royal oppressors.

Such is the truth only in part; the full details of the actual social condition of our ancestors at this period, in their depths of pollution, are too repulsive for repetition.

Court, Aristocracy and People were alike more barbarous than the Franks under Charlemagne, (A.D. 800); and like the modern contrasts of Abyssinian to Western Civilization, when compared with the luxurious grandeur and glory of culture of Saracenic Spain, or of Venice and the other Republics of Italy.

Of the antecedents of this first Patentee we know nought beyond the recitals in the Patent. Neither is he knighted or graced with rank or coronet: like many more he won estates and broad Manors, with their dignity, in the lands of the Border of Scotland, yet unsubdued, the reward than frequently given for successful service in the army of the King. It may well employ the diligent Antiquary to trace the general Lineage from this early and fortunate soldier down to the first emigrant of our name for America: WILLIAM DODGE, of 1629.

His research in England would be for the books of Pedigrees and records of the old settled families who claim descent from this same Cheshire stock. Although our name is said often to occur in the Lowlands, of which one instance will be given further on, it is not probable that the Patentee ever entered upon his Scotch Barony and Lordship.

In that lawless age, when Scotch National hostility to the English was implacable

by reason of constant invasions; it would have required a large army to overcome the natives and subjugate them to the rule of the Sassenach Grantee.

This enduring hate of the Saxon, developed in the ceaseless Border attacks; and the rally of the clans to the northern Highlands for the Stuart cause at all periods down to their last National Struggle at Culloden in 1745: when their cause was, in their view sanctified by the martyrs of Glencoe. Long after the Act of Union (1707. Temp. Anne.) they remained strangers, plotting, conspiring, or in open hostility, until the reign of George 3d., (1760-1820); when Scotchmen first became placemen under the Crown by the sagacious policy of his first Minister, the Earl of Bute: which was followed by the Era of modern English Commerce and Manufacture, with its ample rewards to the frugal and industrious enterprise of Scotchmen; who have long forgotten the feuds of their isolated ancestors.

To restore the sway of reason, and a proper National feeling, required the long historic period of more than Five hundred years.

It is therefore probable that this Grantee never took possession of his Scotch Barony of Coldingham and Lordship of Podenhughe.

But, as I have been informed by Scotchmen, that our name is not infrequent in Glasgow, the Lowlands and the Border: the investigation whether they also come from the same stock might be of interest. The principal fact remains—that, in the same part of England—ancient Cheshire—on the Southern bank of the river Mersey, opposite modern Liverpool; having its County-seat and Cathedral in hoary Chester, with its antique covered Ways and Market Crosses, Saxon and Roman remains; was the original English home of our race in 1306: and so now continues, with its numerous branches in Lancashire, Bedfordshire, Middlesex, Kent and Norfolk, during this long period of five hundred and seventy three years.

They are now, and long have been, among the oldest and most numerous of the landed gentry and Commoners of ancient family in England."

Robert Dodge's address continued proceeding from the coat-of-arms on to the emigration to America by William Dodge and is continued in the chapter devoted to that subject.

The referral by Robert to "old Gwillim" and his reference to quaint texts from the Book of Esdras is taken from "Display of Heraldry" Edition of 1667 page 225:

DODGE PATENT OF ARMS

"He Beareth Barry of six pieces. Or and Sable; over all a Pale Gules, charged with a Woman's Dug distilling Drops of Milk. Proper by the name of DODGE."

And here because I find in the Office Arms a Copy of the first Grant of this Coat Armour and that very ancient, I think it convenient to acquaint the Reader with some particulars of the same PATENT as I there find it, whereby appeareth that James Hedingley, then Guyon King of Arms, after recital made of the loyal and valliant service which PETER DODGE born in the Town of Stopworth, in the County of Chester, Gentlemen, had done to King Edward the First, for as it there appeareth by the Copy of this Instrument bearing date the 8th day of April, in the 34th year of that King's Reign, in diverse battles and sieges for which the said King had remunerated him, the said Peter Dodge, with the gift of a Seignory, or Lordship there mentioned. He (I say) the said King of Arms, after such recital made doth Give and Grant unto the said Peter Dodge that from thenceforth II (Understand the said Peter) portera sen ecu d' or et Sables barre de Six pieces, et ung pale de Gules avec une mammelle de femme aegoullant, so are the very words and their Orthography in the Copy of the Patent, which is in French. Thus much whereof I thought fit to present to the public view, not doubting but the judicious Reader by careful observation thereof may make some good use.

The Function of this Member is thus taught us—2 Esdras 8 "For thou hast commanded the Member. even the Breasts to give Milk unto the Fruit appointed for the Breasts that the thing which is created might be nourished for a time, till thou disposest it to thy Mercy."

These Arms were Granted April 8th, 1306, 34th of Edw. I, to Peter Dodge, of the County of Chester, Stopworth."

Esdras is one of the 'Apocryphal' books of the Bible. The term 'Apocrypha' is applied to a body of literature that has come down to us in close connection with the canonical books of the Bible, and yet is not of them. This term seems to have been used to specify certain documents or writings that were purposely hidden from general public contact, either because of their supposed sacredness, or to retain within the precincts of a certain sect their secret wisdom or knowledge. The name was given either by those who hid the books or by those from whom they were hidden.

All such books bore, as their alleged authors, the names of notable men in Hebrew history. These names were not sufficient of themselves to carry the books over into the canonical collection of the Bible. The term applied to them as 'Apocryphal,' that is, withheld from public gaze and use, was at first rather complimentary to their character. But their rejection by the Jewish Palestinian body of worshippers, as well as by the larger proportion of the early Church, gradually stamped the name 'apocryphal' as a term of reproach, indicating inferiority in content and a spurious authorship. Henceforth such books lost their early sacredness, and became embodied in a collection that remained entirely out side the Hebrew Bible, though in general found in the Septuagint and the Vulgate.

Gwillim felt that 2 Esdras summed up Peter Dodge's service to King Edward the First and this was represented on the Dodge coat-of-arms. 2 Esdras 8 is as follows in King James and Revised Standard Versions:

For Thou hast commanded out of the parts of the body, that is to say, out of the breasts, milk to be given, which is the fruit of the breasts, that the thing which is fashioned may be nourished for a time, till thou disposest it to thy mercy. (King James)

Thou hast commanded that from the members themselves (that is, from the breasts) milk should be supplied which is the fruit of the breasts, "so that what has been fashioned may be nourished for a time; and afterwards thou wilt guide him in thy mercy." (Revised Standard)

Another reference to the Dodge coat-of-arms follows:

"In the Herald's College a manuscript volume of the time of Charles 2d has the following entry:

Dodge or Dodget (Norfolk and Kent) Barry of 6 Arg and Sa on a pale gules an eye weeping proper.

Dodge (Cheshire) Barry of 6 Or and Sa on a pale gules, a woman's dug distilling milk proper.

The above is the only record or allusion to the weeping eye. "and it is supposed to have arisen from an ill done or defective emblazonment, which has mistaken the breast for an eye."

In "America Heraldica," a compilation of Arms, Crests, and Mottoes, edited by Edgar DeValcourt Vermont on page 28 we find: "Crest in color of Dodge, showing the weeping eye (woman's breast). Crest: a demi sea lion, azure, collared and finned or. The weeping eye signifies grief for the failure of the Crusading ancestors to obtain the Holy Grail. The other interpretation, the woman's breast, probably indicated the food and nourishment which the Dodge family gave to soldiers of England during her many wars."

Roy L. Dodge in his Dodge-Berry history had this to say about the Dodge coat-of-arms: "The original 'Woman's dug' was changed to a weeping eye," as it remains today. It probably was changed by Peter Dodge. Perhaps he didn't like the idea of a woman's breast on a coat-of-arms."

J. T. Dodge devoted some space to the Dodge coat-of-arms in Vol. II of his history:

THE DODGE ARMS

Very slight attention was given to this subject in the first volume because in my republican simplicity I had never thought it of much consequence, but it has so often been pressed upon my attention during my studies for the present volume that I am sure the Dodge Family will be gratified by the following information, for which I am indebted to the enterprise of Captain Charles Dodge 8 (Charles 7, Francis 6, Robert 5, Isaac 4, Robert 3, William 2, William 1, John 0).

(COPY)

From Rev. S. Baring Gould to Charles Dodge, Jr.

Lew Trenchard, N. Devon, Eng. 9 May, 1895.

Dear Sir: The Doidge family of this county came from Milton Abbott near (5 ms. n.w. of) Tavistock (on river Tavy, 16 1/2 ms. n. of Plymouth) where they were tenants of the abbots of Tavistock in Henry VII's reign (1485-1509), they occupied a fine old house, Coombe, not their own but subject to the Duke of Bedford. They got reduced at the beginning of this century & were dispersed. The antepenultimate Duke pulled Coombe down. Somewhere about 1750-80 this (Duke) had Hurditch in Larneston (parish), and the shield in the arms in plaster was over the doorway. Hurditch has been rebuilt but the present owner, R. Mushead, Esq., has the original plaster cast. The arms are the same as those you describe.

The representative of the Doidges now is a surgeon, Mr. Maurice Doidge, who has I believe some momentos of the family, old plate & c, but he does not know anything of the pedigree. He was at Lifton (4 ms. e. of Launceston) but has left. His address now is Elmhurst, Haverhill, Suffolk.

There are a number of Doidges, farmers and laborers in this neighborhood. Farmers of this name still in Milton Abbott. The name hereabout is spelled Doidge, but pronounced Dodge.

There is a Maurice Doidge in Larneston p'sh, N. Tavistock yeoman, owner of Woodley which has been in the Doidge possession for some centuries.

I remain yours truly,
S. Baring Gould.

Charles Dodge, Jun'r
Fort Bayard,
New Mexico, U.S.A.

(Copy)

Hurditch Court, Tavistock,
9th. July 1895.

Dear Sir: I shall be most pleased to do anything I can for you in the matter of the Coat of Arms but the same is much worn by exposure and I scarcely think it would be worth photographing.

I am leaving home today for a couple of weeks and on my return will see Mr. Baring Gould and get his opinion on the matter. I will then write you again. Please excuse haste.

Yours truly,
(signed) R. Mushead.

Lieut. Charles Dodge, Jr.

(Copy)

Elmhurst, Haverhill, Suffolk, Eng.
21 July, 1895.

My dear Sir: I must ask your pardon for my delay in answering your letter. I have been much from home of late and my time has been fully occupied. I am much interested to hear of an American branch of the family, for such no doubt yours is.

I fear that my information as to the family is very meagre. I have never had time to thoroughly investigate the subject: certainly I claim the right to use the Doidge name always used them for the last two centuries

more common in the States, I fancy than in England. You will see from the slip I enclose (which I use for pasting inside any books I value) what the arms are. You will also see from the head of this sheet of paper that we - I mean many generations past - have been in the habit of using the crest, as is the custom in this country. I do not think the crest is quite correctly described in the account you quote of it in Mr. Tupper's letter; it should be called a "demi-sea dog" not "sea-lion", so I have always been told. I have records of the Doidges being seated at Milton Abbott, near Tavistock in West Devon for more than two centuries past; really they have been in that neighborhood it is almost certain for over three centuries if not four; but I have no precise date earlier than 1655. From this you will see that I cannot tell you anything of William of Somersetshire who was the founder of the American branch. But in all the old county histories of Devon, and Cornwall also, (parish of Stoke, Clairsland) there are notes of a gentle family of this name residing in West Devon for centuries past. At one time they held considerable properties in that part of the county of Devon. I have a photograph of the manor-house of Hurditch in the parish of Larneston, near Tavistock, with the arms of Doidge over the chief entrance; this place belonged to the family in the early part of the last century and has been pulled down to be rebuilt within the last few years. The present owner who has built the new home, sent me the photo of the old one. There was also Coombe House, in Milton Abbott, Devon, which I saw once, and which was pulled down about 30 years ago. This was a fine old house and, with an estate round it, had belonged to the Doidges till sold to the Duke of Bedford on the death of Maurice Doidge, my grandfather's grand uncle; the house had stood and belonged to the Doidges (according to Mr. Baring Gould) since Elizabeth's time.

How the family got into Devonshire I do not know, but certainly they spring from the Cheshire family, the founder of which was Peter Doidge of Stopworth to whom Edward I granted the arms we now bear in the year 1273 (April 8 is the exact date of the grant) (not 1305).

I have never heard the connection of the Devon branch with the original family of Cheshire traced; but it is the same family, and evidently from the arms the Norfolk and Kent families were also descendants of the Cheshire stock. These two branches in Norfolk and Kent appear to be extinct. Doubtless the Somersetshire family from whom you trace descent had emigrated from the adjoining county of Devon - I do not know that any Doidges are now found in Somerset. Do you happen to know in what parish of that county the death of John Doidge, the father of William of Salem, is registered? If so I should much like to know.

I have a few bits of old plate in my possession, but none dating back to the date of the emigration to America. I have two fine old silver tankards, one bearing date 1707 and the initials H.D.; another of almost exactly the same date (as the marks show) bearing the arms of Doidge; a smaller one bearing the date 1720, and also a few old spoons bearing either crest or initials, the oldest of which is 16 . I have also in my possession the official seal of Richard Doidge who was High Sheriff of Devon in 1771 (an office of great dignity in England). I do not know if a photo. of any of these things would interest you as you ask me for photographs of family possessions; if so, of course it will give me pleasure to obtain one and send to you. I wish it was in my power to tell you more of the Cheshire Doidges from whom we both spring. I have often thought of going into Cheshire to endeavor to trace the family, but have never had the time to spare for what is a long and troublesome search. But if the small amount of information I have been able to give you is of the slightest interest to you I am very glad to have been able to do it. Believe me to be

My dear Sir,
Very faithfully yours,
Charles Dodge, Esq. Maurice J. Doidge.

(Copy)

From Maurice J. Doidge

My dear Sir: I greatly regret leaving your last letter so long unanswered, but my time has been fully occupied. I have been compelled to shift my quarters from the county of Suffolk to this place, thus returning once more to the West of England. I find that Chinnock, of which you speak, is not very far distant from Glastonbury and I hope one day to be able to go there and perhaps I may collect any interesting item of news relative to your branch of the family; if so I will not fail to communicate them to you. I find that the name Dodge is still known in this immediate neighborhood, so that evidently it has lingered in this part of Somerset since the emigration of William in the 17th century. I can only answer your question as to the spelling of the name by telling you that so far as I know it has always been spelt in that way by the West Devon branch: in some old county histories & books of that sort dating some centuries back you will find the family mentioned as that of "Doidge or Dodge."

The translation of the motto "Leni perfuar otio" is "let me enjoy gentle ease." So many of the family have acted thoroughly on the motto that the last few generations have not enjoyed any of the ease due to the possession of property as it has long ago disappeared.

St. Badaux, the place in Devonshire which you mention, is not far distant from Tavistock, both being in the western part of the county, so no doubt can exist of the Devonshire origin of the Somerset-shire Doidges. The photographs of the silver plate represent four silver tankards, the earliest of Queen Anne's time, - the seal is that of Richard Doidge who was High Sheriff of Devon in the last century sometime, and the largest of the three tankards also belonged to him and bears on it the arms of Doidge impaled with those of some other family, probably his wife's. These things of course are of no interest to any one else but from the tone of your letter they will, I am sure, possess some interest for you.

I have to thank you very much for the volume you sent me, the pedigree of the American Doidges which is of course of much interest to me. I hope that some day you will be able to carry out your desire to visit the old country, in which case pray remember that Glastonbury is in itself a most interesting town, and that you will not be without a welcome if you pay a visit. I am, my dear Sir,

faithfully and sincerely yours,
Maurice J. Doidge.

Before we leave the subject of coat-of-arms we are including the following discourse as offered by Arthur Charles Fox-Davies in which he discusses the augmentation of the Dodge arms and his doubting of the authenticity of it. In his "A Complete Guide to Heraldry" he says:

There are many gorgeous legends relating to augmentations and arms which are said to have been granted by William the Conqueror as rewards after the Battle of Hastings. Personally I do not believe in a single one. There was a certain augmentation borne by the Dodge family, which, if it be correct, dates from the thirty-fourth year of Edward I., but whether this be authentic it is impossible to say. Most people consider the alleged deed of grant a forgery, and if this be so, the arms only exist by right of subsequent record and the question of augmentation rests upon tradition. The curious charge of the woman's breast distilling drops of milk to typify the nourishment afforded to the king's army is at any rate most interesting." and again in "The Art of Heraldry" he says:

I should like, before leaving the subject of armorial records, to say a word as to a very important branch of the subject, that is, how arms are originally constituted, and the evidence of their being authorised. Of course, in the first instance, there were no such things as grants of arms. Families gradually got into the practice of bearing as cognisances and for all practical purposes, as we have seen those emblems or devices which their ancestors had been in the habit of using. But when such devices came to be considered as peculiarly military and knightly possessions, and not likely to be assumed, the king (as the fountain of all honor) took the bestowal of armorial bearings into his own hands - though occasionally a knight granted arms to his esquire. No formal documentary grants were, however, at first made, though the bearings of the different knights were carefully noted down by the heralds of the period. In England the earliest of these rolls in which the arms were quoted

a copy made by Glover, Somerset Herald, is still in existence, with the arms blazoned but not drawn. There is also a copy of another thirteenth-century roll, and there is the great Caerlaverock Roll of 1300, containing a list of the arms of all the knights who accompanied Edward I. to the siege of that castle; it has been printed several times.

In addition to these there are six or seven other English rolls of the fourteenth century. It is difficult to say exactly when the Herald's College, which was incorporated by Richard III., first began to issue grants of arms. Dallaway, in his "Heraldic Enquiries," certainly mentions a grant long before the incorporation of the College. It is alleged to be by James Heddingley, Guyen King of Arms, to Peter Dodge, Gentlemen, and to be dated the 8th day of April in the 34th year of "Edward le premier;" but although this is in a collection made by Glover, it is unlikely to be genuine. Documents written in the reign of a sovereign who had had no predecessor of the same name do not usually describe him as "the first." Not only so, but it is stated by Austen that Guyen King of Arms was not created till the time of Henry VI.

Fox-Davies also gives a discussion of the Sea-Dog as follows:
The sea-dog is a most curious animal. It is represented much as the talbot, but with scales, webbed feet, and a broad scaly tail like a beaver. In my mind there is very little doubt that the sea-dog is really the early heraldic attempt to represent a beaver, and I am confirmed in that opinion by the arms of the city of Oxford. There has been considerable uncertainty as to what the sinister supporter was intended to represent. A reference to the original record shows that a beaver is the real supporter, but the representation of the animal, which in form has varied little, is very similar to that of a sea-dog. The only instances I am aware of in British heraldry in which it occurs under the name of a sea-dog are the supporters of the Barony of Stourton and the crest of Dodge."

Book - "Ancestors & Descendants of John Dodge
1816 - 1898"

JOHN DODGE
(1816 - 1898)

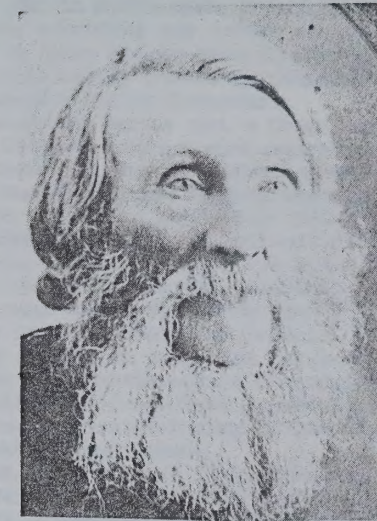
A SPECIAL BICENTENNIAL ISSUE LIMITED TO
500 AUTOGRAPHED COPIES

THIS IS # 263

Marilyn Slinger Phillip J. Slinger
AUTHORS
may 20, 1979
JUNE - 1976

"Not to know what happened before one was born is
always to be a child." —Cicero, B. C.

COPYRIGHTED -- 1976
By Marilyn M. Slinger & Phillip J. Slinger



HIS LIFE BOOK

In memory of John Dodge Sr. age eighty-two years and thirteen days.

'Twas full of kind and loving deeds,
From a heart well filled with charity.
Each page was filled from beginning to end,
Nobly and generously for his friends.

Each year wrote a page in the noble book,
Each day wrote a line with care,
Each hour wrote a line that in heaven sealed
The cross of his savior, where he often kneeled.

In this inspired volume we read
of a life well worth living,
Of a life full of patience and love—
Of a love for his family and Savior above.

Each line presents to us a day well spent
For his family, his friends, and his Savior.
Each page tells a year, we shall often appeal
To this life-book truth to us to reveal.

And ere the last great page was finished
He lay down his pen, his life book done,
Two hymns for his Savior he beautifully sang
Ere heaven's Great Hand the death bell rang.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	i
DODGE BIOGRAPHIES	
GENERATION IN ENGLAND	1
FIRST GENERATION	1
SECOND GENERATION	5
THIRD GENERATION	9
FOURTH GENERATION	19
FIFTH GENERATION	26
SIXTH GENERATION	33
SIXTH - SEVENTH GENERATION	36
SEVENTH - EIGHTH GENERATION	39
EIGHTH - NINTH GENERATION	73
NINTH - TENTH GENERATION	83
TENTH - ELEVENTH GENERATION	100
ELEVENTH - TWELFTH GENERATION	121

This book is entitled "Ancestors and Descendants of John Dodge 1816-1898 Volume I" because it is the authors' intent to present this family history in a series of paperback books. We plan to devote space in each subsequent volume for updating the family history, correcting any errors and adding new information.

This family history is to serve two purposes: (1) provide general Dodge family history for anyone interested and (2) provide specific family information on John Dodge (1816-1898), his ancestors and his descendants.

This line of Dodes probably has as rich a Dodge family background as any line. John Dodge had 24 Dodge ancestors in eight generations leading back to John Dodge (-1635) who lived and died in England and whose two sons, William and Richard, came to America nine and eighteen years after the Mayflower respectively. They are the fathers of the largest branch of the Dodge family in America today. John Dodge (1816-1898) was descended from both of these sons because of several intermarriages of Dodes. The names of John Dodge and his 24 ancestors are underlined at the biography headings and also as they appear as children under their parents' biography for easy identification.

A second Dodge family line descended from Tristram Dodge is also prevalent in America but at this writing no connection has been made between the two families. An attempt was made by the authors to establish whether there was a connection in England before 1635. A professional genealogist in England determined that no Dodge history has been written in that country. Known information on Dodes in England will be presented in a later volume.

Several Dodge histories, covering both Dodge families, have been written in America since 1879. During a national Dodge family reunion in 1879 it was decided to gather the family history. At that time it was thought that all Dodes were of the same family. During the collection of data the two branches were discovered. Robert Dodge 7 (1820-1899) (Robert 6, Samuel 5, Wilkie 4, Samuel 3, William 2, Tristram 1) wrote the Tristram Dodge family history and Joseph Thompson Dodge 8 (1823-1904) (Joseph 7, Asa 6, Nathaniel B. 5, Elijah 4, Joseph 3, Joseph 2, Richard 1) of Madison, Wis., wrote two volumes in 1894 and 1898 on the William-Richard Dodge lines. In 1904, Theron Royal Woodward 9 (Mary 8, Joel 7, Joel 6, Rev. Jordan 5, John 4, John 3, Israel 2, Tristram 1) updated the Tristram Dodge history. Theron Royal Woodward's parents moved from Vt. to Kingston, Wis., and lived out their lives there.

It is from Joseph Thompson Dodge's works that the bulk of the information on the early Dodes through the seventh generation is taken. Only in a few cases have the authors changed the biographical information, mainly in the form of including additional information on land deeds and wills pertaining to John Dodge's ancestors. Where there appear to be discrepancies in spellings of family names it is as it appears in the original work. Also the practice of double-dating years during the transition from the old style (Julian) to the new style (Gregorian) calendar is retained as in the original work. Throughout the book Joseph Thompson Dodge will be referred to as J.T.D. The information contained in the seventh-eighth generation through the eleventh-twelfth generation was collected by the authors through wills, deeds, obituaries, questionnaires, newspaper articles and other family records.

The intermarriage of Antipas Dodge 5 and Jerusha Dodge 6 caused their descendants to be listed in two generations. Therefore, after the sixth generation the descendants are listed as double generations.

There is no index for Volume I. Plans are to include an index in the final volume to include all volumes or perhaps to include an index in some of the intermediate volumes. To help trace a particular line backward each Dodge descendant has as his number his own number followed by his Dodge parent's number. In the case of a Dodge descendant with two Dodge parents both parent's numbers are used. For example, John Dodge (134-112,123) indicates that he is #134 and his parents are #112 and #123. A person mentioned in this book with one number only, i.e. Mary Ann Dodge (134), specifies that this person is the spouse

the siblings of Dodge ancestors are included in the book. Some biographies contain information on allied families although most of the allied family information will appear later as a separate chapter.

The lateral numbers underlined under children of Dodge descendants indicates that a separate biography appears in the next generation.

The subjects planned for future volumes are: Dodge coat-of-arms and origin of name, Dodge background in England and emigration to America, early Dodes in America, national Dodge reunions, Dodes and patriotic organizations, Tristram Dodge branch of the Dodge family, Dodge descendants of note, allied families, Mass. to Wis., 1629-1844, Dodge Memorial Society, Dodge baseball, review of other published Dodge histories and the Dodge chronological history.

Principal abbreviations used in this volume are: b. born; bapt. baptized; bro. brother; d. died; dau. daughter; g.s. gravestone; grad. graduated; l. living or lives; m. married; pub. published; res. resides or residence; un. unmarried; wid. widow. When the name of the state in which a town or city is situated is not given, Massachusetts is understood unless the context shows otherwise.

The writers would like to acknowledge the following people for assisting in the publication of this book: The reference librarians at the Brown County Library in Green Bay, Wis., for their assistance and cooperation in obtaining microfilm and other reference materials; Warren Allen of Wyocena, Wis., and the Times Publishing Co. of Pardeeville, Wis., for furnishing back issues of the MID-COUNTY TIMES; Ray Meliza of Green Bay, Wis., for designing and drawing the cover; and Margaret Rummelt who, for about forty years, collected the "local news" for the "Prairie" section of the CAMBRIA NEWS and later for the MID-COUNTY TIMES. Many Dodge family news items were gleaned from these columns. Carl and Margaret Rummelt were tenants on the Dodge homestead in Scott for 42 years until Carl's death in 1965. The Rummelts were a very important part of the Dodge family during that time.

A special note of appreciation must be offered here for those who have died but, who during their lifetime, did much to foster and encourage the preservation of the Dodge heritage. They include Louisa Dodge, Ella Dodge Healy, Ruby Marquardt and especially "Aunt Annice" Cunningham.

We would also like to thank those who have contributed in special ways to the completion of this volume: Marion Lloyd, Beulah Kinkead, Mabel Johnson, Della Leary, Marion Healy and Douglas Slinger; other important contributions were made by Sherry Bornick who did research in the Columbia County Courthouse and Jerry and Marilyn Sjostrom of Athens, Wis., who did research for us in Marathon County, Wis., and assisted in the early days of our genealogical research in procedures and sources of information.

Reference is made later in the volume to the fact that the Dodge family history was to be written and published in 1948 when Wisconsin was celebrating its centennial. Now, twenty eight years later, the authors are happy to present this volume as a start on that project. It is fitting that it be published during the United States Bicentennial anniversary.

Marilyn M. Slinger
Phillip J. Slinger
1976

CHAPTER I

THE DODGE FAMILY
GENERATION IN ENGLAND

1 - ?

JOHN DODGE 0. In Vol. 44 page 297 of the New Eng. Historic and Genealogic Register for 1890, in Gleanings in England, by Henry F. Waters, A.M., is found the following abstracts of the will of "John Dodge of Middlechinnock, (Eng.) 2 April, 1635, proved 15 October, 1635. To be buried in churchyard there. To the church ten shillings. The same to the poor of the parish. To the minister for preaching funeral sermon, ten shillings. Wife Margery shall hold and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Co. Dorset, containing by estimation ten acres more or less, during her life natural if my sons Michael and William shall happen so long to live. To Wife Margery forty pounds and the bed that I now lie in and the bedstead and all things belonging thereunto. I give and bequeath unto her so much of my other household stuff as she shall think most needful and useful for her. Item. I give and bequeath unto my son William forty pounds more, over and above that portion which I have already given him. To my son Richard forty shillings. his choice in my whole flock; and to John the son of the said Richard forty shillings. And To Mary my daughter twenty shillings and to her son John twenty shillings. And my will is that all these goods shall be delivered half a year after my decease. Item. All the rest of my goods unmentioned I give and bequeath unto my son Michael whom I make and ordain the executor of this my last will and testament."

Witnesses Geo. Parsons, clerk, William Dodge, William Templeman. (Sadler 101)

- Children b. in Somersetshire England:
2. i Richard 1, appears in Salem in 1638; d. 15th June, 1671; probably b. as early as 1602 as will appear later.
 3. ii William, came to Salem in 1629; d. between 1685 and 1692. A deposition of William Dodge, made in Feb., 1678-9, says "aged about 70 years." Another deposition made by the same, 28th Sept., 1680, says, "aged about 76 years." The latter is believed to be the more correct. Hence, his birth may have been as early as 1604.
 4. iii Michael, lived and d. in East Coker, Somerset Co., Eng.: was church warden in 1670 in East Coker. Had children per parish register of East Coker:
 1. Margery 2, bapt. 18th March, 1639-40.
 2. John, bapt. 31st Jan., 1641-2.
 3. William, bapt. 31st Jan., 1643-4; m. Elizabeth Haskell in Beverley 10th July, 1665.
 4. Michael, bapt. 23d Feb., 1646-7.
 5. Richard, bapt. 30th May, 1650.
 5. iv Mary, d. in England. Had a son John.

FIRST GENERATION

2-1

Richard 1 appeared at Salem in 1638, and "desired accomodation." It was learned in 1881 from the parish register of East Coker, Somersetshire, England, that in 1628, Richard, son of Richard (2-1) was bapt. date missing, Sept. 7, 1630, Margery dau. of Richard 1 was bapt. Feb. 2, 1630-1, Margery was buried Dec. 29, 1631, (2-2) was bapt. April 19, 1634, Marie, dau. of Richard and Edith was baptized only by applying to the town and

NEHGE V 44
1890 p 297

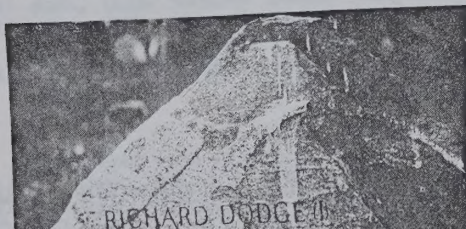
as the King was at that time obstructing emigration, it is probable that he left England without royal permission.

After living for awhile on land of his brother William (3-1), he settled on "Dodge Row" in north Beverly, not far east of Wenham Lake. The house he built stood probably where Mr. Lucius B. Dodge lately lived very near the present north line of Beverly (1890s) or possibly where Mr. H. W. Dodge now lives, (1890s) a few rods farther east. The farm lately owned by Mr. Lucius B. Dodge (1890s) was inherited from his father Richard, the son of Deacon Richard b., 1783, who bought it of his father-in-law, Jacob Edwards, b. 1746, by deed dated 23 April, 1819. Apparently the same land was bought by John Edwards, of Edward Dodge, cordwainer, Beverly, 15 March, 1781.

It had been held in the male line from the death of Richard (2-1). Mr. Lucius B. Dodge says the house now occupied by Mr. H. W. Dodge was formerly used as a Cabinet shop by his father Richard, and by him turned partly around and converted into a dwelling. It is unlikely that either house is as old as 200 years. (1890s).

Richard (2-1), the immigrant, evidently gave his attention more to farming and, the care of his domestic affairs, than to town or church business; although he was a loyal church member, and one of the most liberal contributors to the support of the church. He and his wife Edith were members of the Wenham church before 1648 according to its records, John Fiske being pastor.

He also had a high appreciation of the value of education, for in 1653, in a list of twenty-one subscribers to Harvard College, his name ranks first, while the next largest sum was only one-fourth as much as his. He dedicated a piece of his land to a burying ground, which is now known as the Cemetery on Dodge Row. It was probably inherited by his son Edward (11-2), who died in 1727, for in Feb., 1730-1, the three sons of Edward, by a deed, confirmed the grant to their relatives and neighbors. The near neighbors of Richard (2-1) were Zechary Herrick who married his daughter Mary (7-2), Peter Woodberry who married Sarah (8-2), John and Humphrey Woodberry and John Galle. He died 15th June 1671, leaving an estate valued at the large sum of 1764 Pounds 2s. He gave his sons John (6-2), Richard (9-2), and Samuel (10-2) each a good farm, valued in his inventory at over 100 Pounds each. To sons Edward (11-2) and Joseph (12-2) he gave the home farm, valued at 1000 Pounds. To his wife Edith he gave certain appropriate personal property, "to be her own absolutely," and gave her "the sole and proper use of the parlor and chamber over it in my now dwelling house," and made liberal provision for annual payments to be made to her by her five sons. She outlived him seven years, dying 27th June, 1678, at the age of 75. From this it is probable that Richard may have been born about 1602, and was about two years older than William. Edith, before her death, also made a will, and the inventory discloses a very comfortable state of worldly affairs. No gravestones, however, disclose their resting place. In 1965 Hilmey and Frances (197-157) Olson visited the "Cemetery on Dodge Row" They talked with Louis A. Dodge 8 (William 7, Abraham 6, Jacob 5, 4, William 3, Richard 2, 1,) of Wenham, Mass., who cleaned up the old part of the cemetery, cleaned up the grave markers to make them readable and decorated the graves of the Revolutionary War heroes. He also placed a large rock in the cemetery honoring Richard Dodge (2-1). The stone is inscribed:



RICHARD DODGE (1)
FAMILY BURIAL LOT 1631
RESTORED & ENDOWED BY
LOUIS A. DODGE 1962

Children:

6. i John 2, bapt. 29th Dec., 1631 in Eng.; lived at No. Beverly; d. 11th Oct., 1711, aged 80.
7. ii Mary, b. 1632; m. 1653, Zechary Herrick; d. 18th Aug., 1710.
8. iii Richard, b. 1643; lived at Wenham; d. 13th April, 1705, aged 63.
9. iv Sarah, bapt. 1644; d. 1626; m. Peter Woodbury b. 1640; d. 1704.
10. v Samuel, b. 1645; lived at Ipswich; d. 4th Dec., 1705.
11. vi Edward, lived at No. Beverly; d. 13th Feb., 1727.
12. vii Joseph, b. 1651; lived at No. Beverly; d. 10th Aug., 1716, aged 65.

3-1

William 1, came to Salem in 1629, a passenger on the Lyon's Whelp which left England April 25, 1629. More of the details of William Dodge's voyage and arrival in America will be presented in a subsequent volume.

A tradition was handed down by Col. Robert Dodge to his son Francis, of Georgetown, D. C. that farmer William came to America when about 21 or so to see how he liked it, and returned to England, telling his father that he was determined to settle in America and asking for some present. His father said, "get married and I will give it." William is said to have met with two refusals before he succeeded, but he got married and got his present, a pair of bulls.

The name of his wife is not known. It has been called Elizabeth Haskell: but Elizabeth Haskell was wife of "Coker" William 2, son of Michael 1, of which there are several proofs. Farmer William died between 1685 and 1692, as shown by deeds of land. During his lifetime only one deed shows the name of a wife; that was Mary, the wife of "Captain" Williams (14-3). She was a Conant, and at the time of her Marriage to William Dodge was widow of John Balch.

The standing of Farmer William in the community is indicated that in thirty five to forty instances, of which the records have been preserved, he was elected, or appointed, to various public services, such as selectman, grand jurymen, trial jurymen, committee service for town and church interests, laying out of roads, etc. There is also evidences that he was on the best terms with his pastor, Rev. John Hale, and in the business of preserving public order and good morals he and his sons were clearly on the right side. In May, 1685, he disposed of his real estate by deeds which are of record, conveying his homestead to his son, Capt. William, and it is today (1890s) in possession of Mr. Mason, and lies east of Cabot Street and south of Herrick Street.

Notes of Farmer William Dodge, collected by Hon. John I. Baker, of Beverly:
21 Feb. 1639. William Dodge was granted 5 ac. meadow, had 5 in family and 3/4 acre therefor.

15 Dec. 1645. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.

20 Apl. 1646. William Dodge granted about one acre between his and Hugh Larkin's lot.

26 Oct. 1646. William Dodge and Roger Haskell to see to repairs of two bridges.

17 May, 1647. William Dodge and John Balch chosen to see to the 2 bridges near their houses; to made suff. within 1 month. These are "presented".

16 March, 1649-50. William Dodge, Jac. Barney and Nath'l Putnam app'ted to lay out highway.

12 Aug., 1650. William Dodge and Mr. Conant to view land at upper end of William Dodge's and Roger Haskell's ground next swamp asked for by Robert Hibbert. By information of Mr. Conant, there being no exception, 20 acres is granted to Hibbert for commage and wood.

8 May, 1654. William Dodge, Capt. Hawthorne, Mr. Batter and Sargt. Porter to exchange lands with Humphrey Woodberry and lay out the same.

20 Oct., 1654. William Dodge chosen for Grand jury.

GENERATION 1 — THE DODGE FAMILY

- 20 Nov., 1657. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.
 18 Aug., 1658. William Dodge chosen for grand jury.
 18 Nov., 1658. William Dodge chosen for jury of trials.
 15 May, 1665. William Dodge and Humphrey Woodberry to gather "rates" for ministry.
 16 Sept., 1665. William Dodge shall be paid for his ground had for the ministry.
 3 Nov., 1665. William Dodge, Sen., with John Patch to look after Mr. Hale's maintenance.
 9 Nov., 1667. Farmer William Dodge, with John Patch, John Raiment and John West, to lay out ways.
 23 Nov., 1668. William Dodge, Sen., and others, to divide the ground between us and Salem.
 23 Nov., 1668. William Dodge, Sen., chosen selectman.
 18 Dec., 1669. William Dodge, Sen., on town committee to treat at Salem court.
 18 Dec., 1669. William Dodge, Sen., and others laid out land near Long Hill to Thomas Picton for damages on a.c. of highway between Manchester and Salem Ferry.
 13 Dec., 1669. William Dodge, Sen., with others laid out to Paul Thorndike land by Sawyer's Plain on highway account.
 17 Mar., 1671. William Dodge, Sen., with others to view bounds between Beverly and Salem.
 29 May, 1671. William Dodge, Sen., with others laid out land to Richard Brackenbury.
 31 Oct., 1671. William Dodge, Sen., accepts from town the land bought of him for minister and not paid for.
 13-18 Mar., 1672. William Dodge, Sen., with others settle bounds with Manchester.
 18 May, 1672. William Dodge, Sen., and others attend Salem town meeting about limits of town.
 18 May, 1672. William Dodge, Sen., and others to find convenient place for town pound.
 5 Nov., 1674. William Dodge, Sen., and others chosen selectmen.
 1 Sept., 1674. William Dodge, Sen., and others to lay out 3 acres to David Perkins.
 22 Oct., 1675. William Dodge, Sen., and others to oversee building four forts.
 5 Nov., 1675. William Dodge, Sen., to answer for town about defective highways and pound.
 5 Nov., 1675. William Dodge, Sen., chosen grand jurymen for the year.
 1 Nov., 1676. William Dodge, Sen., chosen selectman with others.
 4 Nov., 1676. William Dodge, Sen., to provide 7 1/3 cords of wood (for minister).
 5 June, 1678. William Dodge, Sen., with others to inspect their neighbors as to tipping, etc.
 18 Mar., 1679. William Dodge, Sen., as to Salem bounds. (with Capt. Williams).
 10 Oct., 1679. William Dodge, Sen., on committee to general court about Wenham boundary.
 3 Nov., 1679. William Dodge, Sen., chosen selectman.
 12 July, 1680. William Dodge, Sen., received 10 Pounds 5s. about Wenham controversy.
 21 Apr., 1682. William Dodge, Sen., delegate to Ipswich about Mason's claim.
 23 Oct., 1682. William Dodge, Sen., was paid for service as deputy at general court.
 5 Dec., 1682. William Dodge, Sen., with others to seat inhabitants in new meeting house.

His children were as follows:

13. i Capt. John 2, b. 1636; m. Sarah Proctor, 10th April, 1659.
 William 2. b. 19th Sept., 1640; d. 24th Mar., 1720, aged 79.
 Peter, who d. 1660; m. 2d, Thomas

SECOND GENERATION

6-2

Lieut. John 2, (Richard 1) born in England, 1631; bapt. Dec. 29, 1631; died 1711; had wife Sarah (surname unknow), who died 8th February, 1705-6, aged 60. This John Dodge was mentioned in the will of his grandfather John (1-?) who died in Somersetshire, England, in 1635. He probably came to Salem with his father Richard, in 1638. He settled in what was then included in Beverly, but later was annexed to Wenham. He built a saw mill and perhaps, grist mill on Mill River at Wenham Neck, which was in use until about 1822, and received from his father's estate about eighty acres lying about his mill, and 5 acres of meadow on the same side of Longham Brook, where his house stood, near what was then the north line of Beverly. On 5th May, 1708, he deeded to his son Andrew, his homestead of forty acres and other lands nearby. Lieut. John Dodge was a man of more than ordinary standing in the community. He was elected deputy to the General Court, was often elected one of the selectmen of the town, and served in almost every public capacity where good sense and integrity were required. There are many bits of evidence preserved, showing that he was on the side of temperance and good order. See J. T. D. Vol. I pp. 18-20.

His eldest son John, died at the age of 42, and the will, executed in July 1703, about six months before his death is preserved in the Probate Office of Salem, bearing in good plain characters the signature of the testator, and, as witnesses, the father and mother John and Sarah, and Thomas Fisk the father-in-law. The children of Lieut. John and Sarah were as follows:

17. i Deliverance 3, b. 15th March, 1660-1; m. John Parker, Reading, 2d Oct., 1689; d. Lexington, 1718; ancestor of Rev. Theodore Parker. See Parker Genealogy, 1893.
 18. ii John, b. 15th April, 1662; 1st, Martha Fisk, 2d Ruth Grover.
 19. iii Josiah, b. 4th June, 1665; m. Sarah Fisk; d. 19th Jan., 1714-15.
 20. iv Sarah, b. 13th Jan., 1667; m. Daniel Denison, Jr., 28th June, 1685.
 21. v Ebenezer, b. 1st Aug., 1670; d. 1718; m. Lydia Nowel of Salem.
 22. vi Mary, b. 15th Aug., 1672; m. John Trask, 30th Oct., 1691.
 23. vii Deborah, b. 6th Dec., 1674; d. 8th July, 1675.
 24. viii Andrew, b. 1676; m. 1st Hannah Fisk; d. 17th Feb., 1747-8.

7-2

Mary 2 (Richard 1), born about 1632; died 18th August, 1710, aged 78 years. In 1653 married Zachariah Herrick of Beverly, baptized 25th December 1636, who died 20th May, 1695. He settled on a farm given him by his father at Birch Plain. He also was a carpenter (probate records). He had some connection, apparently slight, with the witchcraft delusion. Their children were:

- i Mary 3 Herrick, b. 1st Oct., 1654; m. John Batchelder, 14th Aug., 1673.
 ii Elizabeth Herrick, b. 2d March, 1657; m. Samuel Stone, 11th March, 1684.
 iii Henry Herrick, b. 25th March, 1659; d. an infant.
 iv Sarah Herrick, b. October, 1662; m. Samuel Morgan, 22d Dec., 1692.
 v Martha Herrick, b. August, 1665.
 vi Hannah Herrick, bapt. 19th Sept., 1669; m. Jonathan Stone.
 vii Henry Herrick, bapt. 25th Aug., 1672.
 viii Abigail Herrick, bapt. 10th May, 1674.

8-2

Richard 2 (Richard 1) was born in 1643 in Beverly; died 13 April, 1705, at Wenham; married 23d February, 1667, Mary Eaton, born 1641, died 28 November, 1705, at Wenham. "The old Wenham

owned a large farm in Ipswich, which he subsequently gave to his eldest son, Richard 3. He also had land near Chibocco Lake in Ipswich. He owned a cider mill and press, and from the careful provision for its use, which he made in deeds to his sons, it is likely that they all lived in the same vicinity. About two years before his death, he divided his property among his children, giving his "negro man", Mingo, to the eldest son. He and his wife were buried at North Beverly, where their gravestones still remain. The children were as follows:

- i Richard 3, b. 12th July, 1670; d. 7th July, 1739, at Ipswich.
- ii Mary, b. 30th March, 1672, unm. in 1705. m. Charles Gott, of Wenham.
- iii Martha, bapt. 7th June, 1674; m. Dr. John Davidson, of Ipswich. On 31st May, 1705, Richard 3, Daniel 3, William 3 and Mary 3 joined in a deed of 4 1/2 acres of marsh land in Chibocco, Ipswich, to John and Martha Davidson to carry out what they alleged was the purpose of their father.
- iv Daniel, b. 26th April, 1677; grad. at Harvard College in 1700.
- v William, b. 1678; m. (1) 1699, Prudence Fairfield, who d. Aug. 5, 1737. m. (2) Mrs. Abigail Giddings; d. Oct. 20, 1765.

9-2

SARAH 2 (Richard 1), born 1644; died 11th September, 1726; married Peter 2 Woodbury; bapt. Sept. 1640, Freeman 29th April, 1668. Representative 1689 and 1691. Deacon at Beverly. Lived on his father's estate. Left property - 969 Pounds. The house they lived in stands in Dodge Row, and has been in continuous possession of the male line of the Woodbury family till the present time (1890s). Peter 2 Woodbury had married Abigail Batchelder in Sept., 1665, and by her had a son:

- i Peter 3, b. 12th Dec., 1665; m. 18th Nov., 1692, Mary 3 Dodge (36-11).

The mother, Abigail, died, and Peter 2 married in July, 1667, Sarah Dodge, as above. Their children were:

- ii Sarah 3 Woodbury, b. 12th Dec., 1668; m. 26th Feb., 1689, Jonathan Rayment.
- iii Abigail Woodbury, b. 13th April, 1671; m. 9th Aug., 1694, John Sampson, (Woodbury history says Lamson).
- iv Anna Woodbury, bapt. 24th May, 1674; m. 29th Nov., 1694, John Herrick; d. aged 95.
- v Martha Woodbury, bapt. 29th May, 1677; m. 31st March, 1693, Ichabod Browne.
- vi Jerusha Woodbury, bapt. 8th Feb., 1680; m. 28th March, 1698, George Rayment. 2nd m. Jonathan Dodge 1705.
- vii Josiah Woodbury, b. 15th June, 1682; m. 29th April, 1708, Lydia Herrick. He was gr. gr. grandfather of Hon. Levi Woodbury.
- viii Rebecca Woodbury, b. 25th Dec., 1684.
- ix Priscilla Woodbury, bapt. 31st July, 1687; m. 15th Jan., 1706, Richard Ober.

10-2

SAMUEL 2, (Richard 1), b. in Beverly, 1645; per g.s. died 4th December, 1705; had wife Mary, dau. of Thomas Parker, of Reading. Deacon Thomas Parker came over from England in the ship "Susan and Ellen" in 1635 at age 30 stopped first in Lynn, Mass. He was freeman in 1637. His wife's name was Amy. Thomas's parents were John Parker and _____ Saltonstall. Thomas d. in 1683 and his widow d. in 1690.

Samuel's wife died 6th August, 1717, aged 73. Gravestones in cemetery, Dodge Row. Was a farmer and lived in Ipswich. He left a will, dated 26th June, 1705, which amounted to 1051 Pounds 13s. The will gives

he then lived in, and to Antipas the house he lived in. The children were:

- 25. i Samuel 3, b. 22d Jan., 1668, in Ipswich; died soon.
- 26. ii Joseph, b. 14th Feb., 1670; m. Martha White, Wenham.
- 27. iii Annanah, b. 9th Jan., 1672; became a tailor in Boston.
- 28. iv Ann, Anne or Annah, b. 20th Dec., 1674; m. John Edwards.
- 29. v Antipas, b. 7th Sept., 1677; m. Joanna Low in 1699.
- 30. vi Mary, b. 6th June, 1680; m. Rice Knowlton. See will.
- 31. vii Amy (Ame on g.s.) b. 27th Aug., 1682; d. 1719. By will, 1705, she received 14 Pounds, in cattle and other sums, and 40 Pounds thereafter.
- 32. viii Deborah, b. April, 1685. By will she received the same as Amy.
- 33. ix Jabez or Jabesh, b. 22 March, 1686; m. Margery Knowlton; lived in Ipswich, Manchester, and Shrewsbury where he died October, 1774. Parker, m. Elizabeth and Mary Choate; lived in Ipswich; died Sept., 1742.
- 34. x Samuel, b. 11th Dec., 1692; m. (1) Susannah Bishop; (2) Margaret Holmes 21 May, 1730.
- 35. xi

11-2

freeman 1683

EDWARD 2 (Richard 1), died 13th February, 1727; married Mary, daughter of William Haskell of Gloucester, 30th April, 1673. She died _____, 1737. Edward and Joseph 2 were joint executors of the estate of their father, Richard, and appear to have lived on the best of terms with each other and their other relatives, in the quiet possession of the farms which they inherited jointly, and divided amicably.

Edward's will was dated 17th Feb., 1714-15; filed 20th March, 1727; mentions wife Mary, sons Edward, Mark and Jonathan, daughters Mary Woodbury, Edith Wood, Ruth Balch, Ellenor and Hannah. Edward and Mark were made executors, and were to take care of their mother, Mary. Edward like his father and many of his relatives, was chosen to town offices such as constable and collector of taxes, grand jurymen, trial jurymen, surveyors of highways, one of the selectmen, and members of various committees charged with some special duty. The diligence of Hon. John I. Baker has brought to light twenty-four such instances now on record. That he was of a kindly disposition by his living many years with only a verbal agreement with his brother Joseph about the division of their real estate, and that only six years after reducing that agreement to writing he conveyed his house and buildings and about two-thirds of his land to his own sons, Edward and Mark, to be held jointly until they chose to divide it. Their children were as follows:

- 36. i Mary 3 b. 21st April, 1675; m. Peter 3 Woodberry (Peter 2).
- 37. ii Elinor, named in will; m. Thomas Bray of Beverly, 29th Jan., 1717.
- 38. iii Jonathan, b. 3d July, 1679; m. Esther Friend, pub. 20th Jan., 1701-02.
- 39. iv Edith, b. 3d Jan., 1681; m. Israel Wood, 9th March, 1709; d. 3d Nov., 1743.
- 40. v Ruth, b. 16th Aug., 1685 (m. Israel Balch) d. 9th Jan., 1727.
- 41. vi Edward, b. 1687; m. Abigail Hayward of Salem, 14th March, 1717.
- 42. vii Hannah, b. 1692; m. Samuel Curtis, 15th June, 1720.
- 43. viii Mark, b. 1694; m. 1st, Sarah Dodge, who d. in Wenham, and 2d, Elizabeth Woodbury (Capt. Issac 3, Nicholas 2, William 1 Woodbury), the latter a brother of John Woodbury, the old planter.

12-2

JOSEPH 2 (Richard 1), born in Beverly 1651; died 10th August, 1716; married Sarah Eaton, of Reading, 21st February, 1671-2, who died 12th December, 1714, aged 64; was a farmer in Beverly, near his father, on Dodge's Row, and in almost every respect like his brother Edward. Was one of the executors of his father's estate, and received a liberal share jointly with his brother Edward. They held the same under verbal agreement until February, 1708-9, when they put their division in writing. There are other evidences that Joseph and Edward were of the same family, confirming the title of their brother

follows:

- i Abigail 3, b. 1672; d. 13 Dec., 1681, at Beverly.
- ii Joseph, the oldest son, a physician; d. 9th Feb., 1756; aged 80.
- iii Noah, bapt. 25th Nov., 1677; prob. died young.
- iv Prudence, bapt. 28th March, 1680; married Samuel Lovett, 5th Feb., 1700.
- v Abigail, b. 12th Sept. 1681; m. Abraham Perkins at Ipswich.
- vi Jonah, b. 29th Aug., 1683; m. Sarah Friend, 27th March, 1707; d. prob. 1754.
- vii Sarah, b. 11th Aug., 1685; m. John Friend, 1708; d. 1763.
- viii Elisha, b. 8th Jan., 1687-8; m. Mary Kimball, 23 Dec., 1709.
- ix Charity, b. 7th March, 1689-90; m. John Kimball, of Wenham, 22 Dec., 1711.
- x Nathaniel, b. 17th April, 1694; m. Anna ____; 4 sons, 3 dau.

13-3

Capt. JOHN 2 (William 1), 1636-1723, married Sarah Proctor for 1st wife, 10th April, 1659; married for 2nd wife, Elizabeth, widow of John Woodberry; she died 6th Jan., 1726, aged 94. He lived in Beverly, and owned a mill at the head of Beverly Cove. In 1710 he gave thirty-three acres in Wenham to his grandson John, the son of John (44-13), who died about 1700; and four acres to his grand-daughter Sarah, which, in case of her death, was to go to her sister Mary. Capt. John served against the Narragansetts in 1675, was chosen Representative to the General Court in 1693-96 and 1702, was often on grand and petit jury, and on a variety of committees for town and parish business, and was a decidedly prominent and useful man. The children were as follows:

- 44. i John 3, b. 2d Jan., 1661-2, at Salem; d. in Wenham about Nov., 1700.
- 45. ii William (Quartus), b. 1665; m. Hannah Woodberry, dau. of his father's 2d wife.
- 46. iii Sarah, bapt. 16th Feb., 1668; m. Moses Gage, seaman, Beverly.
- 47. iv Hannah, b. 16th May, 1669; died soon.
- 48. v Hannah, b. 2d July, 1671; m. Ebenezer Woodberry, 15th May, 1690.
- 49. vi Martha, b. 5th Feb., 1672-3; m. John Gilbert, Jr., 23d Dec., 1699.
- 50. vii Jonathan, m. Elizabeth Goodhue of Ipswich, 17th Dec., 1702. She died 26th July, 1703. Married 2d, Jerusha Rayment, 15th May, 1705.

14-3

Capt. WILLIAM 2 (William 1), born 1640; died 1720. Lived in Beverly, was a malster. Inherited his father's homestead. Deputy in 1689, overseer in 1679, freeman in 1683. Representative in 1690. In 1674, September 29th, helps make inventory of estate of Lot Conant (born 1624). In 1675 he was engaged against the Narragansetts, and acquired distinction for courage and skill. Hubbard, in his narrative, gives a particular account of his bravery and success. In this expedition, Josiah Dodge, perhaps brother of Capt. William, Peter Woodberry and John Balch, were killed at Muddy Brook, under Capt. Lathrop. In the historic controversy about the bell of Bass River Church (First Church of Beverly), which was captured at Port Royal in 1644, William Dodge, jr., and Thomas Tuck, sr., with military spirit, 'took' the bell and put it to its intended use. He married 1st, Mary (Conant), widow of John Balch (drowned). He married 2d, 26th May, 1685, widow Joanna Larkin, daughter of Dea. Robert Hale, of Charlestown, who died 18th August, 1694, aged 47. He married 3rd, in 1698, Mary Creatty, who died about 1st Feb., 1701-02. She was widow of Capt. Andrew Creatty of Marblehead. Her will was dated 23rd Jan., 1701-02.

Notes of Capt. William Dodge, by Hon. John I. Baker appear in J.T.D. Vol. I pp. 18-20.

The will of Roger Conant, dated 1st _____, 1677 gives to his daughter, Mary Dodge, wife of Capt. William 15, and 15 more for her five children. Her inventory

his son Dea. William his executor, his bro. Capt. John, Rev. Hale and Lot Conant his overseers."

The children were as follows:

- i (Dea.) William 3, b. 20th Mar., 1663-4; d. 17th Jan., 1747.
- ii Mary, b. 26th May, 1666; m. Jo. Herrick. She d. 1706.
- iii Joshua, bapt. 29th Aug., 1669; m. Joanna Larkin, dau. of Joanna (Hale) Larkin. He d. 15th Apr., 1694; aged 25. Joanna, widow of Joshua above, m. John Thorndike, 20th Apr. 1696.
- iv Hannah, b. 9th July, 1671; m. John Green, 4th Jan., 1693.
- v Elizabeth, b. 26th Oct. 1673; m. Jonathan Herrick. She d. 1712-3.
- vi Sarah, b. 3d Mar., 1677-8; prob. d. young.
- vii Robert, b. 9th Oct., 1686; twin to Rebecca; m. Lydia Woodberry of Chebacco; d. Jan 1, 1764.
- viii Rebecca, b. 9th Oct., 1686; d. 22 June, 1687.
- ix Josiah, b. 8th Jan., 1688-9; prob. d. young.
- x Elisha, b. 8th Jan., 1688-9; prob. d. young.

15-3

HANNAH 2 (William 1), born 1642; died January, 1689; married Samuel Porter, who was a seaman. Had one son, John, born 1658. The will of Samuel is in Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., Vol. 1, page 93 dated 10th February, 1658-9. It names his father, Porter and his father-in-law William Dodge as his "overseers", and states that he was bound for Barbadoes. His estate, left to his young wife and infant, amounted to L331 19s. His widow, Hannah, married 2d, 2 December, 1661, Thomas Woodberry, by whom she had nine children. They lived on the Capt. Thomas Lowthrop farm.

THIRD GENERATION

18-6

JOHN 3 (John 2, Richard 1), b. 15th Apr., 1662; died 18th Jan., 1703-4, in his 42d year. His first wife was Martha, dau. of Thomas and Martha Fisk, who died 29 Dec., 1697. He m. (2) Ruth Grover, of Beverly, 11 Apr. 1698. They lived in Wenham, probably not far from his father, Lt. John. His will dated 7 July, 1703, was made in the presence of his father and mother and the father of his first wife, all of whose signatures are preserved on the original document.

It was made six months before his death, which suggests some slow disease. His brother, Josiah, and his widow, Ruth, were made executors. His inventory amounted to L453 less debts L13.

In 1712 she was made guardian of her son Nehemiah, then 14 years of age. Amos sold his interest in the estate to his step-mother and his older brother, who subsequently divided it.

Their children were:

- i Phineas, b. 23 May, 1688, per g. s.; d. 19 July, 1759, in 72d year.
- ii Amos, b. about 1690. Was a carpenter.
- iii Martha,
- iv Elizabeth, b. 15th Aug., 1695.
- v Nehemiah, b. 17th Jan., 1698-9; m. Sarah Dennis, 1724.
- vi Ruth, b. March, 1699-1700.
- vii Sarah, b. 6 March, 1701-02.
- viii John, b. 13th Dec., 1703.
- ix Mary,

19-6

TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOLUME I

CHAPTER I – Dodge Biographies

VOLUME II

CHAPTER II – Dodge Coat of Arms & Origin of Name	141
CHAPTER III – Emigration to America	152
CHAPTER IV – Early Dodges in America	161
CHAPTER V – National Dodge Reunion	165
CHAPTER VI – Dodge Biographies (Part II)	175
CHAPTER VII – Dodge Cousins	182
CHAPTER VIII – Thomas Dodge by R. H. Dodge	184
CHAPTER IX – Allied Families	238
Bliss Family	238
Gorsuch Family	244
Healy Family	272
Lloyd Family	277
Ross Family	282
Sawyer Family	304
Slinger Family	310
Stancer Family	358
Steiner Family	360
Waterworth Family	362
CHAPTER X – Additions and Corrections	384
INDEX I – Index of Dodges	388
INDEX II – Index of Others	391

This book is the second in a series of books on the Dodge family.

We plan to devote space in each subsequent volume for updating the family history, correcting any errors and adding new information.

This family history is to serve two purposes: (1) provide general Dodge family history for anyone interested and (2) provide specific family information on John Dodge (1816-1898), his ancestors and his descendants.

This line of Dodges probably has as rich a Dodge family background as any line. John Dodge had 24 Dodge ancestors in eight generations leading back to John Dodge (-1635) who lived and died in England and whose two sons, William and Richard, came to America nine and eighteen years after the Mayflower respectively. They are the fathers of the largest branch of the Dodge family in America today. John Dodge (1816-1898) was descended from both of these sons because of several intermarriages of Dodges. The names of John Dodge and his 24 ancestors are charted on the inside of the front cover.

Volume I published in 1976 dealt only with the biographies of John Dodge (1816-1898), his ancestors and descendants. This volume contains general Dodge family history subjects on the Dodge Coat of Arms and Origin of Name, Emigration to America, Early Dodges in America, and the 1879 National Dodge Reunion. Also included is a chapter on Dodge Cousins. A chapter on Thomas Dodge 5 (b. 1724) of Brookfield, Worchester Co., Mass., his ancestors and descendants was submitted for publication by Richard H. Dodge of Denver, Colorado. Dodge biographies and a chapter on allied families pertain exclusively to John Dodge's (1816-1898) descendants.

This volume contains an index which includes Vol. I. Pages under 141 will be found in Volume I while pages 141 and higher will be found in Volume II.

A special note of gratitude must be offered to Mr. Richard H. Dodge who submitted the material for chapter VIII.

Much of the work submitted by Richard H. Dodge was previously compiled by three Dodge Family Historians. They were: Loyal I. Dodge (1857-1940), Maude (Dodge) Dungay (1879-1927), and Beulah (Dodge) Shearer (1898-). With the help of over fifty genealogical researchers across the country and the help of family tree members, Richard H. Dodge greatly expanded the tree to about fifty biographical sketches.

A second Dodge family line descended from Tristram Dodge is also prevalent in America but at this writing no connection has been made between the two families. An attempt was made by the authors to establish whether there was a connection in England before 1635. A professional genealogist in England determined that no Dodge history has been written in that country. Known information on Dodges in England will be presented in a later volume.

Several Dodge histories, covering both Dodge families, have been written in America since 1879. During a national Dodge family reunion in 1879 it was decided to gather the family history. At that time it was thought that all Dodges were of the same family. During the collection of data the two branches were discovered. Robert Dodge 7 (1820-1899) (Robert 6 Samuel 5, Wilkie 4, Samuel 3, William 2, Tristram 1) wrote the Tristram Dodge family history and Joseph Thompson Dodge 8 (1823-1904) (Joseph 7, Asa 6, Nathaniel B. 5, Elijah 4, Joseph 3, Joseph 2, Richard 1) of Madison, Wis., wrote two volumes in 1894 and 1898 on the William-Richard Dodge lines. In 1904, Theron Royal Woodward 9 (Mary 8, Joel 7, Joel 6, Rev. Jordan 5, John 4, John 3, Israel 2, Tristram 1) updated the Tristram Dodge history. Theron Royal Woodward's parents moved from Vt. to Kingston, Wis., and lived out their lives there.

It is from Joseph Thompson Dodge's works that the bulk of the information on the early Dodges through the seventh generation is taken. Only in a few cases have the authors changed the biographical information, mainly in the form of including additional information on land deeds and wills pertaining to John Dodge's ancestors. Where there appear to be discrepancies in spellings of family names

CHAPTER III

EMIGRATION TO AMERICA

Robert Dodge in his speech at the Dodge National Reunion of 1879 dwelled upon the subject of William Dodge's emigration to America and this chapter is a direct quote from his address:

"In my own frequent visits in England, I have met the name familiarly in Liverpool and London, and I could seldom convince my British friends that as a Dodge, I could have descended from very ancient American origin; but should be an Englishman of the Cheshire stock, with which they were long acquainted. They expressed equal incredulity as we should if John Hancock should be presented to us, an Englishman from birth and long descent. The emigration of our Scion, in 1629, in a large company, from different Counties of England, to America, was entirely unknown and of no significance to them: The record only appeared here, never in England.

As of the May Flower at Plymouth (1620): the planting of either small colony, in the wilderness, was of no moment to the rest of the people, whose life and history moved on its daily struggle unconsciously; and the Emigrants usually gave up all intentions of return. For a century previous, and from the Era of Elizabeth, the enterprise of Gresham and Raleigh started colonies in Virginia and India. These feeble outposts of England, were then so remote, and only reached by occasional ship, that it is not strange they became lost to the general public, absorbed in their interests at home.

Few or none would take sufficient interest to search the musty records of past centuries, if such be extant; to gather the materials for individual histories of this company of emigrants.

It is of little moment to them, but of much value to us; that, Two hundred and Fifty Years ago, one of our name, of the same old English stock, chose to leave home forever, and take his abode with the little Colony of Salem, in the wilds of far distant America: from whom has sprung a race far more numerous, widespread and distinguished than in the Parent Land: and for whom, as with many other, of like origin, America has proved a Greater Britain.

The enterprising Scions of old Families at Home, trammelled by the laws of primogeniture, the hopelessness of all effort to rise above day labor and its poor wages: oppressed in conscience by State and Church: justly felt, that as freeborn Englishmen, their only refuge was to brave the terrors of the Atlantic, the Wilderness, and the Savages: and plant their homes in their own self-governed Colony of true freedom civil and religious.

We know of their History: with us, now diligently researched. Little of it has ever reached England: although a greater interest was awakened therein, by our late Civil War: yet this unpopular pursuit was repressed by the influence of the manufacturing and shipbuilding magnates, controlling Earl Russell and his Ministry. No attention was given to these Colonies by the Home Government, until in the early years of the reign of George 3rd.; when to meet what was thought an appalling Public Debt, 100 millions sterling, contracted by the French War and Conquest of Canada, every resource of Internal Taxation, tried by the Bute ministry having failed; Grenville, who succeeded, laid before Parliament, like a revelation, the astonishing extent and value of the Commerce and Industry of the American Colonies.

Their existence, history and growth were almost unknown in St. Stephens. Then following his fatal Bills for Colonial Stamp duties Taxation of Shipping, and prohibition of manufacture, and any other than the Home Market; which were eagerly adopted as a happy resource, by the solid majority of Placemen; and their enforcement, in blind self-will and obstinacy by the King and Lord North; produced our successful Revolution and cost the Crown its fairest Jewels.

five vessels, which, landing at the humble Mission outpost of the Wilderness, called by the natives, from their Tribal name, "Naumkeag," in 1629: created and settled a Town and separate Community; which, in joy they named Salem, as their quiet Haven, the City of their Peace.

As frequently in that scholastic age, the name of the Colony, gave rise to some display of real or pretended learning. Cotton Mather fancies, "that the Indian name was really Hebrew, of like sound and 'meaning, viz: 'Haven of Comfort'; and they called it 'Salem': another Hebrew word, for the Peace, which 'they had or hoped in it.'"

Hubbard in his New England, says, "In this Place, 'soon after (by a Minister, Rev. Fras. Higginson, that 'came with a company of honest Planters,) called 'Salem', from that in Psalm 76. I: was laid the 'first foundation, on which the next Colonies were 'built.'"

"In Salem is his Tabernacle"

This First Settlement directly grew out of the failure of the Colonizing enterprise at Cape Ann, for which, in 1624, the New Plymouth Company in England composed of Merchants of the West of England, had obtained a Charter. In two years this Colony failed; few of their number resorted with the Missionary, Rev. Philip White, to his station "Naumkeag," among the Indians of that name. This feeble beginning was well cultured by Mr. White, whose letters engaged several of worth and influence in his enterprise: so that on March 19, 1628, (3 Car. I.) he obtained a Grant from the Council for New England to "Sir. Henry Russell, Sir. John Young, Knight, Thomas Southcoat, John Humphrey, John Endicott, and Simon Whetcombe, gentlemen: of all lands between three miles to the Northward of Merrimack River, and three miles to the Southward of the Charles River: and in length, within the described breadth, from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea"; and denominated it "Massachusetts Bay."

These absurd boundries, entailing much litigation and expense, are only to be attributed to the absolute and general ignorance then prevailing, of American Continental Geography: both of the early Colonists on the Atlantic shore, and in English official circles, continuing till long after our Independence.

Interest in this new project arose and spread in various quarters of England: where it was hailed as a Refuge for Christian men of the Established Church; who, were grieved for its lack of purity, and harassed for their non-conformity to the novel ordinances and abuses, that, since his accession in 1627 Archbishop Laud had forced into the Ritual; and also by his sanction of the public desecration of the Lords Day. It is significant, that in those days of bitter religious strife and persecution, reflected in the political struggle: all English Protestants continued in the same Established Church organization, however Puritan and separate in their convictions. Neither the members of the famous Westminster Assembly, nor their successors before the era of Charles the 1st and the Tory measures of conformity, enforced by ejection from their livings; found it necessary to accept voluntary privation, and establish the modern sect-organizations. They and their hearers lived and died in the Establishment, however grieved at what they felt to be its departure from the old ways of Truth.

The Address, from Gov. Winthrop and others, of April 7, 1630, to their brethren in the Church of England, from on board the Arbella, at Yarmouth, on parting for Salem, contains these words, which I give in the original - partly formed English, orthography.

"Howsoever your Charitie may have met with some occasion of discouragement, through the mis-report of our intentions, or through the disaffection or indesection of some of us, or rather amongst us; for we are not of those, that dreame of perfection in this world: yet wee desire, that you should take notice of the principals and body of our company: as those who esteeme it our honour, to call the Church of England from whom we are separated."

shall be in our poor cottages in the Wilderness, overshadowed with the spirit of supplication, through the manifold necessities and tribulations, which may not altogether unexpectedly, nor we hope, unprofitably befall us."

I may add that the Ministers of the Church at Salem the first Church Society—were, prior to 1657, when our Harvard first supplied its graduate: Francis Higginson, Samuel Skelton, Francis Bright, Roger Burdet, Hugh Peters, John Fisk, and Edward Norris: all, excepting Williams, natives of England, graduates of Cambridge University, and ordained in the Established Church. Roger Williams, alike ordained, was born in Wales, and graduated at Oxford. We need not delay our purpose further than to say, that, with all their eccentricities, few greater moulding minds in that Age of Heroes, can be found than those two early Ministers of the First Church of Salem, Hugh Peters: and that Prophet, exemplar, Martyr—exile for true Civil and Religious Liberty, justice and mercy to the Indian; perfect freedom and toleration to all sincere convictions—Roger Williams.

The organization of our modern sects, began in England after the Restoration; by Ministers ordained in the Established Church; the same as Methodism in the Eighteenth Century under Whitfield and Wesley who died in such membership. In the day's of Laud's tyranny, it would only have lighted martyr-fires equal to those of Bloody Mary (1553-8); to have attempted to found dissenting Sects in England, if such purpose anywhere existed. But, although feeling themselves constrained for conscience sake to begin a new life in the remote wilderness of America: Sect organization formed no part of their design. With Ministers ordained in the Established Church, they transferred their old church, purified, as they believed, from abuses, in primitive simplicity, to their infant Colony. Their isolation and colonial success, shared by the Church; with the intolerance of the Laud hierarchy at home; may have conduced to their permanent separate organization: as Independents, Presbyterians or Congregationalists.

Of course, I am here only speaking of the external organization of their differing religious opinion: whose respective merits, I do not assume to mention or discuss.

I will add that, however their Church was cherished at Salem, its membership was never made, as at Plymouth, an essential condition of civil rights, and of becoming a landholder and member of the Colony, or holding office therein. It is perhaps, more to our purpose to remark on the singular fact, that it never occurred to any Englishman of that age, to attempt a Colony in new Countries, without first obtaining a Grant of the region from the Crown.

By the mysterious fiction from the Roman Civil Law or practice: it was assumed that the Crown owned all the lands watered by a river or its affluents: whose main stream had been first ascended to tide water by any of its subjects: and an indefinite depth of the country, whose sea-coast had been alike first visited.

This rule yet subsists in International law, and was successfully applied by our government as successor to the Crown, in our Oregon and St. Juan de Fuca controversies with Great Britain; was the basis of the French title to Canada, wrested from them by England; and that of the Mississippi valley acquired by us through the purchase of Louisiana. This pretense of title in the Crown, had no regard to the settled ancient sovereignty of the natives, who were considered as the "heathen" given to us "the Lord's people for an inheritance" and without rights.

These Charters were not procured to assure Nationality and protection; for they always remained British subjects; but in all the Colonies they formed their only basis of title to their lands.

Our pioneer colonists voluntarily repaired their title by purchase and Warranty Deed from all the Indian claimants, in 1686; of their Colony of Salem, by a careful description. The Grantees named in the Patent of 1628 were all from the vicinity of Dorchester, in Dorsetshire, next to Devon, in south west England.

John Endicott, of their number, was named Governor for the new Plantation; and, sailing from Weymouth June 20th, he arrived out at Naumkeag on 6th September, 1628.

In London the Company had then its official seat: Matthew Cradock being its Home Governor, with Thomas Goffe as Deputy.

But in 1630, the whole administration was transferred from London and its officers, to Salem and to Gov. Winthrop.

It became very efficient, with ample capital and influence. Much of its official correspondence has been preserved by a careful historian, the late Rev. Joseph B. Felt.

On Feb. 16th 1629, Matthew Cradock writes to Gov. Endicott: "that the Company had been enlarged recently," and proposed "to send over Two or Three hundred emigrants, with Two Ministers, and one hundred head of cattle: that they had bought one ship of two hundred tons, and hired two more, each of two hundred tons: one of ten and the other of nineteen guns."

He had before mentioned that Hugh Peters, who was then in Holland, was expected, but had not yet arrived: he came to Salem in 1636.

The Journal of the Court of Assistants of the Company in London, at this time shows a very curious list of necessities, and comforts, very amply provided for these colonists. Such as apparel for 100 men: being "200 suits, dublett and hose of leather, lyned with oiled skin leather, ye hose and dublett with hooks and eyes:" many other articles of dress alike now unused, but of similar endurance: as: "100 leather girdles: 100 black hatts, lyned in the browes with leather; 100 pr. breeches of leather: leather drawers, to serve to weare with both the other suits," which are alike detailed, with large stores of bedding, rugs, matting; Guns small and large, artillery, ammunition, cattle and provisions.

These were all specially made--and in that age of much greater cost--for these favored Colonists.

March 3d, 1629, this Journal reads:

"It was debated howe some good course might be settled for the division of the lands, and that all men intendinge to goe in person, or to send over, might underwrite and seale some instrument to bee made, whereby every man to be tyed to such orders, as shall bee agreed upon here: and that a coppy of this agreement be sent to Dorchester ffor all men to underwrite, and seale, that intend to take passage in the Lyons Whelpe, or ells order to be taken that the Shippe procede without them."

The Company's corporate seal--the Indian being of the design still used by the state of Massachusetts--was sent over to Gov. Endicott in 1629, after the Patent of Land had been confirmed, and a Charter granted by the Crown, (4 Car. 1.) creating the Company a body Corporate, by the title and style of "The Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay" with a Governor, Deputy, and Court of Eighteen Assistants, all freemen of the company; to be chosen yearly by the General Assembly, of all the members of the company, and with full authority to make all laws, consistent with those of the Realm, for the Colony, and admit members as free of the Company: essentially, a full grant of political and religious independence.

In April, 1629, Rev. Francis Higginson was employed and settled as Minister by a special contract, of liberal terms for outfit, voyage and maintenance. This may have somewhat biased his conclusions in the quaint document giving his reasons for encouraging the Colony.

He, with Samuel Skelton of Lincolnshire, and Francis Bright, were the first three ministers appointed for the Colony. They were all ordained in the Established Church, but calvinistic in their opinion; offended by the "Book of Sports," and by the order of Archbishop Laud to read the same in time of public worship, with all his other innovations; and doubtless, would, had they remained, have been excluded from their livings.

On May 28th 1629, the Company at London write to Gov. Endicott at Naumkeag, at much length and detail, making request for the Rev. Mr. White "that attention may be shown to a number of passengers in the Lyons Whelpe, from the Counties of Dorset and Somerset; that William Dodge, a skilful husbandman may have ye charge of ye teame of horses: that Hugh Tillie and William Edes may serve Sir. Richard Saltonstall: that Francis Webb may have encouragement in setting up a Mill: and that all persons sent over by the same clergyman may be in the employment of the Company."

The earnest men who made this primitive record, however careful in all other respects, left out the birth-place or last English home of each colonist. This fact was important then, for they were mostly men of property and social position,

while some were Baronets. The population of England, then, was small; estimated from Taxes (for no legal Census had ever been taken) at about Three Million souls. A Register of each Colonist, and his place of birth or last home in England, would have been so easy, that its neglect is noteworthy; while the minutest detail of their outfit is carefully put on record: and, specially, inasmuch, as the Home Company as well as the colonists themselves, acted throughout in the apparent conviction that the Planters, sailing by this Fleet, embarked for life--to found an enduring Colony in remote America -- never to return, and only to correspond by occasional ship; and these Colonists were, in their eyes, the Elect of all England.

Not only would such Register have furnished their Posterity with the missing links to their ancestral home and pedigree, saving much labor and misty tradition; but it would have completed a substantial report of the labor and efficient service of the officers, with the strength and influence of the Company in all the Kingdom, to their "Freemen of General Court": or as we should now call them, the general body of Stockholders, their only constituents, to whom they were by charter obliged to report: while there is no evidence of any need or intent to hide the complete list of names and origin of the Colonists from pursuit of Star Chamber or other Court, such as checked (with so little wisdom) the intended flight, in their youth, of Hampden and Cromwell in later years; and, besides, among these Colonists were some of the Patentees.

But, on May 18, 1629, we find in their record at London: "The names of all the adventurers to be sent over, with the severall somes by them underwritten. It is ordered that the Governor and Councell there shall have power to allot unto every particular adventurer, that shall desire the same by himselfe or his assignees, 200 acres of land upon the some of 50 pounds, adventure in the generall stock, to the first dividend; and proportionately for more or less according to their severall adventures: and if within Ten days after their arrival and demaund made, the same be not soe allotted, that each man, being an adventurer is hereby permitted free liberty to build in any place where himselfe shall think most convenient" on ground not previously occupied or engaged. "That all such persons as goe over at their own charge, and are adventurers in the common stock, shall have lands allotted to them for themselves and their families, forthwith: 50 acres of land for each person, but being noe adventurer in the common stock shall have 50 acres of land for the Mr. of the Familie, and such a proportion of land more, if there bee cause, as according to their charge and qualitie, the Governor and Councell of New England shall think necessary for them, whereby their charge may be fully and amply supported. And for such as transport servants, land shall be allotted for each servant, 50 acres to the Mr.: which land the Mr. is to dispose of at his discretion."

This list even of the Land allotments, and thereby of the names of all the Colonists has not yet appeared; but Mr. Felt has carefully prepared, from scattered original sources, a list of all the Early Settlers of Salem, comprising over 400 names, with the several dates of their arrival, or grant of land. Of this list, only seven in all have the prefix "Mr." This designation, so long since too common for a distinction, was, in that age of strenuous punctilio, only lawful for "Captains and sometimes Magistrates, and Clergymen, Masters of Arts of any College, and Freemen of the Company." The wives and daughters of a "Mr." were called "Mrs." "Goodman" and "Good Wife" were the lawful designation of such as were not "Mr." or "Mrs." This distinction ceased about 1650, during the Protectorate. To be deprived of this title was a grievous loss of social position. In 1631 it is on record that the Court of Assistants took away the title of "Mr." from one for immorality.

Our first ancestor in America will be found carefully styled "Mr. William Dodge." The Fleet, bearing the first Colonists to Naumkeag 1629, which, on their safe arrival, they named "Salem," consisted of five ships: "The Talbot," of 300 tons, 10 guns and 30 men. "She carried about 100 planters, 6 goates, 5 great pieces of ordnance, with meale, oatmeale, pease, and all manner of munition, of provision for the plantation for a twelvemonth."

"The Lyons Whelpe, (called also George Bonaventure), Capt. Thomas Cox; of 120 tons, 8 guns, carrying many marriners, and 40 planters, specially from Dorchester, and places therabouts, with provisions and 4 goates." The whole number of persons on board the Lyons Whelpe, on this voyage, was 125, as appears

by the report of the Surgeon in charge.

The "Four Sisters:" of about 300 tons carried "many cattell, with passengers and provisions."

"The May Flower, (the same vessel that brought the Plymouth Colony of 1620): freighted with emigrants and supplies"; and "The George: of 300 tons, 20 guns, and about 30 men. Her cheefe carriage was cattel, 12 mates, 30 kyne, and some goates, 52 planters, and other provision."

According to the Lord Treasurer's warrant of permission to emigrate, pursuant to the paternal laws of the Stuarts, this company of emigrants "consisted of 60 married and un-married females, 26 children and 300 men, or 386 persons: with supplies of food, arms, clothing, tools, and 140 head of cattle."

The ship "Talbot": bearing the Rev. Mr. Higginson, who narrates his first Sea-voyage, with quaint detail and wonder: sailed from Gravesend, England, on the 25th day of April, 1629: and by the 8th day of May following, reached no further than Cowes, on the Isle of Wight; whence on the 11th of May, having been joined by the "Lyons Whelpe," they sailed together, with a fair wind. On the 26th of June he writes: "By noon, we wer within 3 leagues of Capan, and, as we sayled along the coasts, we saw every hill and dale, and every island full of gay woods and high trees." On the 27th of June, to avoid a squall of rain, they put into Cape Ann: the next day was Sunday, and religiously observed--all remaining on board the ship.

On Monday the 29th day of June, 1629, "by the aid of two Pilots sent by Governor Endicott in a Shallop, and by God's blessing, we passed the curious and difficult entrance into the large, spacious Harbor of Naimkecke. And as we passed, it was wonderful to behould so many islands, replenished with thick wood and high trees, and many fayre greene pastures. We rested that night with glad and thankful hearts, that God had put an end to our long and tedious journey. The next morning (June 30, 1629) the Governor came aboard, and bade us kindly welcome, and invited me and my wife to come on shoare, and take our lodging in his house, which we did accordingly"; and doubtless they relished together the Governor's favorite viands: venison-pasty and beer.

No other narrative of this voyage is extant, and also as before noticed, no list of passengers by each vessel.

Careful Mr. Higginson, whose Journal transcribes every incident however trivial, would have noted the significant fact, if it had occurred, that the Lyons Whelpe parted company before their arrival. It is therefore certain that she also arrived on Monday the 29th day of June 1629,* at Naimkecke; bearing, among her 4 Planters, our Progenitor, Mr. William Dodge.

He is not on record as a member of the First Church of Salem which was formed in August 1629. Its records begin in 1634.

The only two of our name thereon prior to 1658, are Richard Dodge, of the members in 1644, (who received a Grant of Land from the Salem authorities in 1633), and in 1645, Elizabeth Dodge is a member.

This same Richard Dodge was one of the founders of the church in Beverly in 1667. Beverly began in 1636; was set off from Salem, and Incorporated in 1638.

Mr. William Dodge, Senior was admitted freeman of Salem in 1639; and was also one of the founders, in 1667, of Beverly Church.

It seems almost established, that this Richard and William Dodge were brothers; and also that William had dark complexion, hair and eyes, was of over usual stature, well formed and athletic--the typical ancient Briton; while his brother Richard was of fair complexion hair and eyes--the Saxon type. They are respectively credited with the same marked differences in their descendants.

*This date, June 29th, and all other dates of days mentioned herein, prior to the Act of Parliament of 3d Sept. 1752, are of the Old Style. By that Act, which became the Law of the Colonies, and was adopted by our several State Constitutions the present New Style or Gregorian Calender of A.D. 1582, was established in England and with us; whereby, to make the Civil Year agree with the true Solar Year: Eleven days were directed to be added to dates of the Old Style: beginning with its date, September 3d was thus by law called and computed as September 14. This date, O.S. June 29th is now to be computed for its Anniversary, New Style, as July 10th.

William Dodge, 2d son of our Progenitor, is thus mentioned in the earliest book printed on this Continent, viz.: "Hubbard's Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians in New England, or Indian Wars": 4to printed at Boston, 1667, of which only three copies survive.#

"1675, Jan. 21. Capt. Prentice, his Troop being abroad, met with a Party of the enemy of whom they took Two prisoners and killed Nine: in which exploit something hap'ned very remarkable for one W. Dodge of Salem riding in company with another friend, they hap'ned to meet with two Indians: the said Dodge being better horsed than his friend, made after the foremost, leaving his friend to deal with the hindmost: but his pistol missed firing: whereupon the Indian taking him by the leg, turned him off his horse, and getting upon him, was about killing him with his knife: which Mr. Dodge, by chance espied, and came time enough to do his business also: by that means he did three good offices at once, saved the life of one friend and slew two of his enemies."

Surely, this early Chronicler--styled Historian--cannot be esteemed for per-spicious narrative.

Stone's History of Beverly (1843) says:

"The first Town Meeting of Beverly, subsequent to its Incorporation was held Nov. 23d, 1668: at which Capt. Thomas Lothrop, William Dixey, William Dodge, Senior, John West, and Paul Thorndike were chosen Selectmen." And on almost every page of his History the family name appears. By the courtesy of Mr. John H. Stone of Salem, in 1850, I have the Genealogy of the family of this patriarch, William Dodge for six generations down to 1833.

I have also numerous, though not perfected Genealogies of the family of the first named Richard Dodge: and also of the family in Rhode Island and Block Island.

Farmer's Genealogical Register of the First Settlers of New England (1839) gives: "George Dodge of Concord, 1645; John Dodge born in 1636 was an inhabitant of Beverly in 1666, and representative in the General Court for Rowley in 1664: William Dodge (2d) was admitted freeman in 1683, and representative in 1690; Daniel Dodge graduated at Harvard University in 1700."

Careful research by a competent mind, in the records, both of the towns, and of our very numerous kinsfolk resident in Salem, Beverly, Wenham, Danvers and Hamilton; together with established Traditions there, would unveil the fountains of our Family in this country, and its digested record prove of enduring value.

Many in this lengthened roll yielded their lives at Bunker Hill; and their record of brave deeds at that American Thermopylae, is lost save to patriot memory. There are no lists of names of the American killed or wounded in that brave and bloody struggle. There was no regular army organization on their side.

On that day, their guns were heard with dismay far beyond the melting ranks of Howe, that sank as before a reaper. They sounded an alarm in Parliament, and throughout England, and reached the Cabinets of the Continent; who did not conceal their satisfaction, at the heavy losses and almost discomfiture, by simple American yeomen, of their boastful enemy.

In long, sad ranks, beneath their plain grave-stones, in the church yards of Essex County, among the crowding generations of our Family, they sank to rest until the Resurrection.

From the field of battle, many of the dead were taken to their Essex homes, and laid away where they still rest, by the side of those old roads: along which they marched forth to their last struggle in June 1775.

Many of our family were of these Hero martyrs Frothingham's careful narrative gives the names; as Captains:

Abraham Dodge, in Col. Little's Regiment.

In Col. Gerrish's Regiment from Essex Co. Mass. Richard Dodge, who on the 16th

#William Hubbard was a Graduate of Harvard College, and for some time acting President thereof. His "Narrative" above entitled was first printed in quarto at Boston, 1677.

Mrs. Anna Bradstreet's Poems by some claimed to have preceded it, were first published in London, 1650: and a second edition at Boston in 1678.

June, the day before the battle, was elected Major, and Barnabas Dodge. Lieutenant Robert Dodge, Ensign Paul Dodge.

The names of the Privates, of whom so many were of our family, are not preserved.

Col. Gerrish, in August 1775, was cashiered by the severe judgment of a Court Martial: for cowardice in refusing to lead his men to the front, when so ordered by Gen. Putnam; but his whole regiment, led forward by their Adjutant, Febiger, fought bravely to the last. The regiment was simply Volunteer: neither commissioned nor full.

In the very brief and imperfect list of the dead on the American side, that were buried upon the field, is the name of James Dodge, a native of Edinburgh, Scotland, to which I have before alluded.

In every war of our History, our kinsmen have borne their part with distinction. In Colonial times, when England contested with France for supreme rule on this Continent; her armies relied for support on Colonial troops. They shared her struggle and triumph on many fields, as well as at the fall of Quebec, where the gallant Wolfe died at the moment of victory; after reciting, as is said, Gray's sad line, "The paths of glory lead but to the grave."

One of my ancestors was in the army of Abercrombie, at his Battle of Lake George, against the French under Montcalm. Doubtless, many, in these long records of the Essex Co. families, served before Louisburg and Quebec; or in the Revolutionary Army, and War of 1812, with my ancestors and kinsmen.

The War of 1812 found Henry Dodge, a native of Indiana, and son of Israel Dodge born at Canterbury Conn, a resident of the Territory (now State) of Missouri, whither he had migrated, when a mere youth, with his father some fourteen years before the United States purchased Louisiana from France. Upon the first call for volunteers to defend the frontier against invasion by Great Britain and her savage allies, Henry Dodge raised a company of mounted volunteers; and rose from the rank of Captain, passing through all the intermediate grades, to that of Brigadier General to which he was appointed by President James Madison in 1814. He was a member of the convention that in 1820 formed the Constitution under which Missouri was admitted into the Union.

In 1827 Henry Dodge migrated to the Territory of Michigan (now the State of Wisconsin), and in that year led a company of mounted volunteers, in several campaigns against the hostile tribe of Winnebago Indians forcing them to capitulate and to surrender those of their tribe who had murdered his neighbors. Here in 1832, when Black Hawk at the head of the so called "British" band of Sac and Fox Indians invaded Illinois and Wisconsin, spreading desolation and death in their track, Henry Dodge again appeared in the field at the head of a mounted regiment of volunteers, composed of his friends and neighbors. He served in several campaigns, in three of which, by almost unprecedented forced marches, he succeeded in overtaking the Indians and in forcing them to battle; viz: at the Pecatonica, Wisconsin Heights, and Bad Axe. In the fight first named (Pecatonica), of small numbers on each side he destroyed the entire party of the Savages; himself killing their Chief in a hand to hand encounter. He was soon after placed by President Jackson in command of a thousand Mounted Rangers, raised for the protection of the frontiers of the North West.

In 1834 he was appointed by the same President to command the first regiment of Dragoons. He led his regiment to the Texas frontier, and along the base of the Rocky Mountains, --(then almost a Terra Incognita)--holding councils and making treaties with some 25 different Tribes of Indians and forcing them to surrender the Americans, whom they had held in captivity for many years.

In 1836 he was taken from the Army and appointed Governor of Wisconsin by President Jackson, in deference to the almost unanimous expression of the people whom he was to govern. He was reappointed by Presidents Van Buren and Polk, --filling that place some ten years. He was twice chosen to the House of Representatives of the U. S. as Delegate from the Territory of Wisconsin, and twice elected to the Senate of the U. S. after Wisconsin became a State and passed fourteen years in the two Houses of Congress.

His son Augustus C. Dodge was appointed Register of the Land Office by President Van Buren in 1838. He was four times elected to the House of Representatives of the

U. S. as Delegate from the Territory of Iowa, and twice to the Senate of the U. S. from Iowa after it became a State; and was the first Senator born west of the Mississippi River. He served four years and some months as Envoy &c. to Spain, having succeeded the Hon. Pierre Soule at the Court of her Catholic Majesty.

I may be pardoned for saying, that when in 1850, I became acquainted with the late Gen. Henry Dodge, then revered as the Patriarch of the U. S. Senate: I was surprised at his apparent close resemblance in figure, stature and feature to the late Gen. Andrew Jackson, with whom he had long been associated.

In our late War of the Rebellion, the Army and Navy lists on both sides frequently bear our name; and it has done good service on Arctic expeditions.

The Government Blue Books, or Registers of Congress and of the Civil and Military Service; and that of almost all the Territories and States: from the beginning, will supply many names of distinction from our family: which are also numerous, and often eminent, among the Professors and Graduates of our Colleges; the Clergy, the Bar, and the Medical profession, from their earliest records, in all parts of our Land; and equally so, among the Manufacturers, Inventors, Merchants, Bankers, Mechanics and Farmers.

On consulting the most recent U.S. Gazetteer, and Post Office Directory for 1878: I find that our name is borne by four large Counties in as many States viz: Georgia, Minnesota, Wisconsin, and Nebraska: and by fourteen Towns or Villages; of which six are in the State of Iowa, and the remainder in the first named four States, together with Kansas, Texas and Massachusetts: showing the wide and numerous settlements of the branches of our Family line; and also that they are the prominent and guiding men in their several localities.

My address will have come short of its design should it fail to indicate the Topics for systematic research, required for a full, reliable and worth Genealogy of our Family.

Briefly, these Topics are: First, such an inquiry in England, probably best made by a visit to the true sources: as will show the Parentage, Family and Home, of the first arriving William Dodge: and his descent from the first Patentee of 1306: with the several Families in England and their history. These questions are not impossible to an intelligent inquirer among the ancient Families of our Line there, and their Books of Pedigrees &c. And at the same time the Scotch families of our name might be likewise traced; and also a thorough examination of all the extant books and records of the Company settling Salem for the light they may give on the subject in all its branches. And Second: to establish the relation of the first Richard with this William; with their respective descendants and settlements in this country.

For which, besides considerable and numerous private collections: the full records of each Town in Essex and neighboring Counties of Massachusetts, and of the other New England States should be put in service, and their very ample information digested.

Third: Similar analytical research, so far as practicable, should be applied, for the record of the several families, in each of the States and Territories: by well organized correspondence or visit, to the best sources, furthered by general and hearty co-operation and all authentic Family Records, relics, or Memorials.

One competent directing mind, employing a few necessary subordinates, could, from this large mass of reliable information; in a reasonably short period: elicit a well ordered and complete Genealogical biography of our very ancient and numerous Family, from its historic origin, down to the most recent descendants.

I confess to an abiding, life-long interest in the subject; whose faint outline, I have concisely, but very imperfectly presented. I cannot doubt of your equal or greater interest. I have tried to refrain from needless Family pride; but I will frankly own that I envy not the man who can affect or feel indifference to the fact; that whatever be his lot in life; he is lineally descended from such an ancient Hero race; from men, who as steel-clad Barons, wrought deeds of valor and renown in Mediaeval Wars for Norman Kings of England; and through the whole long cycle of its history of struggle, and solid though slow advance to true Liberty, took an active part; and that through the emigration of two of its sons to Salem,

Massachusetts, has spread over our whole Land; and in each generation, since England first began her American plantations; has achieved just eminence in every position of public and private life, and history.

I am fully assured that when the historic facts of this Memorial, are fully known by the wide spread Kinsfolk of our broad Land, and justly considered; its present purpose, and that of our Assembly; viz: to secure small digested and complete Genealogical Biography of our very ancient Family, from its historic origin, to the most recent descendants in this country, will meet general and cordial co-operation and early organized success.

CHAPTER IV

EARLY DODGES IN AMERICA

In the course of the researches for this history only two main branches of the Dodge family have been found, one descended from William or Richard, of Beverly, Mass., and the other from Tristram Dodge who settled on Block Island, R. I. in 1660-61. Of this latter branch some account has been given in "Tristram Dodge and his Descendants," N. Y., 1886, by Robert Dodge, but no connection has yet been discovered between the two branches except the identity of some of the names.

On page 14 of the above book it is suggested that Tristram probably came from Devonshire and was allied to the Cheshire stock but no reasons are given for that suggestion. In an obituary of J. Wayne Dodge who died at Williamsville, near Buffalo, N. Y., in November, 1889, it is stated that he was a "descendant of John Dodge who was born in 1644, near the river Tweed, in northern England and who, with his brothers, Israel and Truxton, emigrated to America in 1667 and settled on Block Island, R. I., and died in 1729." No evidence as to the value of this testimony appears, except the fact that the line of descent from John, to J. Wayne Dodge is given with intelligent detail.

At the time of the meeting of the Dodge Family at Salem in 1879, it was supposed by the author of the call that all the Dodges in the United States were descended from either William or his brother Richard, but his later investigations have led him to abandon that opinion and to consider himself and a large body of others as descended from Tristram Dodge.

Progress has also been made since the Salem meeting in learning the precise locality from which William and Richard emigrated. From papers left by the late Capt. Fred L. Dodge, and now in the possession of the New England Historic Genealogical Society at Boston, it appears that in 1881 an examination was made of the Parish register of East Coker, Somersetshire Eng., with the result of finding the births of the children of Richard and of his brother, Michael, which will be shown later in a proper place. It was also learned that Richard Dodge in 1633 was duly admitted tenant, by entry-hold, of lands in Helyar manor, East Coker; that the manor of East Coker came into possession of a Devonshire family named Helyar, about 1616, and that said family still resided there; that Richard Dodge went to East Coker from St. Badaux, Devonshire, about 4 miles from Plymouth, about the year 1616. Close examination of the parish register of East Coker did not show the name of William Dodge, brother of Richard.

In Vol. 44, p. 297 of the N. Eng. Hist. and Genealogic. Register for 1890, in Genealogical Gleanings in England, by Henry F. Waters, A. M., is found the following abstract of the will of "John Dodge of Middlechinnock, (Eng.) 2 April, 1635, proved 15 October, 1635. To be buried in church-yard there. To the church ten shillings. The same to the poor of the parish. To the minister for preaching funeral sermon, ten shillings. Wife Margery shall hold and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Co. Dorset, containing by estimation ten acres more or less, during her life natural if my sons Michael and William shall happen so long to live. To Wife Margery forty pounds and the bed that I now lie in and the bedstead and all things belonging thereunto. I give and bequeath unto her so much of my other household stuff as shall amount to four pounds, of such kinds as she shall think most need-

ful for her. Item. I give and bequeath unto my son William forty pounds more, over and above that portion which I have already given him. To my son Richard one sheep and to take his choice in my whole flock; and to John the son of the said Richard forty shillings. To Mary my daughter twenty shillings and to her son John forty shillings. And my will is that all these goods shall be delivered half a year after my decease.

Item. All the rest of my goods unmentioned I give and bequeath unto my son Michael whom I make and ordain the executor of this my last will and testament.

Witnesses Geo. Parsons, clerk, William Dodge, William Templeman. (Sadler, 101)

(Chinnock and Coker are neighboring parishes in the extreme south part of Somerset Co., and Halstock, Dorset Co. is just over the line south of the above parishes.)

If William Dodge, one of the above witnesses, was not William the emigrant, then his relationship is at present unknown. Tradition says William returned to England and was married.

From Hubbard's Narrative in Young's Chronicles of Massachusetts Bay, it appears that Rev. John White of Dorchester, Dorsetshire, being grieved in 1626 at the failure of the first company, wrote to Mr. Roger Conant:

"Not to desert the business, faithfully promising that that if himself with three others, viz: John Woodbury, John Balch and Peter Palfrey would stay at Naumkeag (Salem) and give timely notice thereof, he would provide a patent for them and likewise send them whatever they should write for, either men or provision, or goods wherewith to trade with the Indians." Answer was returned that they would all stay on those terms.

The delay in receiving returns was so great that the last three repented of their engagement and were on the point of going to Virginia with Mr. Lyford. Mr. Conant's sublime resolution to remain alone, finally prevailed with the others to remain with him. They then (1627) sent John Woodbury back to England "to procure necessities for a plantation." Gov. Endicott was sent over in the summer of 1628, arriving in September and making the colony to consist of about 100, including the new comers. His prosperous journey, safe arrival and good report, caused a large increase, and the Massachusetts company in 1629 sent over about 300 more, "most servants." In the second general letter of instructions to Gov. Endicott and his council, dated London 28, May, 1629, the secretary states that Mr. White (Rev. John) desired the following to be recommended to your care, viz:

"That you would show all lawful favor and respect unto the planters that come over in the Lion's Whelp, out of the counties of Dorset and Somerset; that you would appoint unto William Dodge, a skilful and painful husbandman, the charge of a team of horses, to appoint Hugh Tilly and William Edes for servants to Sir Richard Saltonstall, to give approbation and furtherance to Francis Webb in setting up his saw-mill, (Webb had subscribed 50 pounds, and was therefore one of the "adventurers,") and to take notice that all other persons sent over by Mr. White are servants of the company."

The Talbot, a vessel of 300 tons, and the "Lions' Whelp, a neat and nimble ship of 120 tons, "having taken on their supplies while lying in the Thames left Gravesend, 25 April, 1629, and reached Yarmouth, on the Isle of Wight on the 8th of May. Rev. Francis Higginson, who was on the Talbot, kept a journal of the voyage which has been preserved. According to his journal the Lion's Whelp had on board "over 40 planters specially from Dorchester and other places thereabouts," many mariners, 8 pieces of ordinance, provision and four goats. Both vessels sailed from Yarmouth May 11th, 1629, and arrived at Salem 29 June.

From the above we have the origin and arrival of the first of the name of Dodge in America.

William settled in that part now called Beverly, but, until 1668, a part of Salem and known as Bass River-side; being separated from Salem proper by the Bay. Tradition says that he was tall, with black hair and dark complexion, and that he returned to Lancashire (doubtful) where he married, and returned to Salem with his brothers Richard and John. Tradition is not distinguished for accuracy, and in this case it is possible that he returned to England to be married, but we find no trace of Richard in Salem till 1638, and the John of tradition is undoubtedly John the son of Richard, born in 1631, who, of course, came with his father.

William Dodge became "Freeman" 17th April, 1637, and received a grant of 60 acres of land next to John Woodbury's, 3rd September, 1637. He bought for 40 pounds. 28th July, 1644, 200 acres, "late the property of Peter Palfrey," near the head of Bass River, being a part of the Old Planters' tract, which, on the 25th January, 1635, the town of Salem granted to Peter Palfrey, John Balch, William Trask, John Woodberry and Roger Conant, 200 acres each, the whole being 124 rods by about 1,290. These grantees were all settlers before Gov. Endicott's arrival, and hence were called Old Planters.

The fact that William Dodge came to Salem nine years earlier than Richard gave him more prominence in the community, but the same fact implies a greater degree of enterprise, if not ability, than was shown by the act of following where another had led the way. Hence, William has sometimes been called the father of all the Dodges. The records, however, indicate that the descendants of Richard Dodge are much more numerous than those of William, as might be expected, since the latter left but two sons while Richard left five.

Richard for a short time lived on land belonging to his brother. He was received as an inhabitant 29th October, 1638, was granted by the town of Salem, 12th November, 1638, ten acres of land, and 26th of November, 1638, the undivided half of eighty acres more, the other half being granted to his brother William. This last tract was on the east end of Conant's John Woodberry's and John Balch's farms, whereof twelve acres were meadow. The 3d of December, 1641, the town granted to Richard forty acres more, making ninety in all. He was received into the church at Salem, 5th May, 1644. In 1667 he was one of the founders of the First Church, now of Beverly. Richard died in Beverly 15th June, 1671, leaving a will, by which it appears he left a brother Michael in England, and that Michael was to pay him 4 pounds per annum for land which Richard either owned or had an interest in. The will of Richard, in connection with the will of his father, John Dodge, lately found in Somerset House, London, renders the origin of the Salem Dodges very certain. It is also shown by deeds recorded in Register's office of Essex County, vol. xi. p. 231, and vol. viii., p. 163, that William Dodge, senior, had a nephew William Dodge (Coker William, or William of Coker, son of Michael), to whom, by a deed dated 12th May, 1685, he gave "16 acres taken from my home farm next to the south end of Brimble Hill" (on which Beverly reservoir now stands). On the same date he also imposed upon his son, Capt. William Dodge, of Beverly, the duty of paying "to my brother, if he come to New England and dwell in this town Beverly), 5 pounds per annum, so long as he shall dwell here." This refers unmistakably to a brother then in England, and probably to Michael, who was then no doubt his only brother, Richard having died in 1671. In 1692 Coker William still claimed that William Dodge, senior, had promised to give him ten acres of land, but William Dodge, senior, being dead, and the land being in the hands of his eldest son, known as Capt. John Dodge, the son honored the memory and good name of his father by giving the claimant five acres. This William Dodge, son of Michael, called also William secundus, in deeds, married Elizabeth, daughter of Roger Hascoll in Beverly, and is said to have had two sons and five daughters, among them a Mighill and a Margery. On the 20th February, 1696-7, he and his wife Elizabeth conveyed to Joseph Herrick, probably the son-in-law of Capt. William Dodge, "for 70 pounds-6s in silver," one parcel of land in Beverly, containing five acres more or less, "with my dwelling house thereon, and another parcel in Beverly, containing ten acres more or less. After this conveyance, the name of William of Coker is not found in the records of Essex County.

Before proceeding to a detailed account of William and Richard Dodge and their descendants, it is proper to make some general observations about the family during its sojourn of 265 years in this country.

The Dodges for at least four generations very rarely engaged in any other occupation but farming. They gravitated to it by a kind of natural choice. They wanted to own land and they have enjoyed its cultivation and the independent life which that occupation gave them. They have been hard workers, they have rarely been irreligious, rarely seekers after office and very rarely intemperate. They have usually been willing and reliable supporters of churches, of schools, and all that conduced to the good order and well being of society. They have been among the bone and sinew of the country.

With the expansion of population after the middle of last century, they began to push out from their old homesteads to the unsubdued lands of the frontier, and they have been found on the frontier through the northern states ever since and are to be found now scattered all the way from New England to the Pacific.

With the growth of wealth and opportunity various members of the family have achieved wealth and distinction. Some have occupied the highest rank in the field of philanthropy, some have achieved military fame and many have laid down their lives for their country. Many have acquired more or less literary distinction, and there is scarcely any useful occupation in which the family is not well represented. They are found in the clergy of various denominations in the legal and medical professions and in the professorships of our colleges.

CHAPTER V
NATIONAL DODGE REUNION

REPORT,

FULL, AUTHENTIC, AND COMPLETE,

OF ALL THE

ADDRESSES AND PROCEEDINGS

OF

THE MEMORABLE FIRST REUNION

OF THE

Dodge Family

IN AMERICA

By THE REPRESENTATIVES OF THE AMERICAN BRANCH,

AT

SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS, ON THURSDAY, JULY 10TH, 1879,

BRING THE

250th ANNIVERSARY

Of the Arrival of their Ancestors from England, and the Founding of Salem.

BY

ROBERT DODGE

OF NEW YORK CITY.

FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE GENEALOGICAL FUND

NEW YORK

E. S. DODGE PRINTING CO., 95 CAMBERS ST.

COPYRIGHTED.

1879

120 Richard DODGE IV
Sep 1751 (per gravestone)
Hamlet Parish, Essex, MA
19 Jul 1770
Sutton, Worcester, MA
25 Dec 1833
Croydon, Cheshire, NH
(now Sullivan Co)

240 Richard DODGE IV
? 11 Nov 1710
Hamlet Parish Ipswich, Essex MA
27 Nov 1736
Hamlet Parish (now Hamilton)
17 Oct 1776
Sutton, Worcester, MA

481 Martha LOW
10 Mar 1669
Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col
Dec 1737
Ipswich, Essex, MA

482 Charles TUTTLE
31 Mar 1679
Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col
22 Mar 1702/3
Ipswich, Essex, MA
6 Oct 1752
Ipswich, Essex, MA

241 Sarah TUTTLE
5 Aug 1716
Ipswich, Essex, MA
7 Feb 1796
Sutton, Worcester, MA

960 Richard DODGE II
ca 1643
Beverly-Wenham MA Bay Colony
23 Feb 1667/8
Wenham
13 Apr 1705
North Beverly, Essex, MA

961 Mary EATON
8 Apr 1643
Watertown, Middlesex, MA Bay
28 Nov 1716
North Beverly, Essex, MA

962 (Deacon) Thomas LOW
ca 1631 (occup-"malster")
Suffolk? England
4 Jul 1660
Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col.
12 Apr 1712
Ipswich, Essex, MA

963 Martha BOREMAN (Boardman)
1641
Ipswich, MA Bay Colony
1720
Ipswich, Essex, MA

964 Simon TUTTLE
10 Jan 1630/1
St. Albans, Herts., England
1663
Ipswich, MA Bay Colony
Jan 1692
Ipswich, Essex, MA

965 Sarah COGSWELL
ca 1645
Ipswich, MA Bay Colony
24 Jan 1731/2 (not 1673)
Ipswich, Essex, MA

966 James BURNHAM
ca 1650/1
Ipswich-Chebbacco, MA Bay Col
ca 1676
Ipswich, Essex, MA Bay Col
30 Jun 1729
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1638*
1920 Richard DODGE I Salem
ca 1602
St. Badaux, Devonshire
ca 1627 (lived-Helgar Manor
East Coker, Somersetshire
15 Jun 1691
Beverly, Essex, MA

1921 Edith ?
ca 1603 SW England
27 Jan 1677/8
Beverly, Essex MA

1635* "Hercules"
Watertown
1922 William EATON
ca 1607
Staple, Kent, England
28 Jan 1727/8
St. John's, Thanet, Kent
13 May 1673
Reading, Middlesex, MA

1923 Martha JENKINS
23 Nov 1605
Thanet, Kent, Eng.
14 Nov 1680
Reading, MDX. MA

before 1636*
1924 Thomas LOWE Ipswich
ca 1605
Boxford, Suffolk, Eng.
22 Jun 1630
Polstead Hall, Suffolk
8 Sep 1677
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1925 Margaret TODD
ca 1597
Polstead, Suffolk, Eng.
ca 1647
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1635*
1926 Thomas BOREMAN Ipswich
Oct 1601 (a "cooper")
Claydon, Oxon., Eng (near Banbury)
17 Aug 1630
St. Helens Bishopgate, London
May 1673
Ipswich MA

1927 Margaret OFFIN (aka Offing)
ca 1605
St. Helen's Bishopgate parish, London
25 Nov 1679
? Ipswich

1635* "Flanter"
Ipswich
1928 John TUTTLE
4 Jun 1596
Holcut, Hertfordshire, England
? 24 Nov 1627
St. Albans, Herts., Eng
30 Dec 1656
Carrickfergus, Antrim, N. Ireland.

1929 Joan ANTROBUS
25 Jun 1592
St. Albans, Herts, Eng.
ca 1660
Carrickfergus

1635* "Angel Gabriel"
1930 John COGSWELL shipwreck Maine
ca 1592
Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire, Eng.
10 Sep 1615-St. Mary's Chapel
Westbury under the Plains, Wilts
29 Nov 1669
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1931 Elizabeth THOMPSON
ca 1595 -Braitree or
Westbury under the Plains, Wilts.
2 Jun 1646
Ipswich, Essex, MA

1635* "Angel Gabriel"
1932 (Lt.) Thomas BURNHAM shipwr.
Narraganset & Pequot Wars
ca 1620
Norwich, Norfolk, England
ca 1645

3840 John DODGE
d. Summer 1635 Middlechinnock

3841 Margery
b. 15 Halstocke, Devonshire

3844 ?Peter EATON
3845 ?Elizabeth PATTERSON

3846 Edward JENKINS
ca 1568 Coldred, Kent
21 Jul 1592 Wingham, Kent
bur 17 Aug 1634 Thanet
3847 Mary PHILLIPS
ca 1556 Wingham, Kent
after 1624 Thanet? Kent

3848 Said to be Capt. John LOWE
master of ship "Ambrose" & Vice-
Admiral of Gov. Winthrop's Fleet
in 1630--unconfirmed
(for different theory see
NER 52:67)
3849 ditto

3850 Ananias TOD of Polstead
3851 Bridget Hall, Suffolk

3852 Thomas BOREMAN
ca 1570 Claydon
2 Feb 1595/6 Claydon
bur 9 Mar 1627/8 Claydon
3853 Elizabeth CARTER
ca 1575 Claydon, Oxfordshire
bur. 11 May 1631. Claydon

3854

3855

3856 Symon TOOTILL
fought Spanish Armada
ca 1560 Ringstead AHants
m ca 1592 d 15 Jun 1630
Ringstead, Northampton
3857 Isabel WELLS-"Flanter"
ca 1565 Ringstead
ca 1636 ?New Haven Colony(CT)

3858 Walter ANTROBUS
warden-shoemaker's union
b. Herts. or Cheshire
m ca 1586/7 d 1614 St. Albans
3859 Joan ARNOLD-1635* Planter"
b ca 1570 d after 1635-Ipswich

3860 Edward COGSWELL
b ca 1565 d 1616
Westbury Leigh
3861 Alice
d 1616
Westbury Leigh, Wiltshire

3862 (Rev) William THOMPSON
vicar-All Saints Church-Westbury
b 15-- m 15--prob. Braitree
d 1625 Westbury, Wiltshire, Eng.
3863 Phyllis
b ?Braitree d 19 Jul 1698 Westb.

3864 Robert BURNHAM
m 14 Oct 1606 Norwich

3865 Mary ANDREWS
of Norwich, Norfolk
7730 Daniel ANDREWS
7731



Eaton.



JENKINS

Eaton Crest: An erased (torn from body) black eagle's head with sprig of green in beak

Shield: Gold with blue fret (cross lines and square)

Motto: Vincit omnia veritas - "Truth conquers all things"

The Eaton name is of both Welsh and Saxon origin, meaning hill or town on the water. In Welsh "aw" means water and "twyn" a small hill; Awtwyn also called Eyton, "a small hillock near the water."

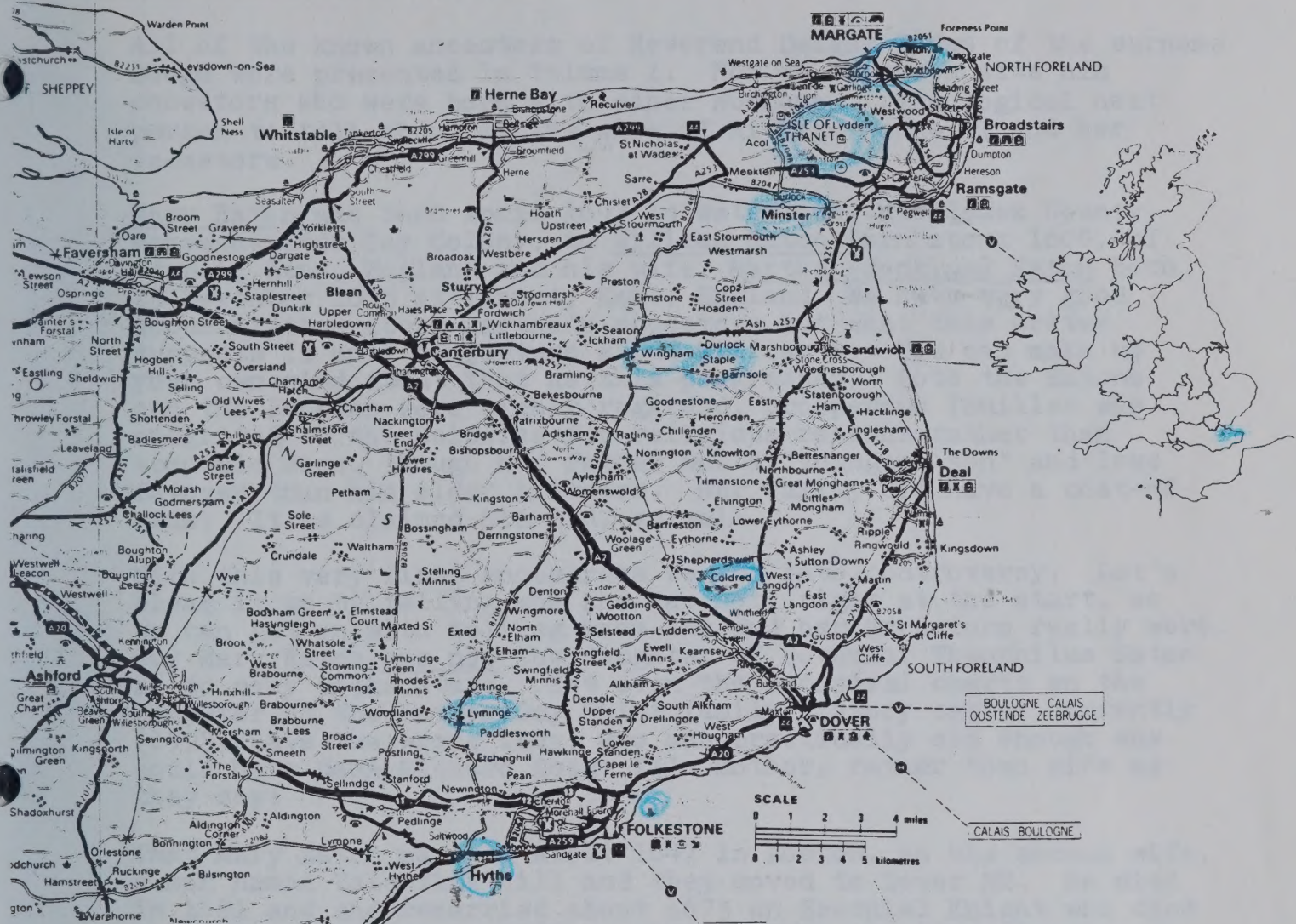
In Saxon "Ea" means water and "ton" town - hence, "Watertown."

Jenkins Crest: A lion sejant argent resting his dexter paw on a torteaux (sitting lion of silver color resting his right paw on a gold ball)

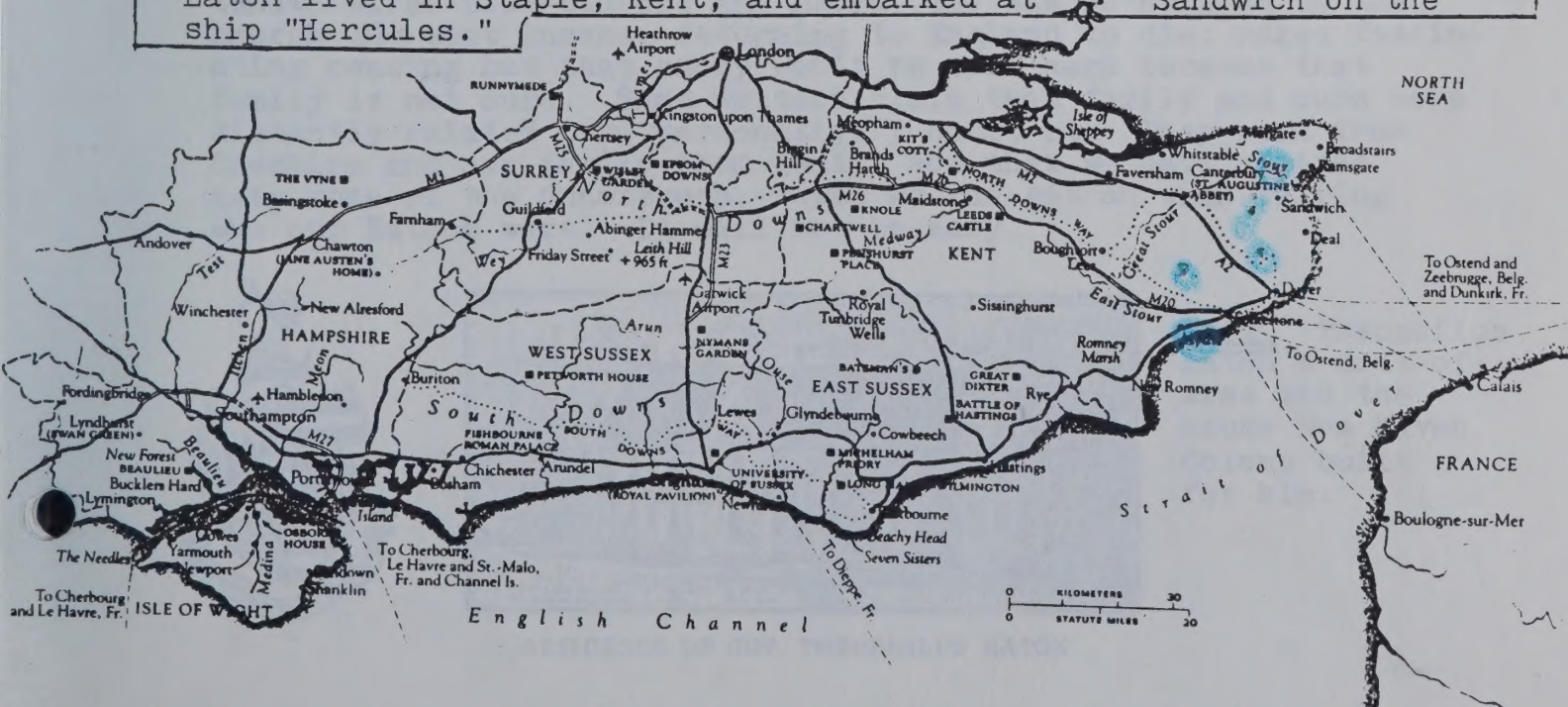
Shield: Silver (or white) shield with a sable (black) lion resting his right paw on a gold ball

The name Jenkin or Jenkins is a diminutive for John, e.g., "Johnson."

EATON-JENKINS FAMILY (2)



Modern maps of far southeastern England showing places the Eatons and Jenkins lived. Jenkins family is thought to have originated in ancient times in the "Isle of Thanet." William and Martha (Jenkins) Eaton lived in Staple, Kent, and embarked at Sandwich on the ship "Hercules."



All of the known ancestors of Reverend Dwight Dodge of the surname Dodge were presented in Volume I. Now we carry on with his ancestors who were born with other surnames. The logical next person to tell about is the wife of Richard Dodge II and her ancestors.

Mary Eaton was born April 1643 in Watertown, Middlesex County, Massachusetts Bay Colony, to William Eaton born about 1604, of Staple, Kent, England and his wife, Martha (Jenkins) Eaton born 23 November 1605 at Thanet, Kent, England. We have very good documentation about Martha's ancestors but what this writer suspects is only conjecture about William's. You can make up your own mind about that as this progresses. Both the Eatons and the Jenkins were highly regarded, prosperous families who emigrated to the Colonies for religious reasons rather than economic ones, though her father was a "youngest son" and less favored than his older brothers. Her family did have a coat-of-arms. It is claimed his did, as well.

With this very first ancestress we run into controversy. Let's clear it up by telling who she was not, right at the start, so we can get on with telling whom she and her ancestors really were. Our Mary Eaton was not the daughter of Governor Theophilus Eaton as so many books state. Yet even the ancestral charts on the computer at the Latter Day Saint family history center currently (1993) have the wrong lady, who was practically old enough she could have been Richard Dodge II's mother, rather than wife as they say!

That Mary Eaton married about 1647 in Boston, as his second wife, a man named Valentine Hill and they moved to Dover NH. He died in 1661 and she remarried about 1675 an Ezechiel Knight who died in 1687. She died in 1708 as Widow Knight in either Dover or Wells, Maine. Her father, Theophilus Eaton, became Governor of New Haven Colony. He was a filthy rich though austere, strong-minded but rigid Puritan. His biography and that of his unfortunate wife, blue-blooded Ann Lloyd, who was so harried by the church she went insane, returning to England to die, makes fascinating reading but that story won't be told here because that family is not ours. Some writers claim that family and ours were distantly related but, personally, I doubt it. They were from Cheshire and our family from Kent. Now that we have cleared away some of the underbrush, maybe we can get on with telling who our Eatons were. It will not be easy.



RESIDENCE OF GOV. THEOPHILUS EATON

Left. Theophilus Eaton's coat-of-arms and the house New Haven Colony built for him.

EATON-JENKINS FAMILY (4)

Ship's Passenger List of the "Hercules" 1637 - Sandwich, Kent to Watertown, MA. Relationship to Richard Jenkin unknown. Presence of all those Bachelor family members may tie our family to John Eaton of Watertown/Dedham.

[46]

HERCULES PASSENGERS

147

md That all those that have noe Certificats affixed that they had taken the oath of Supremacy & Allegiance tooke the said oaths before the Mayor of Sandwich

The Mayor & Jurats of Sandwich

A true Roll or list of the names surnames and qualities of all such persons which have taken passage from the Town & Port of Sandwich in the County of Kent for the American plantations since the last certificate of such passengers returned into 11 May 1637

Children Servants

- | | | |
|---|---|---|
| 1 Thos Starr of Canterbury yeoman & Susan his Wief | Constant Starr | |
| 2 Edwd Johnson of Canterbury Joyner & Susan his Wief | Edward George William Mathew John Susan Martha John Henry Lidia | John ffarle John Inglad Ann Norcott |
| 3 Nicholas Butler of Eastwell yeoman & Joice his Wief | John | John Pope John Gill Richd Jenkin ✓ Marg ^t Angells Christian Spice Edwd Page John Granger Grace Granger John Bucke Susan Bucke Saml Taylor Margerie Walker Thos Granger Edwd Harnet Mary Call |
| 4 Samuel Hall of Canterbury Yeoman & Joane his Wief | | |
| 5 Henry Bachelor of Dovor Brewer & Martha his Wief | | |
| 6 Joseph Bachelor of Canterbury Taylor & Elizabeth his Wife | Marke Bachelor | |
| 7 Henry Richardson of Canterbury & Mary his Wief | John Henry Elisabeth Mary Rachell | |
| 8 Jarvese Boykett of Thanington Carpenter | | Steven Granger |
| 9 John Bachelor of Canterbury Taylor | | |
| 10 Nathaniel Ovell of Dovor Cord-winder | | Thos Granger |
| 11 Thos Calle of Feversham husbandman & Bennet his Wief | Thomas John Margaret | |

148

SHIP PASSENGER LISTS

[46]

- | | | |
|---|--|---------------------------|
| ✓ 12 Wm Eaton of Staple husbandman & Martha his Wief | John Martha Albe Joseph Zacharie Sara Mary Mathew John Hanna Elisabeth | Jonas Eaton |
| 13 Joseph Coleman of Sandwich Shoe maker & Sara his Wief | | |
| 14 Mathew Smith of Sandwich Cord-winder & Jane his Wief | | |
| 15 Marmaduke Peerce of Sandwich Taylor & Mary his Wief | | John Hooke his apprentice |
| In Witness whereof wee the Maior & Jurats of the towne & porte of Sandwich aforesaid have hereunto caused the seale of the Office of Maioraltie to be put & sett dated the nyenth day of June in the twelveth yeare of the reigne of our sovrayne lord King Charles by the grace of God of England 1637. | | |
| [Notes appended to this article as originally printed give additional data on Jonas Austen, Henry Bachelor, John Bachelor, Joseph Bachelor, Thomas Besbeech, Robert Brooke, John and Susan Bucke, Thomas Calle, William Hatch, Samuel Hinckley, John Hooke, Edward Johnson, Joseph Pacheury, Marmaduke Peerce, John Pope, Christian Spice, Thomas Starr, Comfort Starre, Nathaniel Tilden and their relatives.] | | |
| James Savage, "Gleanings for New England History," Collections of The Massachusetts Historical Society, 3rd series 8 (1843), 243-348; 3rd series 10 (1849), 127-146 [Lancour No. 47]. | | |
| This material has been treated subsequently by Charles Edward Banks in Lancour No. 35. | | |

The only complete Eaton Genealogy found so far which purports to tell William Eaton's ancestry is the one by Molyneaux, written in 1911, but the reader should be wary of any book which does not give detailed documentation, or at least dates. Much of that book appears to be based on old heraldry or "visitation" books, lacking proof but open to conjecture. However, despite skepticism about that book, it has been decided to incorporate part of it here for three reasons:

- 1--Bad as it is, elements of truth may have been stumbled into. Some of the people mentioned were in the right location to be ours, and we should accept pearls wherever we find them.
- 2--If the reader is ambitious enough to seek for the truth yourself, you will keep running into these names and will thus know the source of the information.
- 3--It is the only known genealogy which even pretends to cover the subject.

Most of the books you will find seem to accept the conclusions of the Molyneaux book without question, stating that Peter and Elizabeth (_____) (Patterson) Eaton were William's parents, and perhaps they were. Since it is rather obvious Jonas Eaton was a younger relative, some of them give Jonas the same parents. Molyneaux calls John Eaton of Watertown and Dedham William's first cousin, son of Nicholas and Kathern (Masters) Eaton. It seems to this writer that either of these men could easily have been William's brother, since they were only about 18 years apart in age. John's wife's maiden name was Abigail Bachelor. Quite a few people surnamed Bachelor accompanied our Eaton family on the same ship.

For your amusement, the purported ancestry of William Eaton starting with the year 1000 A.D. onward is presented:

EATON ANCESTRAL CHART

- | | | |
|-------|---|----------------------|
| I | Banqui, Thane of Lochabar, A.D. 1000 | |
| II | Fleance son of Banqui, m. Guenta, Princess of North Wales | |
| III | Alan Fitz Flaald m. Amiera.... | |
| IV | William Fitz Alan, m. Isabel de Say | |
| V | Robert de Eaton, m. _____ | |
| VI | Peter de Eaton, m. _____ | |
| VII | Sir Peter de Eaton, m. Alice.... | |
| VIII | William Eaton m. Matilda.... | |
| IX | Sir Peter de Eaton, m. Margary.... | |
| X | Peter de Eaton, m. _____ | |
| XI | John Eaton, m. _____ | |
| XII | Robert de Eaton, m. _____ | |
| | Peter de Eaton (Eyton) m. _____ | (does not say which) |
| XIII | Humphrey Eaton, m. _____ | |
| XIV | Georgius Eaton, m. _____ | |
| XV | Sir Nicholas Eaton, m. Katherine Talbot | |
| XVI | Louis (Lewis) Eaton m. Anna Savage | |
| XVII | Henry Eaton, m. Jane Cressett | |
| XVIII | William Eaton, m. _____ | |
| XIX | William Eaton, M. Jane Hussey, d. before 1584 | |
| XX | Peter Eaton, m. Elizabeth Patterson. | |
| XXI | William Eaton, m. Martha Jenkins | |

Item XII on the chart is interpreted to mean Humphrey XIII was grandson of John XI but they were not sure which son, Robert or Peter, was the father. We continue.

Backing up to generation XIX, William Eaton of Dover, Kent, died before 1584. His widow, Jane (Hussey) Eaton made her will 27 Aug 1584 and it was proved 29 Dec. that same year. From it we understand that she was a widow and executrix of the will of her late husband, William. Her body was buried in the church yard of St. James at Dover. She names her oldest son William Eaton, her sons John, Peter and Nicholas, then under age, and gives directions for the education of Peter and Nicholas, that "they shall be kept for one year more in France, to learn the French tongue, and shall afterwards be put to some science or occupation." She makes her son-in-law, Jacques (or James) Huggenson her sole executor and mentions "my other children."

Children of William and Jane (Hussey) Eaton:

Joyce Eaton m. Jacques (or James) Huggenson, issue: James, Jr.
Barbara m. Allen
William (b 1570) m.-second- Joan Winch
John
+Peter m. Elizabeth Patterson
Nicholas (b 1573) m. (1) Katherine Master (2) Mrs. Joan Gibbs

The book goes into detail about descendants of Nicholas, the last child listed, claiming John Eaton who emigrated to Watertown in 1635 was his son. We follow son Peter.

Peter Eaton, the third son of William and Jane (Hussey) Eaton, married 28 January 1603, Elizabeth, widow of _____ Patterson. The license for the marriage is recorded at Canterbury and the marriage is recorded at Canterbury. The marriage, itself, was at St. Mary's Dover, so one might presume the bride was from the Dover area. Since she was a widow, maiden name unstated, she could have been a native of about any part of Kent, but likely the Dover region. Eight children of this marriage are on record:

Children of Peter and Elizabeth () (Patterson) Eaton:

Jane bapt 17 Mar 1604 m. Shemall
Katherine m. William Robinson in 1626
? William bapt 26 Sep 1608, died young
Joyce bapt 1 Sep 1611 m. Edward Ranger in 1632 who d. bef. 1665
had 2 sons, John & Peter Ranger
Peter bapt 3 Jul 1614, d. 1628
John bapt 23 Oct 1616, living 1636
Elizabeth bapt 12 Aug 1619, living 1636
Nicholas bapt Jul 1623, d. 1628

Peter's death date was not given, probably not known. Elizabeth was buried 8 Jan 1631.

The rationale for stating our William was son of Peter and Elizabeth completely escapes this writer, as their William was said to have "died young" and was slightly young to be ours anyway. It was not unheard of in those days to give two sons in the same family the same name, but it was unusual.

The people on the previous page did live in far eastern Kent, as did our family. That evidently was an armigerous family, and so was our Jenkin family. The following two men, Jonas and John Eaton both came from the very same town, Staple, Kent, and must have been very, very closely related, so blurbs about them are presented below:

There is much speculation that Jonas Eaton (1618-1674) was a younger brother of William. That is very likely--at least there was some relationship between them. When he was nineteen years old he came with the family in the same ship. We should not let his being called "servant" on the Hercules passenger list confuse us. That word was not then used in the modern sense. Relatives were often listed as servants in those old lists. He stayed with them at Watertown at first, and later moved to Reading when he did.

Jonas Eaton married about 1642 Grace (____). They owned property in Reading in 1647, when he was a town officer. Jonas and Grace were listed as members of the church in 1648. He died 24 Feb 1673 (will prob 7(2)1674 old style). In 1680 Grace married Henry Silsbee.

Children of Jonas and Grace (____) Eaton:

Mary	b. 8(12)1643 OS	
John	10(7)1645 - 1691 m. 26 Nov 1674	Dorcas Pearson (1650-) she m/2 Abraham Bryant
Jonas	24(7)1648 stillborn	
Joshua	4(10)1653 - 1717 m/1-25 Apr 1678	Rebecca Kindell (1657-1690) 2-18 Dec 1690 (Ruth (Pierce) Kirtland (-1714) (She married x5
James	NFR	
Joseph	NFR	
Lt. Jonathan	6 Dec 1655-8 Jul 1743	m/1-15 Aug 1683 Elizabeth Burnap (-1688) 2- 2 Apr 1691 Mary Cowdry?/Brown (-1727+)

It appears John Eaton (ca 1600-1658) was a close relative, perhaps an older brother. John Eaton married 5 April 1630 at Staple, Kent, England, Abigail (Bachelor) Damon, Widow of Henry Damon/Dammant. They came to Watertown in the Elizabeth & Ann which sailed in April 1635, bringing Mary 4, Thomas 1, and her two children from the first marriage, Jane 9, and John.

They were listed as property owners in Watertown on 25 May 1636. The next year, 1637, they moved to Dedham and William with Jonas came to Watertown. He died 17 Nov. 1658--his will contain bequests to wife Abigail, John, Mary, Abigail; also John Plimpton of Medfield and "kinsman" Edward Hodson whom writer cannot find in the records.

Children of John and Abigail (Bachelor) Eaton:

Thomas	b. 1634	died young 10(7) 1649 OS
Mary	1631 m. 5 May 1651	John Mason
Abigail	6(11)1639 OS 10 (9)1659	Robert Mason, bro. of John
John	6 Jan 1640 ca 1665	Alice (____) He died 1694
Jacob	8(04)1642	died young 20(01)1646 OS
John Damon (	-1708) married about 1650	Abigail Sherman (-1713) daughter of Richard S, Reading
Jane Damon (1626-	) married/1 at Dedham 13 Mar 1643/4 John Plympton	/2 at Medfield 16 Mar 1679/80 Nicholas Ide(or Hide

Below are some excerpts from Boston Transcript Genealogical Inquiries. (parts that do not concern us are truncated)

*5685. G. Eaton, Dodge. ^{13 Jan. 1914} F. D. R., Oct. 9, 1916. William (1) Eaton was a husbandman at Staple, Kent, England. Embarked at Sandwich, England, June 9, 1637. Lived at Watertown and Reading. Died May 13, 1673. His wife Martha Jenkins died Nov. 14, 1680. His children were: Mary, buried at Staple, July 29, 1634; Martha, baptized at Staple, Sept. 19, 1630, married Richard Oldham and Thomas Brown, both of Cambridge; Abigail, baptized at Staple Feb. 19, 1632, married, Sept. 7, 1650, Francis Moore; William, baptized at Staple, Jan. 12, 1634, buried Aug. 11, 1634; John, baptized at Staple, Dec. 20, 1635, married March 8, 1653, Elizabeth Kendall; David, born at Watertown, Jan. 20, 1640, married, Dec. 21, 1664, Mary —; Mary, born at Watertown, April 8, 1643, died Nov. 28, 1716, married, Feb. 23, 1668, Richard Dodge. W. W. N. Y.

(5344.) EATON. In reference to numerous inquiries as to the Eaton ancestry, I wish to say that any Eaton descendant of William, Jonas or the two John Eatons is eligible to the following societies: Colonial order of the Crown (Charlemagne, 778); National Society of Magna Charta Dames (1215); Knights of the Most Noble Order of the Garter (Edward III) ^{Sept 29 - 1932} G. E. N.

5344. EATON. G. E. N., Sept. 29, 1932. In this query G. E. N. stated: "I wish to say that any Eaton descendant of William, Jonas, or the two John Eatons is eligible to the following societies: Colonial Order of the Crown (Charlemagne, 778); National Society of Magna Charta Dames (1215); Knights of the Most Noble Order of the Garter (Edward). ^{Nov 3 - 1932}

As the only consecutive historian of any branch of one of the American Eaton families in print ("The Eaton family of Nova Scotia, 1929"), I should like to say that I know of none of these societies to which descendants of any one of these founders of Eaton families is eligible. In the first place none of these founders is certainly known to have had any relationship to any of the others. They came from different counties of England and their respective pedigrees have not been traced in England.

A. W. H. E.

Regarding Jonas Eaton's Descendants:

2887. 2. EATON. A. L. H. W., Jan. 6, 1932. I have no memorandum of the children (would be glad to have it if anyone can furnish it) of Samuel (3) Eaton, except the child, Sarah, born July 27, 1733, married, May 21, 1752, Deacon David Bigelow, but I am glad to answer as to the Eaton ancestry, and if the inquirer would like a long line in England I will find it in New England Genealogies, page 1403. If desired I can also furnish that for publication. Beginning with the emigrant to America: Jonas (1) Eaton of Watertown, Mass., died Reading, Mass., Feb. 24, 1674, son of Peter Eaton and Elizabeth Patterson. Jonas (1) and Grace — (has her identity been discovered?) had seven sons and two daughters. Grace married, second, Nov. 18, 1680, Henry Silsbee, Jr.

The sixth child of Jonas and Grace was Lieutenant Jonathan, born Dec. 6, 1655, died Reading, July 8, 1743, married, first, in 1683, Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Burnap, Jr., by whom he had Sarah, Jonathan and Elizabeth. He married, second, a Mary —. This wife is the one whom you and I are interested in, but I never have been able to establish her identity. Has anyone else had better luck? ^{Feb 8 - 1932}

By the second wife, Mary, he had eight children, the sixth being Samuel (3) born Nov. 1, 1702, died Dec. 16, 1768, at Haverhill, married March 20, 1722, Ruth (4) Russell, born Woburn, Mass., Jan. 16, 1699, died Haverhill, Oct. 25, 1773, daughter of John (3) Russell and Elizabeth, daughter of John (3) Palmer and Elizabeth (2) daughter Andrew (1) Alger, son of John (2) Palmer and — (who?), son of John (1) and Audrey —. John (3) Russell was son of Rev. John (2) Russell and Sarah (2), daughter of John (1) Champney. He was son of Deacon John (1) Russell, born in England and married there to his first wife, Elizabeth —. Is his English ancestry known?

return to Samuel (3) Eaton, this is the man whom you say was a mason and had son Jonathan (who left a widow Sarah), and who died about 1750.

F. M. S.

The following JENKINS FAMILY pedigree is lifted from the much more detailed article in the New England Register Vol 76:54-75 by Eben Putnam of Wellesley Farms, MA - very well done.

We spell it Jenkins nowadays, but, as with most surnames, in days of old variously. Here are some examples. The people in this paragraph were probably our relatives, but they have not yet decided in what way. In 1490 Joan Jenkyn of Hith, co. Kent, wife of William Jenkyn, made her will just in case, proposing to visit the shrine of St. James in Galicia and other holy places. Alice Genkyn of Lymmynge, co. Kent made her will in 1499. Another long interesting will was made by William Jenken of Hethe, co. Kent in 1522. Thomas Jenkyn the elder of Lymmynge, co. Kent in 1536 was suffering from "infirmyte of sickness." William Jenkyn of Lyminge, co. Kent in 1556 provided, among other bequests, for a mass and dirge at "my month's day and for bread, drink and pastie to refresh the poor people and all that shall be there."

In the article, Mr. Putnam goes on to state the following:

"A pedigree of the Jenkin family of Coldred, co. Kent, branches of which are found, in the seventeenth century, in several parishes on the Isle of Thanet, is printed in Berry's 'Pedigrees of the Families in the County of Kent,' published in London in 1830, pages 484-5, immediately following a pedigree of the Jenkin family of Folkestone, which is given on pages 482-3. To Jenkin of Folkestone the most prominent family of the name in Kent, Berry ascribes the following arms: Argent, a lion rampant regardant sable; and the same coat of arms is given in the pedigree of this family in the Visitation of Kent, 1619.

"To the branch of the Coldred family seated at Minster in Thanet, which was descended from from Thomas Jenkin (note--he was Martha's cousin!) Berry gives the following crest: A lion sejant argent, resting his dexter paw on a torteaux. From time to time intermarriages took place between members of the Folkestone and Coldred families, and it is probable that the two families were descended from a common ancestor, although investigations...were not carried far enough to prove the correctness of this conjecture.

"From the records given, the following genealogy of the Coldred family has been compiled, establishing the place of Martha (Jenkin) Eaton among the descendants of Henry Jenkin of Coldred, and making sundry corrections and a number of additions to Berry's pedigree..."

Mr. Putnam gave the abstracted texts of numerous wills, probate records, and parish records of many churches in the area--birth, marriage, and burial records. Only a few of the many will be shown here. It is suggested that if the reader wants the whole text, the New England Register is available at almost all large libraries.

Jenkin¹ of Lymmage (Lyminge) co. Kent, was descended from Jenkin, probably of Hythe, co. Kent, but a common origin may reasonably be claimed for the Jenkin families of Coldred, Folkestone, Lyminge, and Lympe in that county.

Children:

+Henry, b. ca 1525, probably at Lyminge

Jean living 26 Jan. 1574/5 as Mrs. Parrett.

Elizabeth m. (1) at Coldred on 5 Aug 1566 Thomas Harrison
prob. m. (2) Henry Rachell and was living Jan.
1613/4. She had children by Mr. Harrison living 1574/5.

Henry Jenkin² (1) of Coldred, co. Kent, yeoman, the testator of 1574/5 born probably at Lyminge ca 1525, died between January and 9 July 1575. He married Margaret (or Margery) the testatrix of 1607 whose will was proved 14 Mar. 1609/10.

Henry was Churchwarden at Lyminge in 1563 and held lands in Lyminge, Postling, and Coldred. (Berry's "pedigrees" mistakenly gives his Christian name as Thomas.) His widow in her will mentions her lands in Hythe, West Hythe, and Saltwood.

The Will of Henry Jenken of Colredd (Coldred) c. Kent, yeoman, dated 26 January 1574/5. To the church at Colredd 6s 8d. To Edward Jenkyn, my youngest son, fourscore pounds, viz., L40 at the age of eighteen years, L20 at the age of twenty-one years and the remainder at the age of twenty-four years; but if he die, to his brothers. To my son Richard Jenkyn, at the age of sixteen years, --ewes or L40 and ten wethers. To Marian Jenkyn, Rose Jenkyn, Elizabeth Jenkyn, and Jane Jenkyn, my daughters, to each L20 at the age of eighteen years. To my daughter Margaret a red mare. To my sister Jean Parrett 6s 8d for life. Other bequests to daughters above, Henry Parrett, Robert Dyrick. To my sister Elizabeth Harryson's children. To my wife Margaret. To my eldest son Thomas and wife Margaret. To my son Richard at the age of twenty years.

Executors: my son Thomas and wife Margaret. To my son Thomas lands in Colredd; and if he die without issue, to Edward Jenkyn. Land in Lymmage and Postling to my wife Margery until Richard is twenty years of age, and also to my wife lands in Postling until my son Edward is twenty years of age, when Richard is to have the lands in Lymmage and Edward the lands in Postling. Witnesses: Stephen Spyser, John Hammond, Robert Backe, Thomas Graye. Proved 9 July 1576. (Archdeaconry of Canterbury, Vol 42, fo. 171)

The will of Margaret Jenkin of Coldred (co. Kent) widow, dated 6 April 1607. To the poor of the parish of Caple, 3s 4d. To Marrian Rolfe, my daughter, my best gown, best petticoat and best hat. To Abigail Lushington, daughter of Thomas Lushington, my son-in-law, all my beds, bedding, sheets, linen and woollen. To Thomas Jenkin, my eldest son, one piece of gold at 10 shillings. To Richard Jenkin, my second son, 40s. To Edward Jenkin, my youngest son, one piece of gold, 10s. To Elizabeth Saunders, my daughter, L5. To Margaret Percye my daughter, 20s. To Marryan Rolfe, my daughter, L10 and an annuity of 10s out of my lands in Hythe, West Hythe, and Saltwood. To the said Abigail Lushington L15. To Thomas, son of said Thomas Lushington, my son-in-law, L10, each to be the other's heir. To all the children of my sons and daughters a lamb. Residue to my said son-in-law Thomas Lushington, whom I make my executor.

To Jane Lushington, my daughter, wife of the said Thomas Lushington, and her assigns all my lands in the parishes of Hythe, West Hythe, Saltwood, or elsewhere in Kent, for twelve years after my decease, the said lands to go to John, eldest son of Thomas Lushington, and his heirs for ever, with reversion to such son or sons and then to each daughter or daughters begotten by said Jane, and then reversion to said daughter Jane and her heirs forever. Witnesses: Richard Mummereyes, Daniel Woodward, Edward Nashe. The mark of Margery Jenkin. Proved 14 March 1609/10 by the executor. (Consistory of Canterbury, vol 56, fo 343)

The first two children were baptized at Lyminge, the others probably at Coldred.

Childred of Henry and Margaret () Jenkin:

Ursula	bp. 9 Oct 1551	(d.
Thomas	24 Dec 1553- Feb 1613/4 m.	Margaret Johnson (1616 at Sandwi
Margaret	living 1607 m.	Percye
Marian	under 18-1575	"
Rose	" " d.bef.1607?	9 Oct 1581 Robert Harvey
Elizabeth	" " liv. 1607	Saunders
?Isabel	bp 19 Nov 1563	died young?
Richard	7 Jun 1566-d.1612	Priscilla () d. after 1612
+Edward	ca.1568-17 Aug 1624	21 Jul 1542 Mary Phillips
Jane	28 Feb 1573/4- after 1607	John Lushington

Does it not seem to you that the mother was living with the youngest daughter, Jane Lushington, during her last years? She left her lands to the oldest of the four Lushington children, John Jr. It seems to have been the custom, however, to leave only a token bequest to children who had already received their portions. The boys had received lands in their father's will. We do not follow Thomas, but he was wealthy when he died, leaving land at Coldred, Eythorne, Dymchurch, Orgarswick, Burmarsh, Tydmeston, and Northbourne, co. Kent.

Edward Jenkin³ (Henry² ———¹) of Wingham and of St. John's in Thanet (Margate) co. Kent, yeoman, called "youngest son" in the wills of his parents and, therefore, probably born at Coldred about 1568, his next older brother, Richard, having been baptized there in 1566. His father devised him in his will, lands in Postling, co. Kent, which he was to receive when he was twenty years of age.

On 21 July 1592, in St. John's church, Edward married Mary Philip. Canterbury Marriage Licenses Book puts it this way--

1592 Edward Jenkins of Wingham and Mary Philips of the same parish, virgin, Henry Oxenden, Jr., of Wingham, Gentleman, being bondsman, 21 July (1:235)

Mary's relationship to her bondsman was not stated but there undoubtedly was one. Probably an uncle or stepfather? In very olden times a feudal landlord might have sponsored a tenant, but it is doubtful that was the case in this instance. Her family probably owned their own land.

It is too bad we don't know more about Edward and why he felt he had fallen on hard times in late life, unless sickness caused that. He was far from destitute, and his children do not appear to have been poor--quite the contrary. On 12 August 1624 Edward Jenkin, "the unprofitable servant of God," being "weak of body" made his will, below---"and this will suffice for my wife's portion, wherewith she sayeth she is now right well pleased and contented.." (I think I like this nice ancestress of ours, Mary (Philip) Jenkin! That sounds like a concerned and caring wife trying to ease the mind of her fatally ill, probably suffering husband.) Edward was buried at St. John's in thanet 17 August 1624.

Canterbury Marriage Licenses Book has another entry--

1624 John Gore of St. John's Thanet, yeoman, widower, about 70 and Mary Jenken of the same parish, widow, about 57, relict of Edward Jenken, late of the same parish, yeoman, deceased, at the same, 17 November (2:419)

The Will of Edward Jenkyn, "the unprofitable servant of God," of the parish of St. John Baptist in the Isle of Thanet, yeoman, "weak of body," dated 12 August 1624. To my wife Mary, for life, L8 yearly, a feather bed, a bolster, two blankets, a coverlet, two pairs of sheets, a pillow, two pillow coats, and the bedstead in the lower chamber, "and this shall suffice for my wife's portion, wherewith shee sayth shee is now right well contented." To my son Edward L5 within a half year after my decease. To my daughter Priscilla, wife of William Hamon, 5s and to William, her son, at the age of 13 years, L13 which William, his father, oweth me. To my daughter Margaret L20 within half a year of my decease. To my daughter Martha L20 within half a year of my decease. To my son Thomas all my land in Thanet, he to be executor. The mark of Edward Jenkyn. Witnesses: Roger Laminge, John Tamlyn, Nic: Osborne. Proved 14 September 1624 by Thomas Jenkyn, the executor. (Archdeaconry of Canterbury, vol 66, fo. 19)

Children of Edward and Mary (Philips) Jenkin:

Thomas	bp. 26 Dec 1594	at Wingham, d. before 1662
Margaret	15 Sep 1596	" m. Edmond Lane of St. Dunstan's, Lond.
Mary	28 Sep 1598	" died young?
Edward	ca 1600	bur. 18 Apr 1627 at Thanet
Daniel	13 Dec 1601	Thanet m.1- ? m.2-Margaret-both liv.1646
Priscilla	14 May 1604	" m. 10 Oct 1622 Wm. Hamond- she d.bef 1646
+Martha	23 Nov 1605	" m. 28 Jan 1627/8 William Eaton
Infant son	5 Jan 1607/8	bur. unbapt. - stillborn?

Of course we follow Martha, above. Following is photostatic copy of the will of her oldest sister, Margaret, printed in the New England Register. The will proves this is our family.

Copied from New England Historic Genealogical Register, Vol XXXVII, October 1883

378 *Genealogical Gleanings in England.* [Oct.

MARGARET LANE, of London, widow, 16 January, 1661, with addition made 3 September, 1662. To be buried in the grave of my late husband, Edmond Lane, in the parish church of St. Dunstan's in the East, London. To my sister Martha, wife of William Eaton, now, I think, in New England, one hundred pounds within one year next after my decease. To her five children twenty pounds, to be equally divided amongst them, and also within the like time, to their said father or mother for their use, and whose acquittance shall be a sufficient discharge to my executor for the same. To my cousin Sarah Barrett, daughter of my late brother Daniel Jenkin, deceased, and now wife of John Barrett, twenty pounds. To her eldest daughter, Sarah Barrett, thirty pounds, and to her son John Barrett and her other daughter, Mary Barrett, twenty pounds apiece. To the three children of my late sister Priscilla Hamond, deceased, late wife of William Hammond, ten pounds apiece within one year after my decease. To Thomas Jenkins, eldest son of said deceased brother Daniel Jenkins. To my other cousin Daniel Jenkins, son of said deceased brother, &c. &c.

The addition, or codicil, mentions cousin Thomas Jenkins, of Minster, co. Kent, who is appointed overseer, the said 3 August (*sic*) 1662.

The witnesses to the will were Henry Travers, Scr. in Smithfield, Jo. Newland, Micah Machell and Samuel Fox, his servants.

Elizabeth Jenkin, relict and administratrix, with the will annexed, of Daniel Jenkins, deceased, executor of above will, received commission to administer on the estate of the above, 5 August, 1667. Carr, 107.

["William Eaton of Staple, husbandman, Martha, his wife, three children and one servant," embarked for New England in 1637 (Reg. xv. 29). They settled at Watertown (Bond's Watertown, p. 202). They had two children born in this country, making in all five children, the number named by Mrs. Lane.—Ed.]

William Eaton, born about 1604, husbandman of Staple, Kent, married 28 January 1627/8 in the Church of St. John the Baptist, Margate, Thanet, co. Kent England, Martha Jenkins bapt. 23 Nov 1605 in this same church, daughter of Edward and Mary (Philips) Jenkin.

According to a list certified 9 June 1637, they embarked that month on the ship, "Hercules" with their children, John, Martha, Albe, taking with them young Jonas Eaton styled as "servant" which simply meant he was along helping them--probably his younger brother. Another young "servant" on board was Richard Jenkin; also some Bachelor family members who may have been related to the Eatons, or to a John Eaton with wife Abigail Bachelor already living in Watertown, their proposed destination. Our William and Martha's daughter Albe's name is short for Abigail. Later records show that John Eaton, also, was from Staple and had married his Abigail there in April 1630.

The "Hercules" left the port at Sandwich in June, 1637 headed for the "American Plantations." Imagine the excitement and the mixed emotions of joy and sadness as they left the port and headed for the open seas! They settled first at Watertown, Massachusetts Bay Colony, where they lived a few years and their last two children were born.

William Eaton's family there
The year they arrived at Watertown, John and Abigail and their family left and moved to Dedham. *Eaton's family* Though many people left that place because of overcrowding as a result of rules imposed by the town fathers, *but* our family stayed a few years and were on a list of proprietors in 1642. The problem with the place was that all home lots were ordered to be built very close to the one church allowed to be established at the time. (One wonders if *the authorities* they were afraid of Indians, or what?) All the farm land was farther out, making it time-consuming and tedious to get to their agricultural land, and making the town itself too congested for comfort.

from they lived in
The family removed to Reading by 1644 and became proprietors. *The rest of* That location is now called South Reading. At first it was called Lynn Village because *originally* it was within the generous *original* boundaries of Lynn. About 1640, *seemingly* after official purchase of the area from the Indians was completed, it received the new name of Reading. By then Jonas was old enough to be granted his own land. A John "Bachelier" was also a proprietor. See the photocopied page of a book by Barber (listed in the references) for more information about the early days in Reading.

William Eaton was a town officer in Reading. He deposed in 1658, calling himself about 54, but in later depositions he was a couple of years younger. He, his wife, Martha, and their five children were legatees in the will of her sister, Margaret Lane of St. Dunstons in the East, London, in 1667. His will of 26 Sep. 1672 was proved 11 June 1673. Martha died at Reading 14 Nov. 1680.

village in the town is in the southern part, near a stream which empties into Nashua river. There is a Universalist church in the village. A society of Shakers live on the southern borders of the town, and their lands extend into Lancaster, in Worcester county. The society consists of from 150 to 200 persons, and are distinguished for their neatness, industry, and the raising of garden seeds, &c. In 1837, there were 3 cotton mills, 2,568 spindles; 474,364 yards of cotton goods were manufactured, valued at \$52,100; males employed, 19; females, 39; one woollen mill; 20,000 yards of cloth were manufactured, valued at \$12,000; two paper-mills; 300 tons of stock manufactured; value of paper, \$20,000; twenty hands (10 males, 10 females) employed; 70,000 palm-leaf hats were manufactured, valued at \$12,333. Population, 967. Distance, 16 miles from Concord, 18 from Lowell, and 32 from Boston.

SOUTH READING.

THE settlement of this place, now called South Reading, was first commenced by emigrants from Lynn. As early as the year 1639, a grant of land was made by the general court to the town of Lynn, as appears from the following extract from the records of the court: "Sept. 7, 1639. The petition of the inhabitants of Lynn for a place for an inland plantation at the head of their bounds is granted them of four miles square." After this grant, certain persons from Lynn and other places immediately commenced the settlement of the place; indeed, some had taken possession of certain spots of territory, and perhaps had removed hither, in 1638, the year before the grant. The settlement that commenced was called Lynn Village, being a part of the town of Lynn. The land was also purchased of the Indians for £10 16s., and the deeds signed, in 1640, by Sagamore George, his sister Abigail, and Quanapowitt. Lynn village was incorporated by the name of Reading about this time, being about five years since its first settlement. The following are the names of the first settlers, viz:

Nicholas Brown,	Geo. Davis,	Thomas Hartshorn,
Boniface Burton,	Wm. Eaton,	Thomas Kendall,
John Bacheller,	Jonas Eaton,	Goodman Knight,
Goodman Barker,	Zachariah Fitch,	Wm. Marlin,
Goodman Blots,	Benjamin Fitch,	Thomas Marshall,
Isaac Barnup,	Henry Felch,	John Poole,
Wm. Cowdrey,	Jeremiah Fitch,	Thomas Parker,
Thomas Clark,	John Fuller,	John Person,
Josiah Dustin,	Goodman Gould,	Jeremiah Swaine,
Thomas Dunton,	Thomas Hutchinson,	Richard Sader,
Samuel Dunton,	Wm. Hooper,	Edward Taylor.
Richard Walker,	Samuel Walker,	

The first Congregational church in this town (being the 12th in the colony) was gathered in 1645, and Rev. Henry Green was ordained its first minister. Mr. Green died in 1648, and was succeeded by Rev. Samuel Haugh, in 1650.

Johnson, in his "Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Saviour in New England," published about this time, says: "Reading is well watered, and situate about a great pond; besides, it hath two mills, the one a saw mill, the other a corn mill, which stand on two several streams. It hath not been so fruitful for children as her sister Woburn hath; her habitation is fuller in the very centre of the country; they are well stocked with cattle, for the number of people. They have gathered into a church and ordained a pastor from among themselves, at the same time a young man of good abilities to preach the word, and of a very humble behaviour, named Mr. Green. He, having finished his course, departed this life not long after, whose labors are with the Lord: after him succeeded in the place one Mr. Hag, a young man, one of the first fruits of New England, a man studious to promote the truths of Christ.—They are both remembered in the following verse, written by Johnson:

"On earth's bed thou at noon hast laid thy head,
You that for Christ (as Green) here toiled have taken;
When nature fails, then rest it in earth's dead,
Till Christ by 's word with glory thee awaken;
Young Hag, thou must be second to this man
In field encounter, with Christ foes shalt thou
Stand up and take his bright sword in thy hand,
Error cut down, and make stout stomachs bow.
Green's gone before, thy warfare's now begun,
And last it may to see Rome's Babel fall;
By weakest means Christ's mighty works hath done,
Keep footing fast till Christ thee hence do call."

The township of South Reading comprises a tract of 4,200 acres, and is about equidistant from Boston, Cambridge, and Andover, being about ten miles from each. It was originally the first parish in Reading. It was incorporated as a distinct town in 1812. About this period there was quite a political excitement in Reading, as well as in many other places; the inhabitants of the south parish, being mostly on the Democratic side, were left in the minority of the town. Feeling themselves aggrieved by their townsmen who were on the Federal side, they petitioned the legislature for an act to incorporate them into a distinct town, which was accordingly granted.

The following shows the appearance of the central part of South Reading, as it is seen while descending the hill a little west of the village. On the left is seen the southern extremity of Reading Pond or lake, near which is the Congregational church; the spire of the Baptist church is seen further to the south. South of the Congregational church extends a handsome green, called the "common," containing about 8 or 10 acres. The different parts of the town, when spoken of in reference to the residence of the people, are designated by the following terms:—"The Common," "Fitch's Hill," "Leather Street," "Side the Pond," "Cowdrey's Hill," "Lafayette Street," "Eaton Street," "Water Street," "Little World," "West Ward," "East Ward," and "South Ward."

The village called the "Common" contains about twenty dwelling-houses, the two churches represented in the engraving, a number of mercantile stores and mechanic shops, and a large

Our Eaton-Jenkins family left Watertown and were among the earliest settlers in Reading (now called South Reading). This page tells some of the earliest history of the place.

The first five Eaton children were baptized in the parish church in Staple. The last two were baptized in Watertown, MA.

Children of William and Martha (Jenkins) Eaton:

Mary	(28 Dec 1628-21 Jul 1628)			age 6-buried-Staple
Martha	19 Sep 1630	m 1)	ca. 1648	Richard Oldham-Cambridge
		2)	7 Oct 1656	Thomas Browne "
Alba	19 Feb 1632-19 Apr 1708		7 Sep 1650	Francis Moore, Jr. "
William	12 Jan 1634-11 Aug 1634			1½ years-bur.Staple
John	20 Dec 1635-1695		8 Mar 1659	Elizabeth Kendall
Daniel	20 Jan 1639-1708		21 Dec 1664	Mary (Ingalls?)
+Mary	8 Apr 1643-28 Nov 1716		23 Feb 1667	Richard Dodge

The two boys were married at Reading. Martha's husbands were from Cambridge, and so was Alba (Abigail's) husband. Mary's husband was from Wenham.

For more information about our Mary (Eaton) Dodge's husband and children, see Volume I - Dodge Family.

SOURCES:

New England Historic Genealogical Register:

37:378 Will of Margaret (Jenkins) Lane

75:221-223 Hercules passenger list

76:54-75 Jenkin Family English Research by Eben Putnam

History Genealogical and Biographical of the Eaton Families -
 Nellie Zada Rice Molyneaux (1911) Pages 6-7, 101-5, 273-5
 supposedly about our Eaton Family. Pages 555-575 about
 Theophilus Eaton Family

Boston Transcript Genealogical Inquiries - various, see photocopy
 New England Marriages Prior to 1700 - Clarence A. Torrey- GPC(1985)
 Pope's Pioneers of Massachusetts - Charles Henry Pope -
 Alphabetical listings - GPC Baltimore (1900-repr 1991)

Genealogical Dictionary - James Savage Vol 2, 150-2, etc.

Historical Collections of Every Town in Massachusetts p 424-5
 John Warner Barber - Part One, pp 424-5, (1841) Dorr Howland
 & Co, Worcester - a Heritage Classic

Genealogy of the Dodge Family of Essex County, Massachusetts -
 Prof. Joseph Thompson Dodge, 1894

Use with Caution: Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700 -
 Frank R. Holmes p. lxxiv, etc.
 also Colonial Dames of America publ-Ancestral Records & Portraits

Do Not Use - current (1993) Descendancy & Pedigree Computer Charts
 On the other hand, their International Genealogical Index lists on
 microfi che are excellent.



No BOREMAN FAMILY coat of Arms has been discovered. Their London business did have one with an adze on the shield, and possibly the family used it. Their house lot in Ipswich was next door to John Winthrop, Jr., later Gov. of CT, & the family in both London & MA were chummy with Dep. Gov. Symonds and his Epes in-laws.

Low Crest: A wolf's head couped argent, colared gules charged with three bezants (silver wolf's head with red collar studded with three gold balls)

Low Shield: Azure a wolf passant argent (a silver wolf with its right paw raised, on a blue shield)

The Low name, this writer believes, is a shortened and corrupted form of the Norman Lupus, meaning "wolf." See separate page for rationale.

Boreman Crest/Shield: None found, except that their London business had a shield with an adze depicted on it. However, in New England Thomas and Margaret Boreman were deferred to with respect, and called "Mister and Mistress Boreman," which was out of ordinary in that time and place.

The Boreman name did not mean Boardman, a later adaption. Writer wonders if it had something to do with "bore" as an archaic spelling of "boar" a dangerous wild animal in the ancient woods.

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (2)

According to most books, the surnames Todd/Tod and Lowe/Low mean the following:

Tod is Scotch or Celtic, meaning "fox."

Low is derived from the Saxon "hlaw," meaning a round hill, a tumulus, or barrow, sometimes also signifying a farm or grove.

However, writer has discovered an entirely different book altogether, and think I have found ancient progenitors or relatives in Normandy. See what you think. The book is, "The Norman People," London 1874, reprint 1989 Genealogical Publishing Co., which maintains that in an illiterate society words, especially of foreign derivation, are corrupted and spellings changed over the centuries. Examples of people of many surnames were taken from ancient rolls of prominent Normans in England (RH) or Rotuli Hundredorum; and (MRS) or Magn. Rotuli Scacarii Normanniae, etc. in Normandy. Some examples are quoted below.

Tod (also Todd, Tad) page 419 - Richard Tad, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS) Adam and Real Tod-England circa 1272 (RH) were two examples of Norman men. The book states, however, that the name was more commonly Celtic.

Loe page 315. William de Loe, Normandy 1180-95 (MRS); Ralph de la Lowe England c. 1272 (RH)

From La Lo, or La Lupe, Normandy. Thomas and Hugh de La Loe, Normandy 1180 (MRS)

From St. Lo, or St. Laud, bearing a bend--William de St. Laudo 1180 - the canons, forest, villa, castle and fief of this place in Normandy. (says members of this family, also called Laud, settled in Somerset, Devon, etc. Also probably includes the later noted Archbishop Laud of history.)

WRITER PICKS THIS NEXT EXAMPLE.

From Le Loup, or Lu, bearing wolves. Herbert, Joscelin, William Lupus or La Loup, Normandy 1198 (MRS); John, Richard, Robert, William Lupus, England circa 1272 (RH).

The reason writer picks this example is very simple. It is because they had essentially the same coat of arms. They bore wolves on their shields, just as our Lows did. Coats of arms were not created capriciously. The symbols always had a real significance. Le Loup, shortened to Lu with a French accent, sounds like Low. Why on earth would people of Saxon origin who got their names from living on or near a farm on a small rounded hill carry wolves on their shields? The answer is that they probably wouldn't. Our very, very remote Low ancestors likely came from Le Loup in Normandy.



The Low and Boreman families came from different parts of England. The Lows were from southern Suffolk in "East Anglia" and the Boremans from the Banbury area 60 or 70 miles north of Oxford, in "the Midlands."

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY - Modern highway map of Britain showing locations of little towns in Suffolk where the Lows lived--Boxford, Groton, Polstead, etc. They came with Rev. Rogers of Assington. They sailed from Gravesend, Kent, not on map, on the southern bank of the Thames as it enters the sea.



Richard Dodge III married 16 Nov. 1694 in Ipswich, Martha Low born 10 March 1669, daughter of Deacon Thomas Low, Jr., and Martha (Boreman) Low. Following the same format as before, we now tell the Low and Boreman Family stories up to that time.

Starting with Low, the name was spelt so inconsistently as to actually impede early Massachusetts research. For instance, not until only sixteen years ago were researchers able to successfully identify Susannah, the immigrant Thomas Low's second wife who became his widow, because she died in Watertown and records there and in Boston were spelling it Loo and Loe. Lo and Lowe were common.

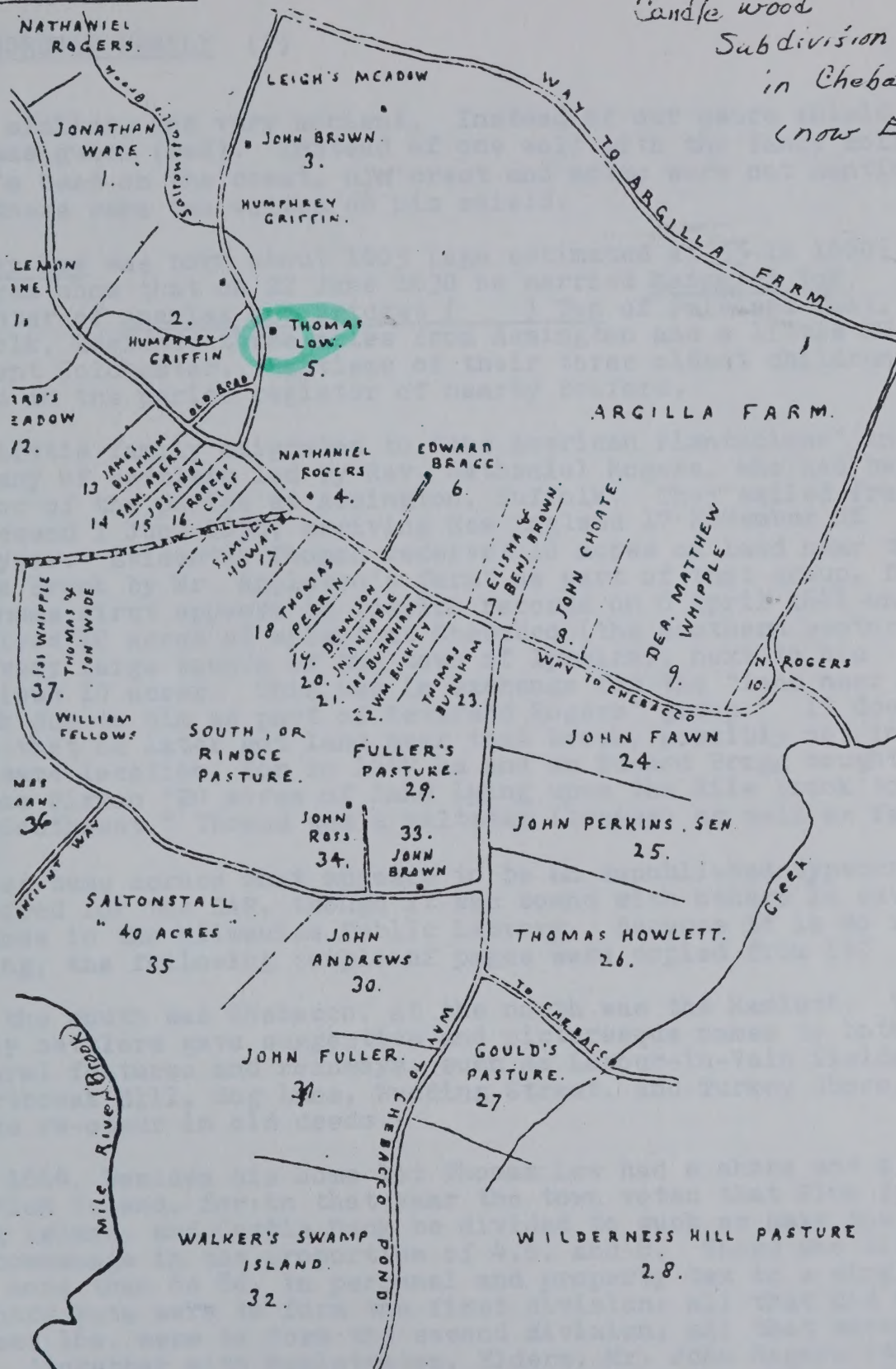
In one instance family tradition fooled the Low family of Essex County MA until about fifty years ago, for they had in their possession an ancient cane and a Bible passed down in the family for many centuries. The Bible seems to have been what they thought it was, "Imprinted at London by Christopher Barker, Printer to the Queenes most excellent Majestie, dwelling in Pater Noster Rowe at the signe of the Tygreshead Anno 1576." On a blank leaf is written, "Susan Low her book 1677 May 19" and "Thomas Low his Book." One can safely assume that when the first Thomas Low died in 1677 his widow, Susannah, took or was given possession of the book. Who had it is previous generations is something all of us would dearly like to know.

The family believed the bible, and also the cane, had belonged to "Captain John Lowe," whom they assumed to be the ill-fated Vice-Admiral of the fleet of vessels which bore Governor John Winthrop and a large host of other settlers to "the plantations" in 1630. On the return voyage his ship foundered off the coast of Newfoundland and those aboard are thought to have perished.

The January 1896 issue of the New England Register (52:67) abstracts some Isle of Wight wills ca. 1578-80, executed by Safford and Lowe families. That writer wondered whether he was onto something because of the very early connection of the two families in New England. However, that is the last this writer has heard of the subject, but mention it because a certain Walter Lowe, old enough to be Thomas's grandfather, made his will in 1578 leaving bequests to wife Annis and also Henry, John, and Thomas Lowe. Despite all the name similarities, the Isle of Wight is not all that close to southern Suffolk where our Low's lived, though easily accessible by sea. Just mentioning that to be thorough--probably no connection.

The Lows currently living in MA are affluent and cultured people, very interested in ancestry, and now convinced the family lived in Boxford, Suffolk, though Thomas' parents still have not been identified. They used the coat of arms depicted, and perhaps they really were distantly related to the old Admiral, for his

Candlewood
Subdivision
in Chebacco
(now Essex)



MAP OF PART OF ANCIENT IPSWICH (Candlewood Subdivision) This is now a northern part of Essex, MA. This shows location of Thomas Low's home. Other Dodge ancestral families you will find in this series are Perkins, Gould, and Burnham/Andrews. John Brown and Matthew Whipple were writers Averill ancestors (not Dodge). The next few pages refer to Low neighbors Bragg, Rindge, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers & others.

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (7)

were similar, and very ancient. Instead of our azure shield (blue) his was gules (red). Instead of one wolf with the fancy collared wolf's head on the crest, his crest and motto were not mentioned, and there were two wolves on his shield.

Thomas Low was born about 1605 (age estimated at 55 in 1660). Records show that on 22 June 1630 he married Margaret Tod, daughter of Ananias and Bridget () Tod of Polstead Hall, Suffolk, England, three miles from Assington and a little NW of present Colchester. Baptisms of their three oldest children are found in the parish register of nearby Boxford.

Our little family emigrated to "the American Plantacions" in a company of settlers led by Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who had been rector of the parish at Assington, Suffolk. They sailed from Gravesend 1 June 1636, arriving New England 17 November of the year. Evidently Thomas received 10 acres of land near the "Mile Brook by Mr. Appleton's farm" as part of that group, for his name first appears in Ipswich records on 6 April 1641 when he received 10 acres of upland at Chebacco (the southern sector of the very large bounds of the town of Ipswich), next to his previous 10 acres. This was in exchange for the "land near Mile Brook due to him as part of Reverend Rogers' group." It does seem that he later got land near that brook, possibly not in the same location, for in 1647 he and an Edward Bragg bought of Thomas Firman "20 acres of land lying upon the Mile Brook toward the Southwest." Thomas was a maltster (brewer) as well as farmer.

Writer came across what appears to be an unpublished typescript prepared for the DAR, though it was bound with others in several volumes in the Milwaukee Public Library. Because it is so interesting, the following couple of pages were copied from it.

"At the south was Chebacco, at the north was the Hamlet*. The early settlers gave suggestive and picturesque names to both natural features and roadways, such as Labour-in-Vain fields, Heartbreak Hill, Hog Lane, Pudding Street, and Turkey Shore. Such names re-occur in old deeds.

"In 1664, besides his home lot Thomas Low had a share and a half in Plum Island, for in that year the town voted that Plum Island, Hogg Island, and Castle Neck be divided to such as have the right to commonage in the proportion of 4,6, and 8. Those who did not pay more than 6s 8d. in personal and property tax in a single country rate were to form the first division; all that did not exceed 16s. were to form the second division; all that exceeded 16s. 'together with Magistrates, Elders, Mr. John Rogers (the minister) and Mr. Thomas Andrews' (the schoolmaster) were to constitute the highest division.

* The Hamlet is now called Hamilton, MA.

"The Committee reported that 203 inhabitants had a right to commonage - Of these 28 had a right to a double share, 70 to a share and a half, and 105 to a single share. Thomas Lowe was "seated in the mean," receiving a share and a half, six acres. The committee reported that there were on Plum Island 800 acres of marsh and upland, "beside beaches and gull'd hills." The shares were laid out beginning at one end of the long narrow island. The commoners took their shares by lot, and each was shown exactly where his land lay.

"In 1655 Thomas Lowe was fined for not appearing to serve on a jury. He did so serve in 1656. A fine was a common punishment for many sorts of misdemeanors. It added to the town treasury and the pain of parting with it probably made a many a man hesitate to incur a second such punishment. In 1655 William Rayner of Wenham was fined for smoking tobacco in the streets. History does not say which was dearer to him, his pipe or his wallet.

"In a community where domestic animals - cows, horses, sheep and pigs - were second in importance only to members of the family, it was necessary that they be kept within bounds and thus prevented from doing damage to the property of neighbors. On one occasion Thomas Low was witness in such a case of trespass, allegedly having been committed by the defendant's cattle getting into a neighbor's corn field.

"Low testified that the plaintiff's fence was deficient, having 'only bows without any stakes, and the bown very rotten, in one place there was an ould Tree and a Raile only laid upon that.' But the best of rail fences sometimes proved inadequate. Domestic animals had a propensity for straying into forbidden fields, unmindful of danger of being impounded or suffering bodily harm. One such case was tried in the Quarterly Court Ipswich on 10 May 1660, revealing much of the spiteful squabbles our Puritan forefathers engaged in. We quote it entire:

'His yard the beast ran in, and deponent tried to have him remain but Lee came at deponent with a hoe and vowed he w'd knock him in the head, ets. John Clarke deposed that he was looking for their horses and seeing John Lee pounding horses, asked whose they were. "These saith he are the Roges horses that reseve the sacremts. These ar the Roges that weare clocks and if they can get cloks they are as good as the best with Mister Cobitt an tho they be as bad as the dival."

"Such sarcasm was highly reprehensible on the part of John Lee, for Mr. Rogers was greatly esteemed as a minister, and the Rev. Thomas Bobbett, a leading divine, was mighty alike in prayer with God, and logic with man. It was a reckless man who would dare in Ipswich to speak contemptuously of ministers. Witness the fact that in 1660 Henry Walton was fined L5 for saying he had 'as lieve heare a dogg barke as Mr. Cobitt preach.'

In 1679 there were in the town of Ipswich 508 residents, 220 commoners, and 125 freemen.* Every man twenty years old who had resided for six months within the town limits and was not enfranchised was obliged to take the "resident's oath" before the Governor, Dep. Gov., or Assistant, then recognized as a duly qualified inhabitant. He could be chosen as juror by the freemen and could vote for selectmen, but he had no further political privilege. Commoners had the additional privilege of voting on all questions relating to the common lands.

"Freemen were members of the church, and could vote for officers and magistrates and in town meeting. It has been well said that aristocracy in Ipswich was based on Christian manhood. Thomas Low was a freeman."

To clarify the preceding, 1679 was two years after Thomas' death, but this does describe the situation very well. It should be added that to become a member of the church and thus a freeman, such strict tests and other requirements were necessary that only a minority had any chance of becoming actual members of the church and receiving the sacraments.

Just a tiny bit more history--During the reign of Cromwell or his Roundhead successors, the Puritan government in the MA Bay Colony was not interfered with and became very strict and strong. But when King Charles II was restored to the throne he naturally was opposed to that, and threatened to withdraw the Royal charters if they did not obey his rule. In particular he desired them to allow religious freedom to adherents of the official Church of England. The people of the Bay had had it their way far too long to agree to that; their whole motive in coming had been for their own Puritan government.

Bradstreet and Rev. John Norton, both of Ipswich, were sent to England to represent the Colonies in the Council debates. They returned in Sept. 1662 bringing word that the King had confirmed their patent, but expected them to take an oath of allegiance to the King, and that worship according to the Church of England must be allowed; also all persons of good and honest lives should be admitted to the Lord's Supper; and all people should be allowed to vote for Governor and Assistants.

These requirement did not meet with approval of all Puritan leaders. The King then sent over Commissioners who were received coldly, especially regarding use of the Book of Common Prayer. When the King was informed, he wrote that it was "evident those who governed the colony did believe that His Majesty had no jurisdiction over them, but....all persons must acquiesce" etc. He was not far wrong. There was an ocean separating them, and actually he was too busy with affairs--especially wars--on the continent to devote much energy to this small outpost. However, some colonists did think

*This is grown men only. Multiply by at least five per family for a population of over 4,000.

it important to pledge allegiance to the king. Seventy of them signed a long petition to this effect. Among the signers were Thomas Lowe and his friend Daniel Werner. Major Denison and Bradstreet were of this opinion. Samuel Symonds of Ipswich of Ipswich and Hathorne of Salem stood stiffly for chartered rights. Finally a non-committal reply was forwarded to the King. Happily for all the King manifested no resentment.

The date of wife and mother Margaret (Tod) Low's death has not been discovered. Her name has not been found in records in this country, but then neither have the records of the earliest grants of land. The youngest daughter, Sarah, was born about 1637, so it had to be after that.

Thomas married secondly a thrice-widowed lady a little older than he, Susanna (Stone)(Cutting) Kimball or Kemble, widow of Henry Kemble of Watertown, who had died in 1648. Later Watertown records show a Susanna Loe, administratrix of the estate of Henry Kemball. The Watertown historian wondered what relationship she bore to a John Loo of Boston who possibly was assisting her. (We now know the answer: he was her stepson.) After Thomas's death 8 September 1677, she returned to Watertown as he suspected she might, though he had made provision for son John to see after her.

It does not appear there were any children of the last marriage, they may have been too old for that. A 1977 issue of The American Genealogist (TAG 53:245) tells about Susanna's first and second marriages, husbands and children if anyone wants more details. She came from Great Bromley, Essex, England, only about 25 miles from Boxford, his old home, just beyond Colchester.

Thomas Low died in Ipswich 8 September 1677. His will was made 20 April, 1677. His wife Susanna was to have the things she brought with her at marriage, the use of the room in which he lay and of the things therein. His son John was to keep for her the cow which she liked best. "Also I give unto my wife one fourth part of her labor that she has Spunn both Lening & woollen, & Also she shall have her beere as she hath now & also use of the fire." John was to rear a shoat for her yearly, and she was to have a garden plot and land in which to sow half a peck of flax seed. She was to be paid 30 s. a year in such things as she needed and to have L5 to dispose of as she wished (at death). If she left John he was to pay her 40s. a year, to be sent to Boston or Charlestown. To son John, all land and housing in Ipswich. To son Thomas L30. To daughter Margaret L40 and to daughter Sarah L40, to be paid within two years of his death. To grandchildren Thomas Low L5, Margaret Davison L5, Sarah Safford L5, and Sarah Low L5, to be paid when they were 21 or on their marriage days. Residue to son John, executor. Wit: John Chute, Mary Chute. The inventory of simple things totalled L290 (Prob. Rec. Essex Co, III:175)

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (11)

As previously stated, the first three children were born in Boxford, co. Suffolk, England, the last probably in Chebacco.

Children of Thomas Low, Sr., and Margaret (Tod) Low:

+(Deacon) Thomas	(8 May 1631-12 Apr 1712)	m. 4 Jul 1660	Martha Boreman
Margaret	(17 Jun 1632- 8 Jul 1668)	8 Apr 1657	Daniel Davison
John	(02 Mar 1634-bef. 1706)	1/10 Dec 1661	Sarah Thorndike
		2/ bef 1674	Dorcas
Sarah	(ca 1637-after 1712)	ca 1661	John Safford

It is said Daniel Davison was later a Major General. John followed his father's occupation as a maltster, and it was he who assisted his elderly stepmother. Sarah's husband, John Safford, was but one person of that surname to marry Lows or Boremans. We follow (Deacon) Thomas, Jr.

(Deacon) Thomas Low was baptized 8 May 1631 at Groton next to Boxford, co. Suffolk, England, and came to Chebacco with his parents. On 4 July 1660 he married Martha Boreman, daughter of Thomas and Margaret (Offin) Boreman.

Some sources say, mistakenly, that he married, secondly, a Mary Browne. That is rather impossible because our Martha was his widow, and survived him eight years. Thomas followed his father's occupation as a maltster and farmer. In the 17th century tea, coffee, or even milk had not yet become common household beverages. In fact, tea was so expensive that no one could afford it, had they even wanted it, until cheap tea was smuggled in. In this region, as in Old England, the whole family drank beer with their meals. It is doubtful most of was very strong--drunkenness was against the law in Ipswich. No doubt he and his late father, also his brother, John, did a thriving business in his malt house and believed he was supplying a commendable commodity to his townsmen. Moreover, the making of malt from barley was a process requiring knowledge, skill, and careful attention.

Thomas, Jr., purchased land in Chebacco from Daniel Rindge in 1664. Like his father, he also received a share of Plum Island that year. In 1668 both he and his wife, our ancestress Martha Low, came to the aid of a neighbor in trouble. They headed and both signed a petition in favor of Thomas Wells, accused of slanderous speeches against the "worshipful magistrates." In 1669 he was elected deputy marshall to the county court.

During the bloody and fierce seige of the Indians in 1675-6 in which for a time it seemed the whole Colony might be exterminated by the Indians--which came to be known as King Phillip's War--Thomas served in the Massachusetts Bay contingent under Major Appleton in the famous Rhode Island Swamp Fight, which finally

broke the power of the Indians along the coast. For that he received a Bounty Land Warrant in Narragansett Township #1. There were several of these Narragansett Townships in undeveloped areas, named for a tribe of Indians and their land, scene of the fighting. However, in this case as with many granted by the actual US government later, development of the bounty land sites or even the date of the award, came too late to help the soldiers, themselves, and went to their heirs. In this case the award in 1733, a generation after his death and located in what is now Buxton, Maine, was passed on to his son, Jonathan, "for his father's service."

During the time and place where Thomas lived, outside of being a minister or a magistrate, about the highest honor one could achieve was a religious one, to become a Deacon of the Church. The title became a part of your name from then on. You became a leader in your community. Thomas was made a deacon in 1679 and served in that capacity the rest of his life. He also became a selectman about the same time. He served on trial juries in 1676 and in 1680. The notes say he took the Freeman's Oath in 1682 but that seems rather too late, and possibly it was his son, Thomas III, who became a Freeman on that date.

During the much-written-about expedition of Sir William Phipps against Quebec, commencing in the early winter of 1690, Thomas filled in as parish clerk for Rev. John Wise, who was away as a chaplain for the troops. He probably served about two years in that capacity, as Sir William is said have returned during the witchcraft trials and been shocked at the state of affairs, since he personally did not believe in witches. Thomas's son David went along to Canada as a Sergeant in the expedition.

Both Thomas and Martha seem to have been endowed with unusual good sense and intelligence, and must have looked askance at the witchcraft hysteria that was sweeping the area in 1692. It was dangerous to speak out against it--even ministers who spoke out were hung. Nevertheless, both Martha and he testified in writing on a petition, signed also by several neighbors, that they could find no wrong with one of the accused, John Proctor, and his wife, and begged for leniency. The petition went unheeded. John Proctor, actually an exceptionally fine man, was executed, and his wife was spared only because she was pregnant, until the baby could be born. The baby came in January, but Gov. Phipps put a stop to the execution. In fact, he allowed no more hangings.

Thomas was overseer for the poor in 1698. Writer has not seen any copy, but it was reported that in 1900 a genealogist had a copy of a photograph of "the Old Low House in Essex, Massachusetts" built for this family. That person commented that he must have "been a wealthy, influential citizen" to have such a house.

(Deacon) Thomas Low died 12 April 1712. Martha survived him and died 22 January 1720, "in her 79th year." In his will of 17 June 1708, proved 5 May 1712, he calls himself, "of good understanding & sound memory, but ancient, crazy & infirm in body." He gives to his true and well beloved wife Martha, the lower room and the chamber of the new end of the house I now live in, with privilege of cellar, 200 weight of good pork, two good new milch cows to be well kept and maintained winter and summer for her use, 10 bushels Indian corn, one bushel wheat, 6 bushels malt, 14 lbs. sheeps wool, 12 lbs flax, firewood ready cut for a fire, a horse to ride on as she may have occasion, 10 bushels of apples, for the winter, and what apples she may have occasion for in the summer for her own use, two barrels of "cydar," and the garden at the end of the house; also ten shillings money yearly.

To his son Jonathan Low, the house in which Jonathan was then living, one-half the tillage and pasture land and the land bought of John Burnham. To his son Samuel Low, who had taken care of him and Martha, "all the housing, and common rights I now enjoy," except what was given to his mother; also the stock, tools of husbandry and carpenter's tools. To his son David Low, £100 in good merchantable pay.

To his daughters Martha Dodge, Joanna Dodge and Abigail Goodhue, 10s each (undoubtedly they had received their portions already), To daughter Sarah Low £30. Executors: sons Jonathan and Samuel Low. Overseers: Capt. William Goodhue, Nathaniel Rust, Jr. Witnesses: John Cogswell, Jr., Adam Cogswell, Nathaniel Low, Jr. (The will is in Essex Probate Records 310:427-9.)

Children of Deacon Thomas and Martha (Boreman) Low:

Thomas III	(14 Apr 1661- 8 Feb 1698)	m.	2 Dec 1687	Sarah Symonds
John	1663-29 Nov 1695		bef 1690	Anna (Burnham?)
Jonathan	7 Jul 1665-		8 Mar 1693	Mary Thompson
David	14 Aug 1667- 2 Jun 1746		28 Dec 1699	Mary Lamb
+Martha	10 Mar 1669-		16 Nov 1694	Richard Dodge
Nathaniel	7 Jun 1672-30 Jul 1695			age 23-unm.
Sarah	1674	aft 1714	int-6 Nov 1708	Nathaniel Webster
Samuel	1676- 6 Jun 1723			did he marry?
Johannah			1- 24 Jan 1699	Antipas Dodge
			int-2- 19 Sep 1708	Joseph Hale
Abigail	25 Apr 1687		int 31 Jan 1708	Joseph Goodhue

Thomas III's wife, Sarah Symonds, was daughter of Harlackenden Symonds, son of the very blue-blooded Deputy Gov. Samuel Symonds and his equally blue-blooded first wife. (writer is descended from Samuel S. and his second wife, but not through the Dodges. Samuel's third wife, Rebecca, willed "her grand daughter, Sarah Low, a silver porringer.)

We have some interesting notes about son David, the Sergeant in the expedition to Canada under Sir William Phipps. They arrived before Quebec 5 November 1690 and were repulsed with heavy losses. (That expedition was ill-prepared. They never should have undertaken it. They were armed mostly with cocky self-assurance against superbly disciplined French forces in an excellent military compound who could not believe their eyes when they saw those people coming at them. The English were swiftly dispatched with heavy losses.) However, David Low was a very brave and patriotic soldier. For his part he received a Bounty Land grant in New Hampshire which he turned over to his son David, Jr. in 1736.

The above son David's line was very brave. A son, Stephen who married a cousin Sarah Low, was killed at the Battle of Ticonderoga 8 July 1758 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

We don't want to go too deeply into the lives of the children from whom we are not descended. Our ancestor is Martha Low who married our Richard Dodge III. To find out more about her and her Dodge children, see Volume I, Dodge Family. Incidentally, Antipas Dodge, husband of her sister Johannah, was first cousin to her husband Richard.

Our Martha (Low) Dodge was named for her mother, Martha (Boreman) Low. We can tell, reading between the lines, that her mother was a highly intelligent, kind and caring, and much-loved woman.

The next step is to tell about the BOREMAN ancestors of Thomas Low, Jr.'s daughter, Martha Low and his wife, Martha Boreman.

First, maybe you will enjoy the little Ipswich Historical Society pages from their publication #22, telling about those who received shares on Plum Island.

Thomas Low received a share and a half. Thomas Boreman received two shares meaning, I suppose, that he was richer. Also receiving double shares were our Dodge relatives William Cogswell and Thomas Burnham, also Burnham-related George Giddings, Thomas Andrews, and our Averill ancestors Dep. Gov. Symonds, Daniel Epes, and John Whipple. There are check marks before the names of other ancestors and relatives receiving shares.

The reader will thus realize that we had many ancestors living in ancient Ipswich, Massachusetts Bay Colony!

He has some interesting notes about his father, the Surgeon in the expedition to Santa Fe under Sir William F. Powell. They arrived before Santa Fe in 1822 and were rewarded with heavy losses. That expedition was ill-fated. They never again have undertaken it. They were much better off with money and supplies against the Indians. Powell's notes in an excellent military command who could not believe their eyes when they saw these people coming at them. The British were really surprised at the heavy losses. However, Powell had a very brave and patriotic soldier. In his part he received a heavy loss and died in his hands. He was turned over to his son David, Jr. in 1822.

The name of David's line was very brave. A son, Stephen, who served a year in the war, was killed at the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

He also went to go too deeply into the lives of the children. They also were not descended. Our ancestor is better low who was a son of David's brother. He found out more about his son and his father. He was killed in the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

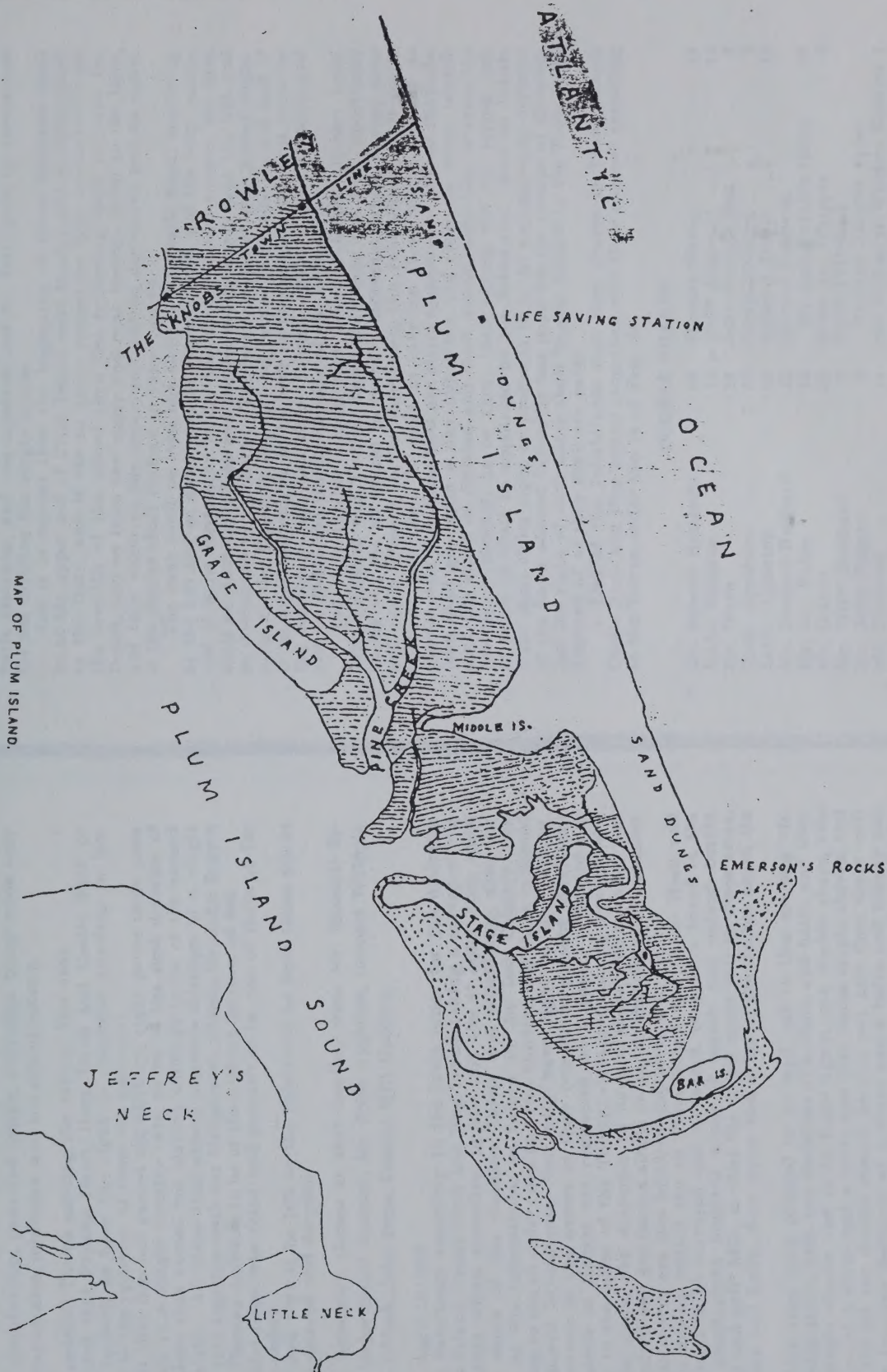
Mr. David (Jr.) Hodge was named for his mother, Maria (Johanna) low. He was killed in the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

The next step is to tell about the BOWMAN ancestors of Thomas low. He was killed in the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

Mr. David (Jr.) Hodge was named for his mother, Maria (Johanna) low. He was killed in the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

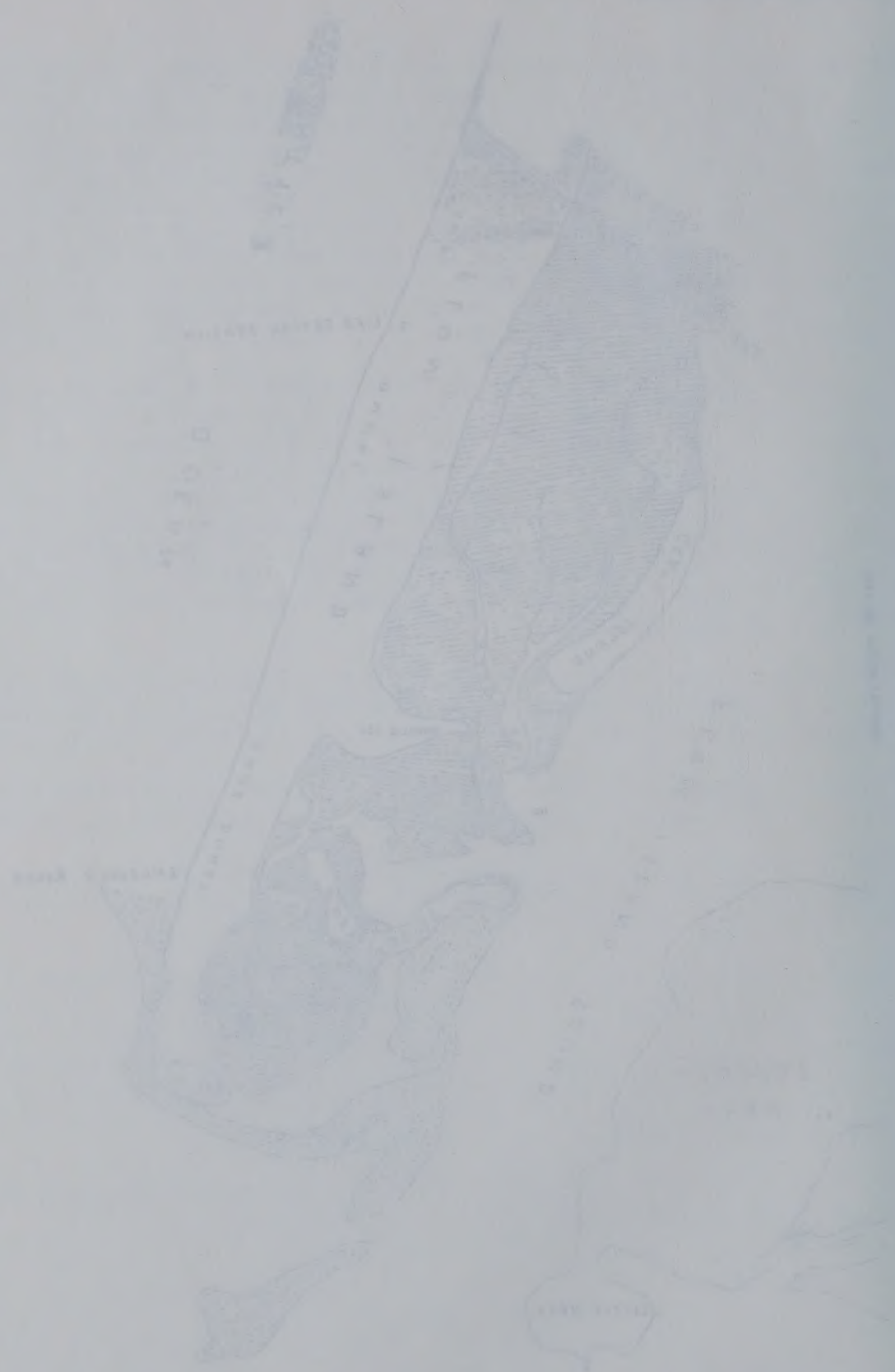
Mr. David (Jr.) Hodge was named for his mother, Maria (Johanna) low. He was killed in the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.

Mr. David (Jr.) Hodge was named for his mother, Maria (Johanna) low. He was killed in the battle of Thompson's 6 July 1822 and a grandson was in the Revolutionary War.



MAP OF PLUM ISLAND.

Plum Island - from Ipswich Historical Soc.
Publication 22



ion was based, was characteristic of the spirit of the time. It was a money qualification, pure and simple, exception being made only for the magistrates, ministers, and the school master.

The generall Towne meeting the 14th of Feb. 1664

1. Voted that Plumbe Iland, Hogg Iland and Castle Neck be devyded to such as have the right to commons according to law according to the pportion of foure six and eight.

2. All that doe not exceed six shillings eight pence their pson and estate in a single country rate, to be of the first devision of 4th all them that exceed not sixteen shillings to be of the second sort of sixth. All those that exceed sixteen shillings in a single Country rate together with our Maiestrates, Elders, Mr. John Rogers and Mr. Thomas Andrews to be of the highest devision of 8th.

3. John Gage was voted and granted to be one of them of the middle number

4. Voted that it be left to the Selectmen to have those places viewed messered and devyded

The Selectmen chosen at that meeting were Mr. Samuall Symonds, Major Gen'll Denison, Mr. John Appleton, Cornett Whipple, Ensigne French, John Dane, Deacon Will. Goodhue.

April 10:1665

The Selectmen according to the town order for the devission of Plum Island, Castle Neck and Hog Island taking a survey of the Inhabitants which according to law and the s^d order have right to any share of the Common Lands and considering also the estates of the Inhabitants, as valued in the last Country rate according to the sd order; doe find two hundred and three reckoned and allowed Inhabitants, that may have right to the Comons, whose names or the names of their tenants at present inhabiting their Lands or Houses are registered on a paper. Whereof according to the order of the Towne, eight and twenty are to have a double share, and seaventie to have a share and a halfe, and one hundred and five have a single share, so that the whole number of single shares are two hundred and sixty six.

And having caused the sd Plum Island and Castle Neck and Hog Island to be surveyed and measured, they have found in the whole about eight hundred acres of marsh and upland beside beaches and gall^d hills, so that the single share will be three acres, the share and halfe, four acres and a halfe, the double share six acres.

Which they have ordered to be layd out in this manner viz. one double share, next two devisions of a share and halfe, and then three single shares, and so to begin again, one double share, two devisions of a share and a halfe and then three single shares, and so on till all the double shares be run out and then there will remain fourteen devisions of a share and a halfe and twenty one single shares, which shall be laid out in this manner, namely, one devision of a share and a halfe and one single share, till all the share and half devisions be layd out and the seaven remaining single shares to be layd out one after the other.

Which divisions being layd out as above sd, It is ordered they shall be shared by lott in this manner, there shall be eight and

twenty lotts for the deviding of the double shares, and seaventy lotts to be putt by themselves for the deviding of the share and halfe divisions, and one hundred and five lotts putt by themselves for the deviding the single shares.

And it is agreed that the beginning of these divisions shall be at the upper end of Plum Island next Rowley and so downwards to the Barr, and if the sd share cannot be layd conveniently all the breadth of the island then the beginning shall be next the Beach, and so from the upper end next Rowley down to the Barr, and then begin at the upper end and so downward and so again if the shares shall be layd in three ranges.

The next shall be layd out shall be at Castle Neck, beginning at the hill and so downward to Wigwam Hill and the long marsh, and if it be convenient to lay the shares in two ranges, the first shall be next the Pines and the second to begin next the hill and so downward to the River. The last shall be at Hog Island beginning at the Westerly end and so to the East side thereof and if it be most convenient to be layd in two ranges, the first shall be the Southerly side, and then to begin again at the Westerly end and to divide the Northerly side of the sd Island.

And it is further agreed that Cornet Whipple Robert Lord, John Leighton and Thomas Lovel shall take the first opportunity to lay out the sd shares in manner aforesaid, which having done and made knowne to the Selectmen, the Inhabitants shall forthwith be summoned to meet to take up their shares by lott as afores^d. And then those that are above appointed to lay out the divisions shall goe upon a day appointed and share to every inhabitant, his share or division and shall deliver unto him or them the possession thereof, he or they, then paying for the laying out, so much as shall be appointed by the Selectmen. And no Inhabitant shall claim right or propriety in or to any share or devision of the Land afores^d before he has payd for the charge of deviding, but the right of such share shall be and remain in the Town to be disposed of as they shall see cause.

A List of the Inhabitants that have shares in Plum Island, Castle Neck and Hog Island (together with their shares) according to the Towne order the 14 of Feb. '64.

DOUBLE SHARES

✓ Mr. Samuel Symonds	26	Thomas Wells	17
Major Denison	12	✓ Will ^m Cogswell	16
Mr. Wade	25	John Proctor Sen.	3
Capt. Appleton	20	- Georg Gittins	9
Leift. Appleton	23	Richard Jacob	13
Mr. Richard Hubbard	10	Edward Coborne	
Mr. Jo: Paine	18	Mr. Saltonstall's farme	27
Mr. Cobbet	22	- Elder Jo: Whipple	5
Mr. Will ^m Hubbard	7	Will ^m Pritchett	
Mr. John Rogers	6	Richard Jacob's farm	
✓ Mr. Tredwell	14	one half to ye Widdow Roberts	1
Mr. Booreman	4	John Airs. Mr. Norton's farms	
Thos: Bishop	8	Mr. Bar	25
Will ^m Goodhue	2	-Mr. Epes	24
- Mr. Thomas Andrews	28	The Mil and House	21
✓ Thomas Burnam	11	Elder Paine	19

our family
✓ = ancestor
- = relative

SHARE AND A HALF

✓ Symon Tuttle	8	Henry Bennet	45
Richard Shatswell	38	Symon Tompson	46
Robert Day	22	✓ John Browne Sen.	7
Thomas Hart Sen.	14	John Fuller	6
Edward Alline		Willm Fellows	58
Mr. Paine's farm	17	Richard Brabrook	
Richard Kimbal	43	Wid. Haffield's farme	56
Mr. Willm Norton	18	Robert Crose	60
John Wooddam	16	- John Burnam	55
Samuel Varnham	24	- Cornelius Waldo	
Thomas Lovel	36	✓ Cogswell's farme	61
Nathaniel Piper	65	- John Andrews	52
Mr. Wilson	20	Willm Story	62
Mr. Baker	54	Edward Brag	29
Thomas Newman Sen.	23	✓ Thomas Low Sen.	26
Francis Wainwright	28	Robert Coborne	47
✓ Jacob Perkins	13	Nathaniel Adams	70
John Newmarsh	27	John Adams	41
Richard Smith	12	Thomas Safford	37
✓ John Perkins	2	John Kimball	48
Sergt. Thos. Clarke	30	Robert Wallis	66
Robert Peirse	9	Ensign Howlett	59
Thomas Knolton	4	Allen Perly	50
Mr. Ezekiel Rogers	33	James How Sen.	5
Reginald Foster	10	Georg Farrow	53
Daniel Warner	51	Jeremy Jewett	39
Ensign French	11	Nathaniel Elithrop	49
Edward Lummas	31	Moses Bradstreet	3
✓ Cornet John Whipple	34	Twiford West	35
✓ John Whipple Jun.	15	Mr. Samuel Rogers	60
John Warner		Mr. John Denison	44
✓ Elder Whipple's farm	1	Thomas Kimbal	57
Anthony Potter	40	Aaron Pengry	67
Robert Kinsman Jun.	42	Moses Pengry, Mr. Paine	64
John Leigh Sen.	21	Mr. Nathaniel Rogers	19
John Dane	25	Samuel Pod	68
✓ Nathaniel Emerson: farme	32	John Gage	63

SINGLE SHARES

Hanniel Rosworth	77	Mr. Russell	31
Thomas Smith	60	Joseph Browne	67
Caleb Kimbal	44	John Browne Jun.	30
Marke Quilter	17	- Robert Low Sen.	98
John Leedes, Jo: Kimbal	16	John Edwards,	
John Brewer	58	Mr. Vincent	47
John Denison	91	Michael Crecy	100
Robert Whitman	33	John Gaines	1
Walter Roper	7	John Newman	46
Georg Smith	10	Giles Birdley	105
Edward Chapman	5	Francis Jordan	102
Robert Lord Jun.	27	Thomas Harris	6
Andrew Peters	19	James Chute	28
Robert Collins	43	Obadiah Wood	92
John Caldwell	3	John Kendricke	2

Willm Buckley	65	- Reinold Foster Jun.	70
Sam: Taylor	56	Thomas Varney	86
Willm Hodskin	66	John Chote: Thos. Bishop	88
Bennet Pulsifer	55	John Jewett	75
Thomas Lord	82	Willm Whitred, Jo. Perkins	81
Robert Dutch	94	Nicolas Marrable	89
John Annable	8	Currimacke	22
Andrew Hodges	32	Joseph Goodhue	49
Jacob Foster	38	John Ringe, Brag	36
Job Bishop, Mr. Appleton	79	Willm Searle	96
Samuel Graves	52	Phineas Clarke Sen.	20
John Wiatt	51	Samuel Younglove Jun.	11
John Pinder	37	Willm Merchant	23
John French	25	Phillip Fowler	4
Willm White	63	Robert Kinsman Sen.	84
Thomas Wilson	48	Willm Fellows, Mr. Saltonstall	71
John Sparke, Thos: Bishop	74	Thomas Whitred	24
Henry Archer, Mr. Symonds	18	Samuel Pod	73
Thos. Wayte Osgood		Elder Paine's farme	93
Edmund Bridges	80	John Leighton, Maxy Juett	
John Smith, Mr. Appleton	95	to have this	59
Widdow Quilter	34	Ed Neland	83
Symon Stacey	40	James How Jr.	99
Willm Gutterson	50	- Widdow Metcalfe	
Thomas French	97	- Thos. Metcalfe	
✓ Joseph Whipple	42	John Dane	
John Safford	54	Serg. Jacobs' farme	
Jeremy Belcher	78	Jo. Newmarsh, for Hardy's house	
Samuel Younglove Sen.	26	John Newman Jr. (bo. Rog Lan-	
Thomas Manning	62	cton)	
Samuel Aires	39	Neh Abbott --- 3a. adj. Good How.	
Nathaniel Ross	64	Kilieres Ross, Mr. Symonds	
Ezekiel Woodward	101	John Hassall	
Joseph Reading	41	Daniell Hovey	
Samuel Hunt	45	Thos. Clarke, tiner	
Willm More	14	Corpll Andrews at Averill's Hill (✓)	
Usewel Wardwell	68	Ed Heard hath Archers	
Daniel Hovey	6	Aron Pingry	
✓ Thomas Emerson	107	Sergt Thos: Waite	
Isaiah Wood	53	Joseph Fellows hath Jo. Ayres	
Robert Fitch	9	- John Gidding	
Widdow Lea	106	- Thos. Gidding	
John Marshall, Brabrook	85	✓ Thomas Burnam Jun. for Jr.	
Willm Marshall, Scot	87	Belcher's farme, 2 acres in lieu	
Thomas Stacey farme	21	of single share	
✓ John Cogswel	12	Liberty for firewood	
John Knolton	15	 and one cow	
Samuel Ingals	76	John Knowlton	
✓ Thomas Low Jun.	35	Obadiah Bridges	
Daniel Davison, Hubbard	69	John Frurke?	
Alexander Tompson, Whipple	29	John Dutch	
John Ross, Wardwell	103	Giles Cowes	
Willm Reyner	104	Sam Dutch	
Abram Foster	90	John Grow	
Isack Foster	57	Steeven Crose	
Henry Batchelor	13		



Section of modern highway map of England. Our Boreman family lived at Banbury and Claydon, Oxfordshire, near top of map.



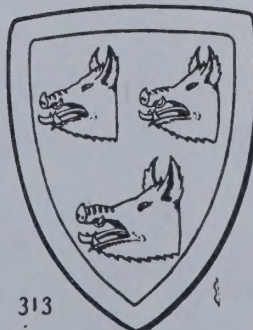


CLAYDON CHURCH.

Our Boreman and Carter Families attended services at this church from the 1500's onward. The parish register here commences in 1569, and shows baptisms of the babies, as well as marriages and burials.

AT RIGHT - neither of these coats of arms belonged to our family--shown only to demonstrate that some families were named for or claimed the wild "bore" as a namesake or mascot. Writer wonders if that applies to the Boreman name as well.

Gordon



313

Borland



314



SECTION 123

The following and other families attended services at this church from the 1500's onward. The parish register have mentioned in 1500, and show baptisms of the people, as well as marriages and burials.



The - list of these of arms belonged to our Y-shown only to demonstrate some families were named for about the year 1500 as a rule of record. With respect as applied to the House of

The roots of our BOREMAN FAMILY were not known until a Victorian maiden lady, Charlotte Goldthwaite, 8th generation descendant in the Connecticut branch of the Boardman family, as it is now called, made an extended trip abroad to search all the British Archives and parish records. Her ancestor, Samuel Boreman, living in Ipswich in 1641, received a letter from his mother, Julian Boreman, before settling later in Wethersfield CT.

The letter passed down in the family over the centuries and turned red with age. It was treated as a relic at first, called "the old red letter." The return address was undecipherable, "(--)don." Every time an "expert" tried to decipher the word he was wrong. Obrydon? or?? An early 19th century uncle wrote many letters to English parishes and other resources and received some replies but died without organizing his data, so that Charlotte had to start fresh.

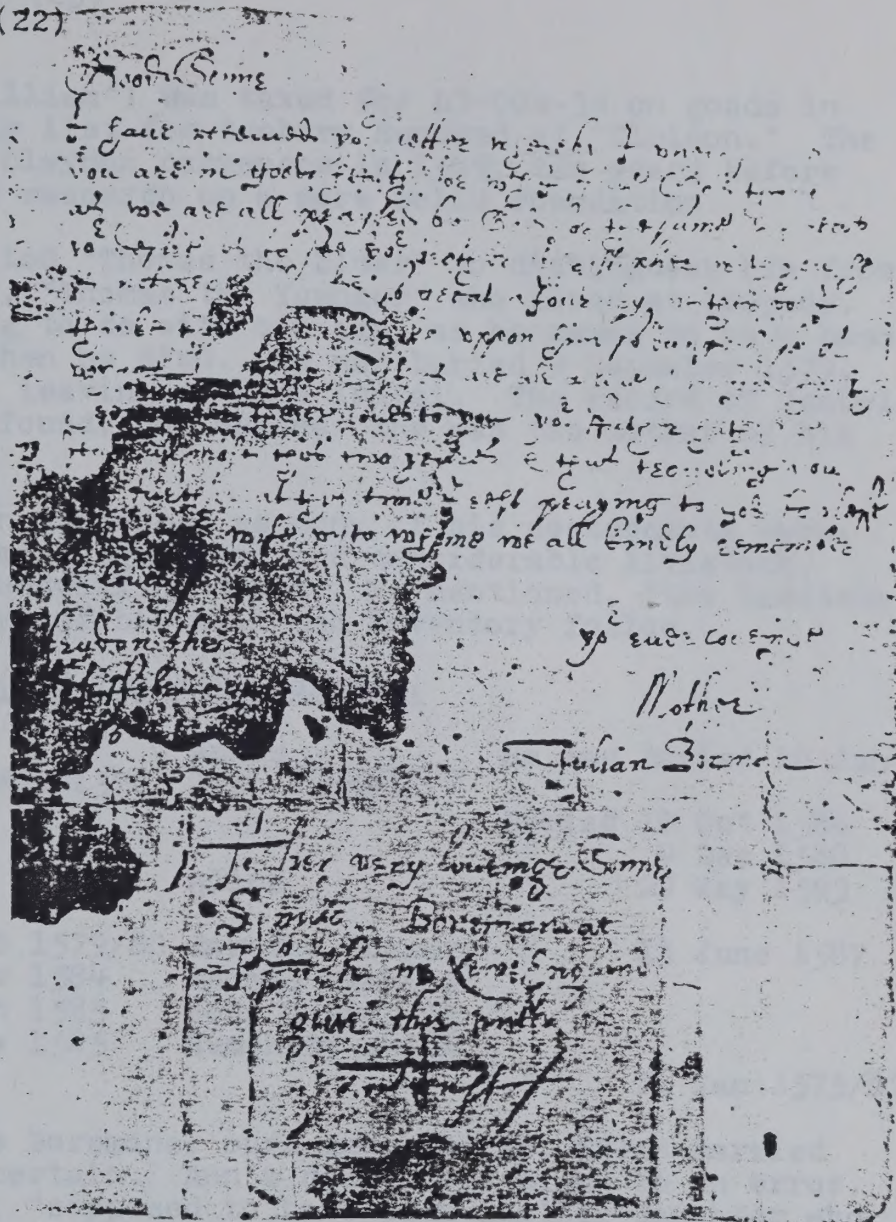
This determined and bright lady was successful. The journal of her search is very entertaining but too long to tell here so you might want to read her book, for she published her findings as the "Boardman Genealogy" in 1895, happy that she had not only traced her line back to 1525 A.D. but our Thomas Boreman's as well, for Samuel and Thomas were cousins--and not just on their fathers' side but their mothers' as well, for Julian Carter Boreman (of the letter) and Elizabeth Carter Boreman, Thomas's mother, were sisters.

William Boreman¹ who was taxed in Banbury, Oxfordshire, in 1525 is believed to be ancestor of the American Family. He paid 40s 7d taxes on his goods in a Lay Subsidy list for Banbury Hundred in 16 Henry VIII. Lay subsidies, raised at irregular intervals, were revenue for the monarchy. "Hundreds" were taxable units--supposedly originally an area capable of raising 100 fighting men, or 100 whatever, it was a little fuzzy. Perhaps the nearest analogy is an American-type county. They were called "lay" subsidies because clergy, monasteries, church land--very extensive in those days--before Henry expropriated it--was not taxed. Henry's wars were so expensive they required a lot of subsidizing.

This man was the only Boreman in the Banbury or wide surrounding area of towns, though a generation later there were five of them. Chances are, if anybody ever figures out who his own father and grandfather were, that person will be named either William or John or Thomas, for they had a very curious naming-pattern. Child mortality must have been high, so taking no chances, they named at least two children the first name they wanted to preserve in their line, e.g., William the Elder and William the Younger were brothers, perhaps named for a still-older William the father.

Letter of Mrs.
Julian Boreman
from Claydon,
England to her
Son Samuel in
Ipswich, Mass.
5 Feb 1641

(Julian's sister
Elizabeth (Carter)
Boreman was
mother of our
Thomas Boreman,
Samuel's cousin.)



Good Sonne

I have received yo^r letter whereby I understand that
you are in good health for w^h I give God thanks as we are
all prayesd be God for the same: whereas yo^r desire is to see
yo^r brother Christopher with you he is not provided for so
great a Journey neither doe I thinke that he dare take uppon
him so dangerouse a voyage yo^r Five Sisters are all alive &
in good health & remember theire loves to you yo^r Father
hath been dead allmost this two yeares & thus troubling
you noe further at this time I rest praying to God to blesse
you & yo^r wife unto whome we all kindly remember o^r loves/

yo^r ever loveinge

[] ydon the
5th of February
1641

Mother
Julian Borman

To hervery lovinge Sonne
Samuel Boreman at
Ipswich in New÷England
give this with
Trust/

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (23)

Thomas Boreman² (William¹) was taxed for L3-00s-3d on goods in the 1546 Lay Subsidy list for Banbury Hundred at "Cleidon." The parish register at Claydon commences in 1569, ten years before his death, and puts research on a more solid foundation.

This Thomas was called "Thomas the Elder" to distinguish him from his younger brother, "Thomas the Younger" who lived at Cropedy. The name had nothing to do with old age, as he seems to have been between 50 and 60 when he died. He was buried 9 December 1579, in the church yard, leaving a widow Isabel. The record of Isabel's death has not been found, nor whether she was the mother of his nine children.

Thomas may have been a cooper, as many of his descendants were; besides all the farming equipment and considerable livestock, he possessed many woodworking tools. He mentioned, "the bedstede I made myself." Copy of his will and inventory follow.

Children of Thomas (and Isabel?) Boreman:

+ William	m.	Annis _____	He was buried 10 Jan 1613
Cicely(Sisley)	8 May 1576	John Russell	
Christopher			Buried 10 Oct 1584
John			" 9 Dec 1588
Thomas the elder		Alice _____	" 29 May 1593
Thomas the younger			
	m. 16 Feb 1579/80	Dorothy Gregory	" 13 June 1587
Elizabeth	17 Nov 1584	Thomas Symkins	
Joane	10 Jun 1585	John Mason, OR	
	24 Nov 1585	Humphrey Welch	
Ann			" 21 Jan 1575/6?

There were two Joane Boremans, ours and another. Which married which husband is uncertain. Ann's death date might be an error, as genealogy states, "supposed to have been another daughter who died before her father."--not sure how to interpret that.

THE WILL OF THOMAS BOREMAN OF CLAYDON, 1576.

In the name of god amen. The thirde daie of Aprill in the yeare of our lord god 1576 I Thomas Borman of Cleidon in the county of oxford the peculier of Cropredie of Diocese of Lincolne beinge wholl & perfecte of mynde & memory Doe constitute & make this my laste will & testamente in maner & forme as followethe First I bequeathe my sowle to Allmighty god & my bodye to be buriede in the church yard of Cleidon. Itm I geve unto the mother churche of lincolne iiij*l*. Itm I geve unto the churche of Cleidon vi*l*. Itm I geve unto the poore mennes Boxe of Cleidon iiij*l*. Itm I geve and bequeathe unto Sisley my dawghter my maultgarner Itm a greate platter a lytle platte a coffer standinge at my bedsyde & my greateste poa*l*e payinge unto Elyzabeth my dawghter in money vis. viij*l*. Itm I geve & Bequeathe unto Elizabeth my dawghter A browne heafer a greate platter a litle plattere a paire of sheets & the coffer at Sysley her bedsyde Itm I geve & bequeathe unto Joane my daw-

ghter a Blacke hecfer the leaste poafe a pewter Dishe A saucer and a paire of Sheets Itm I geve & bequeathe unto John my sonne a blacke hawked hecfer A table boarde a bedstede I made myself A coffer in the iſer chamber wthoute hendges Itm I geve & bequeathe unto Williā myne eldest sonne my greateste spitte Itm I geve and bequeathe unto Christopher my sonne A chafer Itm I geve & bequeathe unto the elder Thomas my sonne my 3 biggiste nawgers* an overthwarte sawe & myne oddes Itm I give & bequeathe unto John russell my two leaste nawgers Itm Detts due to be paide unto Robert Colman of Rodway xxxs Itm unto John Russell xxxiij^s. Itm I geve & bequeathe unto Isabell my wiefte ij kyne one horsse a bedde a matrice ij paire of Sheets A blanket a bolster a coverlet. The reste of my goodes unbequethed moveable & unmoveable my will my Detts & funerals Discharged I geve & bequeathe unto Isabell my wiefte & Thomas Bormā the younger my sonne whom I Doe Joyntley make my full executores To oversee that this my will be trulye performed I doe desyer Williā Borman & Christopher Bormā my sonnes & they to have theire costes & charges borne at all tymes when they shall neede to travayle herein of myne owne goods

finis

These are Nicholas Sickes
witnesses Williā Hatten
and Christopher
Polley curate &
writer herof

Exhibited May 2, 1580.

*A more correct spelling of the word than our present *auger*, which according to Webster is a corruption of the original *naugar*.

INVENTORY

The true inventorye of the goods & cattells of Thomas Borman of Cleidon in the peculiar & parrishe of Cropredy & County of Oxford Taken the fourthe day of January in the yeare of our lord god 1579 (80) as followeth

Imprimis A horse	xs.	
Itm two hecferes*	iiij ^l .	
" one blacke cowe	xxxjs.	viiij ^d .
" a nother cowe	xxs.	
" a hecfer	xiijs.	iiiij ^d .
" the corne in the barne	iiiij ^l .	
" iiij skore pigges	xs.	
" pease	xs.	
" the hey	iiij ^l .	
" a carte, two plowes, harrowes, plowe tymber & plowcheares	xliijs.	iiiij ^d .
" the woad hofells,† hurdles and all other trumpery wood	xlvis.	viiij ^d .

* Heifers.

† Wood hovels or sheds.

" in the kytchyn a maultmill, two fatts, two bradirons & other thyngs there	xxjs.	
" one great spitte		xxd.
" a chafer	xjs.	viiij ^d .
" brasse and pewter	xxs.	
" a garner	xjs.	viiij ^d .
" in the hall a cubbord	vs.	
" a table benche, a forme, dishe pens, stooles, Dishes trumpery	iijs.	iiiij ^d .
" certayne Bords abowte the hall	ijs.	
" iiij cushens		viiij ^d .
" a lyttle spitte, a byll, hatchets, cobberds, pickforks, a ladder, muckforks & rakes w th other thyngs		iiiij ^d .
" a sythe & iiij hooocks		xxd.
Itm a candlestick		viij ^d .
" A Sawe, nawgers, oddes,* bellowes, lanthorne, a boultinge whiche† and a kevert‡	xs.	
" a Saltinge troffe w th other cowpery ware§ and other smale thyngs in the same howse	xvs.	
" in his chambre iiij bedsteeds	iijs.	
" iiij coffers¶	iijs.	
" two old chests, Baskets, formes & other implements in the chambre moveable	iijs.	iiiij ^d .
" a matrice, iiij pillowes, iiij hillings of twilly,¶ ij blankets	xxs.	
" eight payre of sheets, two table clothes, fowre napkins, two towells, wyth paynted clothes & other small thyngs	xxvis.	viiij ^d .
" his apparrell one hatt, one night cappe, ij coats, ij Jerkyns, ij Trusses, ij payre of hose, iiij sherts & one payre of showes		
Suma	xxvij ^l .	vs. ij ^d .

The praisers hereof

felix carter** &
Williā Hatten

* Adze.

† Bolting Hutch, the wooden receptacle into which meal is sifted.

‡ Kever (Kyver or Kiver), a kind of shallow tub.

§ Cowperyware (also copery), barrels, tubs, etc.—things made by a cooper. ¶ Chests.

¶ Hilling, a coverlet; Hilling of twilly, a twilled coverlet.

**Felix Carter who here appears as one of the appraisers of Thomas Boreman's estate, was then a young man, not long married, whose eldest daughter, Elizabeth, then about five years old, became the mother of Thomas Boreman, the emigrant to Ipswich, while another daughter, not yet born, was the mother of Samuel Boreman of Wethersfield.

ghter a Blacke hecfer the leaste poaſe a peawter Dishe A saucer and a paire of Sheets Itm I geve & bequeathe unto John my sonne a blacke hawked hecfer A table boarde a bedstede I made myself A coffer in the iſer chamber wthoute hendges Itm I geve & bequeathe unto Williā myne eldest sonne my greateste spitte Itm I geve and bequeathe unto Christopher my sonne A chafer Itm I geve & bequeathe unto the elder Thomas my sonne my 3 biggiste nawgers* an overthwarte sawe & myne oddes Itm I give & bequeathe unto John russell my two leaste nawgers Itm Detts due to be paide unto Robert Colman of Rodway xxxs Itm unto John Russell xxxiij^s. Itm I geve & bequeathe unto Isabell my wieffe ij kyne one horsse a bedde a mattrice ij paire of Sheets A blanket a bolster a coverlet. The reste of my goodes unbequethed moveable & unmoveable my will my Detts & funerals Discharged I geve & bequeathe unto Isabell my wieffe & Thomas Bormā the younger my sonne whom I Doe Joyntley make my full executores To oversee that this my will be trulye performed I doe desyer Williā Borman & Christopher Bormā my sonnes & they to have theire costes & charges borne at all tymes when they shall neede to travayle herein of myne owne goods

finis

Theese are Nicholas Sickes
witnesses Williā Hatten
and Christopher
Polley curate &
writer herof

Exhibited May 2, 1580.

*A more correct spelling of the word than our present *auger*, which according to Webster is a corruption of the original *naugar*.

INVENTORY

The true inventorye of the goods & cattells of Thomas Borman of Cleidon in the peculiar & parrishe of Cropredy & County of Oxford Taken the fourthe day of January in the yere of our lord god 1579 (80) as followeth.

Imprimis A horse	xs.	
Itm two hecferes*	iiij ^{li} .	
" one blacke cowe	xxxjs.	viiij ^d .
" a nother cowe	xxs.	
" a hecfer	xiijs.	iiij ^d .
" the corne in the barne	iiij ^{li} .	
" iiij skore pigges	xs.	
" pease	xs.	
" the hey	iiij ^{li} .	
" a carte, two plowes, harrowes, plowe tymber & plowcheares	xliijs.	iiij ^d .
" the woad hoffells,† hurdles and all other trumpery wood	xlvis.	viiij ^d .

* Heifers.

† Wood hovels or sheds.

" in the kytchyn a maultmill, two fatts, two bradirons & other thyngs there	xxjs.	
" one great spitte		xxd.
" a chafer	xjs.	viiij ^d .
" brasse and pewter	xxs.	
" a garner	xjs.	viiij ^d .
" in the hall a cubbord	vs.	
" a table benche, a forme, dishe pens, stooles, Dishes trumpery	iijs.	iiij ^d .
" certayne Bords abowte the hall	ijs.	
" iiij cushens		viiij ^d .
" a lyttle spitte, a byll, hatchets, cobberds, pickforks, a ladder, muckforks & rakes w th other thyngs		iiij ^d .
" a sythe & iiij hoocks		xxd.
Itm a candlestick		vid.
" A Sawe, nawgers, oddes,* bellowes, lanthorne, a boultinge whiche† and a kevert‡	xs.	
" a Saltinge troffe w th other cowpery ware§ and other smale thyngs in the same howse	xvs.	
" in his chambre iiij bedsteeds	iijs.	
" iiij coffers¶	iiijs.	
" two old chests, Baskets, formes & other implements in the chambre moveable	iijs.	iiij ^d .
" a mattrice, iiij pillowes, iiij hillings of twilly,¶ ij blankets	xxs.	
" eight payre of sheets, two table clothes, fowre napkins, two towells, wyth paynted clothes & other small thyngs	xxvis.	viiij ^d .
" his apparrell one hatt, one night cappe, ij coats, ij Jerkyns, ij Trusses, ij payre of hose, iiij sherts & one payre of showes		
Suma	xxvij ^{li} .	vs. iiij ^d .

The praisers hereof
felix carter** &
Williā Hatten

* Adze.

† Bolting Hutch, the wooden receptacle into which meal is sifted.

‡ Kever (Kyver or Kiver), a kind of shallow tub.

§ Cowperyware (also copery), barrels, tubs, etc.—things made by a cooper. ¶ Chests.

¶ Hilling, a coverlet; Hilling of twilly, a twilled coverlet.

**Felix Carter who here appears as one of the appraisers of Thomas Boreman's estate, was then a young man, not long married, whose eldest daughter, Elizabeth, then about five years old, became the mother of Thomas Boreman, the emigrant to Ipswich, while another daughter, not yet born, was the mother of Samuel Boreman of Wethersfield.

William³ (Thomas² William¹) Boreman was obviously named for his grandfather. He married Annis () who died about 1603 after the children were grown. Two of the children, John and Alice, married children of the old curate, Christopher Polley, who had written his father's will (see previous page). In fact, it appears the youngest son was named Christopher in his honor. Probably in old age William and Annis made their home with their oldest son Thomas, our ancestor. John and family may also have lived in the same residence, which must have been commodious.

William was strictly a husbandman (farmer) but in even more comfortable circumstances than his father had been. His will was made out December 1610, he being sick, but he lived another two years and was buried 10 January 1612/3, aged probably about 60. His will was drawn up by the curate William Sanderson who succeeded Polley. William and Annis were grandparents of Thomas of Ipswich.

Children of William and Annis () Boreman:

+Thomas	m. 2 Feb 1595/6	Elizabeth Carter bur 9 Mar 1628
Nicholas		moved away?
William		"
John	25 Jun 1593	Elizabeth Polley
Annis		Claridge
Alice	1/25 Oct 1584	Walter Polley
	2/	Brown
Jone bapt 20 May 1570	27 Sep 1596	Edward Heynes
Christopher 16 Jan 1572/3		moved away?

WILL OF WILLIAM BOREMAN OF CLEYDON, 1610.

In the name of God Amen the xii daye of December 1610 I William Borman of Cleydon in the Countie of Oxford husbandman sicke in bodye but of pfecte minde & memorye, thanks be given unto Allmightie God, do ordayne & make this my last will & testament in mañer & forme following. First I bequeath my soule unto Allmightie God my maker & redemer by whose merritts deathe & passion I trust to be saved & by no other meanes & my body to be buried in the church or church yard of Cleydon at the will of my executors. And as concerning my worldly goods I gyve & bequeath them in manner & fourme following. First I gyve & bequeath to the repayre of the church in Cleydon thre shillings & foure pence. Itm I give to these poore men herein named vid. a pece that is to saye to William Dun, William Wadye, John Kylbe, John Francklyn, John Clyfford, Christopher Homes, Thomas Bowler, & Leonard Bradford to Annis Stockly, Francys Shakerly & Alice Grenewood ijd. a pece. Itm I gyve to ev'ye of my god children hereunder named vid. a pece that is to say to William Pratt, William Ellys, John Edmonds, William Claridge, John Poley, Elizabeth Nichols & Hester Gyldinge & to William Borman my Godson one shepe. Item my will is & upon condicōn that Thomas Borman my sonne do p̄mitt & suffer my executo^r in this my will named to have take & enjoye all & singular my moveable goods chattels & cattell which I now have in my possession in that part of my Tenement wherein I & my sayd sonne Thomas do dwell, then my will is these condicōns beinge p̄formēd I do gyve unto my sayd sonne Thomas Borman these p̄cells of goods following that is to saye the

Cubberd the Table the malte myll the furnace the Doo kevers* the yeelinge fatt & meshinge lome† & the greate (s)pitt which be in his use & possession & also I gyve & bequeath unto my said son Thomas Borman his children the fyve poundes which he oweth me to be equallye divided amonge them & also I gyve to his wyffe one payre of Sheetes & Xs. Item I gyve to my sonne Nicholas Borman three poundes ten shillings a cowe a payre of sheetes & the brewing kettle & the presse. I give unto Christopher Borman my sonn xxs. I give unto William Borman my sonne xxs. I give unto Annys Clarridge my daughter two shepe & one payre of sheets & xxs. I gyve unto Alice Browne my daughter one cowe & xxs. I give unto Jone Heynes my daughter two sheepe & one payre of sheetes also I gyve unto my daughter Heynes her children equally to be divided amongst them xxs. I gyve unto Annys Blackwell my serante one sheepe. The rest of all & singular my goods Chattells Cattells money plate armor & weapons I gyve & bequeathe unto John Borman my sonne whome I ordayne & make my sole & onely executor of this my last will & Testament revoking all former wills by me made whatsoever in witness hereof I have here signed this with my mark the daye and yeare fyrst above written

Witnesses Charles Hatten

Proved April 13, 1613.

Willm Sanderson

* Doo kever, the kever or shallow tub in which the dough was mixed
† Lome, a tub.

An Inventorie taken of the goods of William Borman of Cleydon in the County of Oxford, husbandman deceased prayesd by Thomas Nicholls and Charles Hatten this xth day of January 1612.

In the hall

Imprimis a powdering troughe	iis.	
Item a chese presse with other implements	xvid.	
" one chayre & two stoles	xvid.	
" the bigger kettle, the little kettle, a pitch pan, a skillet & a frying pan	iiijs.	vid.
" two kevers, a little forme & a strike bag	xviiijs.	
" two payles	xijd.	

In the ov^r chamber

Item a bedstead & a paynted clothe over it	ijs.	vid.
" 2 syves & an old tub		vid.
" a chese fieres with poste, a chese rack & a little old whele	ijs.	vid.

In the lowe chamber

" 3 coffers	vis.	
" a cobberd with a frame on the top of it	iiijs.	
" a presse	ijs.	
" 3 barrells & the stell they stand uppon, 2 bords, a cherme & a powdring tub	ixs.	

" one pewter platter, 2 pewter Dishes, one pewter Candlestick, & one brasen candlesticks, eight spones & one salte	iiijs.	vid.
" one Spit, one Cobhiron, a payre of bellowes & a payre of pott hookes		xvid.
" one fether bed, 7 blankets, 3 bolsters & 3 pillowes	xxxiiijs.	
" 3 keverlets	xvs.	
" one bedsted, a truckell bed & a forme	ijs.	vid.
" 5 payre of sheets	xxs.	
" 3 pillow beres, 4 napkins, 2 Towells, a Wallet w th other lynnens	vs.	vid.
" an olde woll bed	ijs.	

Item 2 shelves, 3 drincking potts, a disson of trenchers, 2 wooden platte's, a Sybole* a spice mortar, an erthen pan with other small implements	xvis.	
" 7 kushions	ijs.	iiij <i>d</i> .

In the yard

" the hey & pese	xxs.	
" two bease †	iiij <i>l</i> .	vis. viij <i>d</i> .

In the house of Thomas Bormā

" a table, one cobberd & a pen cobberd	vs.	
In the kitchen of the sayd howse		
" a malt myll, a furnace, 2 kevers, the Doo kever & one other kever an old lome & a Tunning dish	xxiiijs.	

In the howse of John Borman

" 2 lomes, a flasket, a wodden platter, a little kever with other small implements	vis.	vid.
" 2 erthen panns, an erthen pot & 2 boulders		xij <i>d</i> .
" a brasse pott, a kettle, a chafing dish & vi peces of pewter	xiijs.	
" a certayne pcell of chese & one coffer	viijs.	
" a pcell of woll	iiij <i>l</i> .	
" the shepe	v <i>l</i> .	xs.
" 2 Bease	iiij <i>l</i> .	vis. viij <i>d</i> .
" one cowe in the hands of Alice Browne	xxxs.	
" his appell	xxvis.	viiij <i>d</i> .
" 2 payre of sheetes	viijs.	

Debts owing to the sayd Willm Borman at his decease

Item in the hand of William Coleman	iiij <i>l</i> .	xiijs.	iiij <i>d</i> .
" in the hand of Charles Hatten	iiij <i>l</i> .		

Summa xxxvi*l*. vis. vid.

Exhibited by John Borman at Cropredy xiiij April 1613

As just stated, William Boreman of the preceding will was grandfather of Thomas of Ipswich. Let us digress a moment and tell about his brother's family. To review, William's parents, "Thomas the Elder" and Isabel Boreman had 4 girls and 5 boys. The boys were our William, Christopher, John, Thomas the Elder and Thomas the Younger. Let us direct our attention to Thomas the Younger, born in Claydon about 1560.

On 16 February 1579/80, very soon after his father's death, Thomas the Younger married Dorothy Gregory. They had two children, Christopher baptized 1 December 1581 and Joane baptized 31 January 1584. Then Thomas the Younger died, probably before even reaching his 30th birthday, on 13 June 1587. No will or inventory was found, probably not needed since he owned his property jointly with his mother, according to his father's will. He likely died suddenly. Nothing further is known of the baby girl, nor of the widow who probably remarried. We are interested in the little boy, Christopher, because he was father of the Samuel Boreman who went to Ipswich and then to Wethersfield CT to found author Charlotte Goldwaithe's branch of the family.

The following, about Christopher, is in Miss Goldthwaite's words, and sheds light on our Carters, as well. Afterwards we will return to our branch.

"Christopher⁴ Boreman (Thomas³ the younger, Thomas² William¹) of Banbury and Claydon, father of Samuel Boreman of Wethersfield, was baptized in Claydon 1 Dec. 1581 and married 19 Nov. 1604, Julian Carter, daughter of Felix and Margaret Carter of Claydon, and sister of Elizabeth Carter, mother of Thomas Boreman of Ipswich. Christopher and his wife removed after their marriage to Banbury, the principal town in the neighborhood, about seven miles south of Claydon, and there the baptisms of five of their children are recorded. On the death of Julian's father, Felix Carter, they returned to Claydon, probably to live with and care for the widowed mother, Margaret, and their two youngest children were baptized there. As there were five daughters in the family, one of them, whose baptism is not found was born, perhaps, about the time of their removal.

"Christopher Boreman was evidently not a husbandman, but was master of some trade at which he was employed in the thriving town of Banbury. When his sister-in-law Elizabeth, mother of Thomas Boreman of Ipswich, made her will, he was one of those whom she asked to be an overseer, and he was also one of the witnesses to it, signing with his name, not mark. He died about ten years after his return to Claydon, and was buried there 1 April 1640. This record of his burial was an important help in the identification of the family of Samuel Boreman, whose father is known to have died about that time.

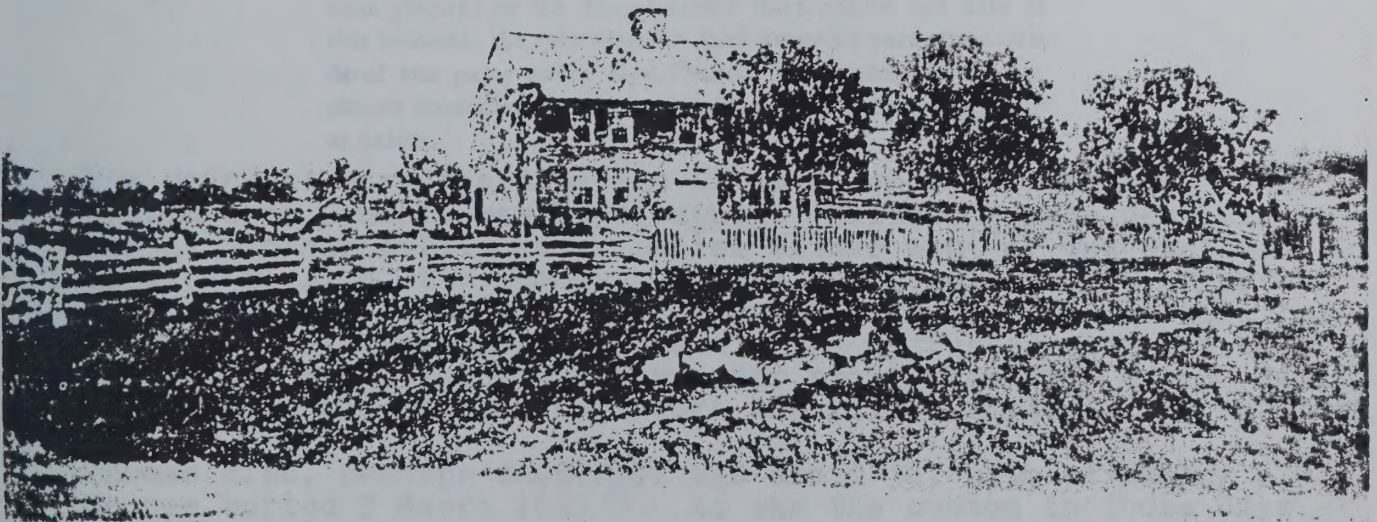
Christopher
Boreman

(Christopher Boreman)

"While most others of our Boremans in England were comparative strangers, only recently introduced to our acquaintance, Julian's has always been a household name among her New England descendants, and we come upon her again in her English home as an old friend. It is pleasant to find that the impression of the graces of her character derived from her letter is strengthened by what is now learned of her. It is evident that she was a family favorite. When her parents grew old, and her father was about to die, she was sent for to be with them, and to care for her mother's declining days.

"On this account, perhaps, her father's house and part of his land were given to her. Her mother, in her will, made Julian her residuary legatee, and when her youngest brother, Robert Carter, died unmarried in his 25th year, he singled her out from all his brothers and sisters by a special remembrance. The last we hear of her is in the letter of her daughter, Elizabeth Middleton of London; she was then, in 1661, living and in good health at the age of 78, surrounded probably by most of her children. She had passed, apparently unharmed, through the horrors of a war that raged for years, with all its attendant evils, at her very door, and we will trust that her few remaining days were peaceful and happy."

Christopher and Julian (Carter) Boreman had eight children, among them Samuel, baptized 20 August 1615, emigrated in 1638 to New England, married Mary Betts in the Ipswich area, and removed to Wethersfield CT.



THE BOARDMAN HOMESTEAD, 1719-1857, AT THE SOUTHWEST END OF BROAD STREET, WETHERSFIELD.

Built by Samuel Boreman, Jr., for his son Cornet Joseph.

From a painting in possession of William F. J. Boardman.

Thomas⁴ Boreman (William³ Thomas² William¹) was born about 1570, son of William and Annis Boreman. On 2 February 1595/6 he married Elizabeth Carter born about 1575, oldest daughter of Felix and Margaret () Carter. Felix Carter first appears in Claydon records in 1577, and was buried there 29 May 1619 leaving a non-cupative will. Margaret died between 14 Oct (will) and 12 November 1621 (inventory). They had nine children including Julian, Elizabeth, and Robert.

Thomas and Elizabeth were a very prosperous couple, with holdings considerably exceeding those of his father and grandfather. They were able to send several sons to London and sponsor them in apprenticeships in profitable trades, including our ancestor, Thomas the Immigrant to Ipswich. The oldest son, William, died young. The next, Felix (called "Phelix" in the inventory of Thomas's estate) became a cutler and armorer, a very lucrative trade, indeed, with all the constant wars with Europe. He lived and traded on "Fleet Lane" near St. Paul's Cathedral in the heart of London. It runs east of Farringdon Street and skirted the north side of the famous old Fleet Debtors Prison. (See small map on another page.) He was 31 years old when Thomas died.

This mention of his being of London enables us to recognize him in the following extract from the Records of the "Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England," previous to the removal of the Government to America under John Winthrop:

17 March 1623* Bought of Felix Boreman dwelling in Fleete Lane				
14	swords	at 4 ^s 6 ^d	a peece	} 4 ^s . 12. 00.
7	ditto	at 3 ^s	a peece	
4	ditto	at 2 ^s	a peece	
25 Swords				

The charter to the Massachusetts Bay Company had been granted by the King thirteen days before the date of this account; the purchase was very probably part of the outfit of the party under Rev. Francis Higginson and others, almost immediately afterwards sent to strengthen the colony at Salem.

The youngest son, Job died age 21 as a London apprentice. The fourth son, Daniel, was handicapped. Elizabeth made provisions for him in her will. Later Daniel either went or was sent to Ipswich to live with Thomas, whom he outlived, and who likewise made financial provision for "my brother Daniel" in his will. His widow, our ancestress Margaret, was entrusted with his care in her old age. This is yet another proof that this is our family. In all they had eight sons before the little girl, Sarah, was born.

Thomas died, perhaps suddenly, age about 58, without making a will. He was buried 9 March 1627/8. As was the custom in those days, inventory of the estate was done the day before the funeral. Administration went to Elizabeth, the widow. Son John lived in

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (30)

home and helped his mother run the farm. Elizabeth and John signed with their marks, surprising because the rest of the family was so literate and her sister, Julian, wrote so well in the "old red letter." Perhaps they were only asked to make their marks, and did so. She proved she was extremely intelligent by more than doubling the size of the family's estate in only three years.

Elizabeth made her will 27 April 1631 while she was sick. She was buried 11 May 1631, age 56. Property included five horses and mares, with five "payres of horse geres" for them, six milch cows, eight heifers, swine and poultry. There were two carts (remember that wagons had not yet been invented), three harrows, a plow, and 22 hurdles (movable frames for enclosure, sometimes used as gates). There was brewing equipment for making ale, dairying equipment and a separate dairy house close to the residence, plus cheesemaking and buttermaking paraphernalia suggesting some of this was sold. There was a smokehouse for bacon and equipment for spinning linen. There was a barn for stabling of the horses and storage of hay and grain, and various "hovels" (the word then meant small buildings and sheds) and a garden house.

They had a spacious two story house with room for a large "hall" on the first floor which would have been nice for entertaining, and all-in-all this must have been quite an establishment for that period in time--comparing with the very best New England had to offer.

There is no doubt this was an upper-class family and demonstrates why Thomas and Margaret Boreman were deferred to with respect in New England, addressed as "Mister and Mistress Boreman" during a period in time when less than 1% of the population was afforded that honor.

Children of Thomas and Elizabeth (Carter) Boreman:

William bapt	20 Nov 1596		bur. 10 Mar 1612/3
Felix	4 Mar 1598/9		settled in London
+ Thomas	18 Oct 1601	m. 17 Aug 1630	Margaret Offing
Samuel	4 Feb 1603/4		died as a child?
Daniel	21 Mar 1605/6		living in Ipswich after 1670
John	30 Oct 1608	163?	Elizabeth. He d. Sep 1680
Joseph	17 Apr 1611		settled near London
Job	18 Dec 1613		bur. 1 Oct 1632. d. London
Sarah	4 May 1717		NFR

INVENTORY OF THE ESTATE OF THOMAS BOREMAN OF CLEYDON, ENGLAND, FATHER OF THOMAS IMMIGRANT TO IPSWICH

An Inventori taken of the goods of Thomas Boreman of Cleydon in the Countie of Oxford yeoman* deceased the 8th daye of March 1627 preysed by George Gybs and Richard French of the sayd towne and countye yeomen

Imprimis his wearinge apparrell	xiijs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
Itm 7 payre of shetes	xvijs.	vi <i>d.</i>
" 5 pillow beres	iijs.	vi <i>d.</i>
" 2 table clothes	iijs.	
" 2 towells, 4 napkins	iijs.	ij <i>d.</i>
" 1 mattris, 2 old woll beds & 1 old bolster	ij <i>l.</i>	xs.
" 4 payre of blanketts	xiijs.	
" 2 heelings	xs.	
" 1 bedsted, 1 fether bed, 3 bolsters, 2 pillows	xls.	vi <i>d.</i>
" 5 bedstedes	vis.	
In the chamber 5 coffers, a presse, an old chere	ixs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
Itm an olde bedsted, a cradell, a chese rack and 3 old bords	ijjs.	vi <i>d.</i>
" In the kitchin 1 coule,† 3 payles, 2 troves, a chesepresse, an olde cherme	vs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
In the gardñ house 1 gardñ, 3 tubs, 1 coule, 1 kevr 5 barrells with other od imple-ments	xvijs.	ij <i>d.</i>
Itm a stole, a presse, & a lynnyn whele	iijs.	vi <i>d.</i>
In the hall a joyned table, a frame, a forme, a coberd, 2 old chayres with other im-plements	xiijs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
Itm the brasse	xxxiijs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
" the pewter	vis.	vi <i>d.</i>
" 2 Spitts, a grate, a payre of Cobirons, 2 payre of hangells, a malte mill, a boltinge which, an old kyv ^r w th other od imple-ments in the old kitchen	xiijs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
" the corne	vi <i>l.</i>	
" the otes	xxs.	
" the haye	iiiij <i>l.</i>	xs.
" the hovell & the pese	xxs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
" 20 hurdells, 2 cribs, 4 hogs troughes, a horse troughe & a drey	viijs.	iiij <i>d.</i>

" the cart hovell & the Ote hovell with certain wod	xs.	
" 2 Iron bound carts & 3 shepe racks	iijs.	x <i>d.</i>
" 4 heyfers, 2 yearling coves	vij <i>l.</i>	
" 2 Steres, 12 hens & 2 cocks	xxiijs.	
" the horses mares & colts	xv <i>l.</i>	xs.
" 79 Sheepe	xxvs.	iiij <i>d.</i>
" certain hemp	iijs.	
" the geres plowe & harrowes, & an old scaf-fold over the horses	xxis.	
" certaine butter, 4 cheses & a few appels	vs.	
Summa	liiiij <i>l.</i>	iijs. iiij <i>d.</i>

Account of Elizabeth Boreman of Cleydon, relict and Administratrix of the estate of Thomas Boreman Exhibited April 12, 1630.

Funeral expenses	2 <i>l.</i>		
Administration expenses	1 <i>l.</i>	2s.	8 <i>d.</i>
Debt owing Francis Ward of Cleydon	20 <i>l.</i>	0	0
" " Thomas Bloxam of Tadmarton	2	0	0
" " — Coop of Ladburrin	2	0	0
" " Edward Blackwell of Tought	2	0	0
John Robins of Bloxham, a car-penter	4	0	0
Phelix Boreman of London	10	0	
to one Mr. Anyan of Itchington, Warwick	12	0	0
Mr. Smalebone of Banburie	8	0	

The mark of Elizabeth Boreman

The mark of John Boreman

John Boreman & George Hopkins of Bourton Magna, sureties for the administratrix.

* Yeoman is defined by Webster, "a freeholder; a man free born. A yeoman in England is considered as next in order to the gentry."

† Coule, a large wooden tub.

WILL OF ELIZABETH BOREMAN OF CLAYDON, WIDOW OF
THOMAS BOREMAN.

In the name of God Amen I Elizabeth Borman of Cleydon in the county of Oxford wydowe, syck in bodye but of good & p'fecte remembrance thanks be to God for it do ordayne & make this my last will & testament this 27th day of Aprill 1631 as followeth, first I bequethe my Soule into the hands of Allmighty God my maker & redem^r by whose p'trous bloude shedinge I hope & stedfastly beleve to be saved, my bodye to be buried in the Church yard of Cleydone aforesayde. Item I give to the church of Cleydon xvi^d. Item my will is that my sonne Daniell shall staye & have his being with my sonne John Boreman and alowe unto my sayd sonne Daniell meate, drinke and apparrell and tenn shillings a yeare during the naturall lyffe of the sayd Daniell & yf my sonne Daniell shall not be contented to stay with his brother John & can better p'fer himself in some other service he may, my sonne John to paye unto him tenn shillings a yeare notwithstanding as aforesayde. Item my will is that my executor hereafter named shall pay unto my daughter Sara Boreman Syx poundes which was given her by the last will & testament of my father Felix Carter deceased. I give unto her also forty shillings to be payde unto her when she shal be of the age of twenty yeares. I give unto her also this my bed that I lye nowe upon wth all that belongs unto it and also I give unto her the best payre of shetes in the house. I give unto my sonne Job* seaven poundes to be payde unto him w^{hin} one yeare after his apprentishippe is fully expired. I give unto my son Joseph Boreman syx pounds to be payde unto him when he shal be of the age of foure and twentye yeares. I give unto my sonne Felix Boreman forty shillings to be payde unto him within foure yeares next after my decease, and I give unto my sonne Thomas Boreman forty shillings to be payde unto him within foure yeares next after my decease. All the rest of my goods moveable & unmoveable unbequeathed I give unto my sonne John Boreman whom I make my whole Executor of this my last will and testament In witness hereof I have set my hand & seale the day & year above written

Witnesses William Sanderson Elizabeth
Peter Carter (Mark)
Christopher Boreman* Boreman

I do intreat my very good friends Ambrose Holbridge, George Hopkins Peter Carter and Christopher Boreman to be overseers to this my will and testament.

Proved at Cropredy August 5, 1631.

*Burial, Oct. 1, 1632, of Job Boreman, a prentice. (Records of St. Antholin, Budge Row, London.)

*The father of Samuel Boreman, the Emigrant. Autograph in original will.

An inventorie taken of the goods of Elizabeth Boreman of Cleydon in the County of Oxford widow deceased preysed by George Gybbs, John Stockley, John Bourman and Peter Carter the 13th day of Maye 1631.

Item her wearinge clothes wollen and lynnne	5 <i>li</i> .		
" the bed in the chamber that she laye in with all that belongeth to it and one payre of sheets	4 <i>li</i> .	10s.	
" In the same chamber one bedstead, a woll bed, a payre of blanketts & one bolster		20s.	
" In the same chamber 3 coffers, a presse with other wodden implements		20s.	
" 2 payre of sheets, 2 table clothes with the other aperye (napery) ware		40s.	
" In the ov ^r romes 2 bedsteds with the implements in the same romes		25s.	
" In the daye house 4 barrells, 3 old fatts with other implements in the sayd day house		24s.	
" In the kitchen a boltinge witch, a chesepresse and lynkes with other implements in the kitchen		16s.	
" In the hall 2 cobberds, a table, a forme with other implements		20s.	
" a malte mill		6s.	8 <i>d</i> .
" the brasse & the pewter		46s.	8 <i>d</i> .
" the corne & the malte	4 <i>li</i> .		
" 2 hogs & 2 fitchens of bakon		30s.	
Item 2 hovells the wod that lyes w ^{hin} them, the scaffould in the stable, the rack & manger		30s.	
" In the cart house a hundred of furse & old cart body a lather & other implements		20s.	
" a plowe, 3 harrowes		13s.	4 <i>d</i> .
" 2 carts	3 <i>li</i> .	6s.	8 <i>d</i> .
" the bucket, the chayne & 4 hogs trowes		5s.	
" 6 milch bease	16 <i>li</i> .		
" 5 heyfers	8 <i>li</i> .		
" 3 heyfers 3 years old		53s.	4 <i>d</i> .
" the crop of the grayne of 4 yard land* in the fields	32 <i>li</i> .		
" 5 horses & mares	12 <i>li</i> .		
" 5 payre of horse geres & a cart rope		18s.	
" the grayne & grasse of a quarterne land	3 <i>li</i> .	10s.	
" two and twenty old hurdles		3s.	4 <i>d</i> .
" the poultry		3s.	4 <i>d</i> .
Total	109 <i>li</i> .	6s.	4 <i>d</i> .

We are indebted to Miss Goldthwaite for the bulk of the information about the Boremans. She was so thorough that most of the data found in other sources is also included in her book. But she did not know that our Thomas had gone to London, only that he was "away from home" before he emigrated. Neither did she know when he married or the maiden name of Margaret.

We do know, for the New England Historic Genealogical Register Vol 62:303 (1908) has the following:

BOREMAN.—Mr. Henry F. Waters has called attention to the following entry in the "Registers of St. Helen's, Bishopgate, London, 1575-1837," p. 132:

1630 Aug. 17 Thomas Bourman, batcheler and Cordwayner of London, and Margaret Offing, maiden; by hands.

Thomas¹ Boreman of Ipswich, 1635, had a wife Margaret; and his son Thomas² had a son Offin. The coincidence of names would seem to identify Thomas Bourman of London with Thomas Boreman of Ipswich, and suggests their being the same person.

COMMITTEE ON ENGLISH RESEARCH.

To show what Mr. Waters meant, the following was copied from pages 30 and 31 of "Early Inhabitants of Ipswich, Mass":

BOREMAN, Bourman, Boarman, Bordman: Thomas 1. had a house lot on High street. 1635. and a farm near Labor-in-vain. 1636. He was a commoner, 1641. His will dated Oct. 6, 1670, was proved June 19, 1673. In it he mentions his wife Margaret; sons David and Thomas; son Robert Kinsman, and a daughter Joanna unmarried. He provides for a brother Daniel, to be maintained out of the estate. His widow died 1679. Her will dated August 8, of that year, was proved on the 30th of the following March. She mentions daughters Kinsman, Loe, [Martha, who married Deacon Thomas Low of Chelbacco.] and Fellows: sons Daniel and Thomas.

In a fragment of a letter dated "London, ye 5th of Sep'r, 1672," and signed "Lidia Bankes," which was probably addressed to Daniel Epes, there is a postscript as follows: "I desire my affectionate love to your wife and all your children, my service to your father Symonds, my cousin, and not forgetting our Mr. Bourman, Mr. Rogers and their wives if alive."

At a Town meeting Feb. 1672. Ordered, that the select men together with Mr. Wade and Serg't Bowman, take speedy care to repair the meeting house.

Daniel 2, son of Thomas 1, married Hannah Hutchinson, April 12, 1662.

Thomas 2, son of Thomas 1, married Elisabeth Perkins, Jan. 1, 1667. They had:

Thomas, born August 8, 1669.

Jacob, born June 10, 1671.

John, born March 8, 1673.

Offin, born Dec. 1676,

Margaret, born April 4, 1681.

A daughter died Nov. 25, 1679. He was a voter in town affairs, 1679. We find the following vote on the town records: "1696-7, March, voted, that Thomas Boreman, sen'r, make an acknowledgment for his affronting Lt. Thomas Hart, or pay a fine of five shillings." In 1714, Mr. Thomas Boreman is appointed on a committee, and in 1719 a seat is assigned to him in the meeting house. It appears from the inscriptions on their grave stones yet standing in the old burying place that he died Oct. 3, 1719, in the 76 year of his age; and his wife died Dec. 4, 1718, aged 68 years, 8 months, and 3 days. In these inscriptions the name is spelt Bordman.

Thomas 3, son of Thomas 2, with his wife Sarah, had a son John, born Feb. 13, 1697. They were appointed administrators on the estate of Abel Langley of Ipswich, "their only brother," December 24, 1711.

Offin, son of Thomas 2, married Sarah Heard, Feb. 28, 1698, and on the 16 of December following, had a son Offin.

Jacob 3, son of Thomas 2, subscribed 10s towards the bell, 1699. "1706, December 26, Martha Boarman, wife of Jacob Boarman, widow of Jno. Rogers, son of Samuel Rogers," died June 11, 1740, aged 70. Jacob Boardman died Nov. 29, 1756, aged 86. Elizabeth their daughter died May 4, 1736, aged 22.

John 4, son of Thomas 3, married Abigail Choate, published Nov. 27, 1720, daughter of Thomas Choate 2, son of John 1.

Moses with his wife Ann, had a son Daniel, born Dec. 10, 1699.

If anything more about the Cffin (Offing) family has come to light, writer would love to know about it.

Do you notice the many spellings of Boreman, Boarman, Bowman, Bordman, not to mention Loe and Low?

Section of a map of modern London



Quite naturally, with so many people living there over the centuries, central London has changed too much to show exact locations where the Boremans lived, worked, or married. Thomas's brother Christopher had his shop on Fleet Lane (street) at center left edge of map. While he was there the old Fleet Debtor's Prison was not far away, on the same street.

Thomas was married to Margaret Offin in 1630 at St. Helen's Bishopgate. At upper right of map you will observe that Bishopgate Street is still there but no St. Helen's shows, unless it is too small. Perhaps it was swallowed up by the Liverpool Street Station or something else.

It might be hard to trace the Offin or Offing family if they, also, were newcomers to London as the Boremans were. Trade had prospered under the recent reign of the Tudors, though they now had a new king. Still, many were flocking to London in spite of the plague and polution, for fortunes were to be made there.

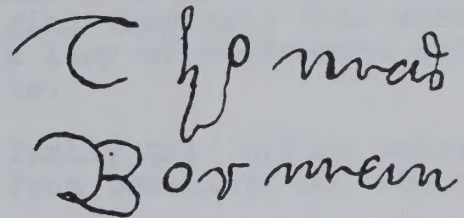
Getting back to Mr. Waters' report of the marriage, the spelling "Bourman" is not the least bit

concerning if you look at this photostatic copy of our Thomas Boreman's signature.

That Old English script is hard to read unless one is trained and that takes years.

If you skip back about 7 or 8 pages to look at his uncle

Christopher Boreman's signature, you will see that he made his "r" to look much like a modern "w" or "u."

A handwritten signature in Old English script. The first line appears to be 'Thomas' and the second line appears to be 'Boreman'. The script is highly stylized, with long, flowing letters and some characters that resemble modern 'w' or 'u'.

In case writer forgets to mention this further on, reports of homes in ancient Ipswich, MA, mention an old "Burnham-Winthrop" home. You will soon be meeting our Burnham family, for Richard Dodge IV's mother-in-law's maiden name was Mary Burnham. But that name, also, was spelt variously, often Burnam which was mistaken for for Boreman. I believe that home has been given the wrong title and should be the "Boreman-Winthrop" house because John Winthrop, Jr., later governor of Connecticut, and Thomas Boreman were next-door neighbors. Both eventually moved away but they were fast friends even in England. (Remember that the Winthrop party bought 25 swords from his brother Felix just before they departed for Massachusetts Bay?)

The hardest part of the Waters' report to understand is that the occupation of Thomas was listed as "cordwayner," when we know that he was a cooper, an occupation he may well have learned in his youth in Claydon. Even his great grandfather of the same name, Thomas-the-Elder Boreman, was thought to have been a cooper, good with woodworking, and "the bedstede I made myself." His cousin Samuel in Wethersfield was also a good cooper. This suggests a family trade. Perhaps when Thomas was a young man in London he dabbled in the shoe business for a while, before going back to earlier skills.

Thomas and Margaret left many friends in London. Two pages before this the "Early Inhabitants..." book tells of a Lydia Banks writing to our relative Daniel Epes inquiring about them and others.

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (36)

Thomas⁵ Boreman (Thomas⁴ William³ Thomas² William¹) would be called #1 instead of 5 if this were an American genealogy of his descendants other than just his daughter Martha who married a Low. Thomas was⁴ born 18 October 1601 in Claydon, Oxfordshire, England, to Thomas and Elizabeth (Carter) Boreman. As a youth or young man he removed to London where on 17 August 1630 he married "Margarett Offing, maiden; by bands" at St. Helen's Bishopgate. It is very frustrating that they did not at least say who her parents were, but we are glad they said that much. Subsequent events prove that she was a lady of refinement and culture, respected by New England elite.

There are so many details about this family that writer takes the liberty of photocopying to keep this from becoming too long or leaving out important details.

The exact date of Thomas Boreman's coming to New England is not known. He was probably here as early as 1634, but is first found on record in March, 1634-5, when he was made freeman by the General Court of Massachusetts. His first grant of land is recorded at Ipswich in 1635.* *4 Mar.*

"Granted to Thomas Boreman about fifty-five acres of land, having on the north west the creek called Labour in vaine, George Carr on the south west, the town river on the north east, and Mr. Wythe on the south east. Also a six acre lott on the north east side the Hill by the town, having William Bartholomew on the north west and Thomas Scott on the south east. Likewise an house lott in the Towne upon which he hath built an house, havinge Mr. Bartholomew on the South west. To enjoy to him his heirs and assigns forever."

These lands are again entered, May 7, 1639, with others he had since acquired. The house lot is more particularly described in the second entry, as follows:

"One house lott about two acres of ground lying to the street called the East End,* and butting upon the sayde street at the South east end, bounded on the north east by a House lott belonging to Mr. John Winthrop, and on the South west by a house lott granted Will^m Bartholomew." * *now East Street*

The piece of fifty-five acres is in the second entry described as:

"An Island about fifty and five acres of Land medow and upland, bounded on the north and north east by the Town River, and on the East by a creek parting it and an Island belonging to John Perkins the Elder, and on the South a p'sell of Land formerly granted to George Carr, and on the West the great creek called the Labour in vayne."

He retained also the six acres of planting ground on the "North syde the Towne," and has recorded the following new purchases:

"Also a p'sell of ground about two acres for a house lott lying on the South syde the Town River, bounded on the South by a highway† leading to the Labour in vayne, on the North west by certain house lotts granted to Daniell Hovey, William Holdred, &c. on the North east by a house lott formerly granted to Thomas Gilven." (Thomas Boreman bought this adjoining houselot of Thomas Gilven, containing one acre, almost immediately: recorded June 1, 1639.) † *now Boardman Street*

"Also a small p'sell about a rood of ground on the street called the East end bounded by a house lott of John Perkins the younger on the east end and by two house lotts formerly granted to Serjeant Howlett and Thomas Hardy on the South, the town reserving liberty to digg clay in any part of the say'd p'sell last granted: ‡ to enjoy all the sayd Lands to him his heirs and assigns forever. Entered the 7th day of May 1639."

‡ It is not easy to conceive any reason for Thomas Boreman's buying this small piece of clayey ground, not connected with his house-lot, and where the town were at liberty to dig, except that he wanted it for a shop. It was on the same street as his house, but on the opposite side.

Dec. 2, 1647, Thomas Boreman sold to Philip Long his house and lot of two acres on East Street, where he had lived, next to John Winthrop, Jr.; also two other pieces of land, a half acre of meadow, and seven acres in the common field.

Oct. 7, 1652, he bought for £35 twenty acres, called in another place, "the Iland sometime Goodman Websters," adjoining his farm, making thus 75 acres in the whole farm of Boardman's Island, so far as found entered on the Town Book. The records there are, however, imperfect, and it is impossible to trace clearly all his sales and purchases of lands. At his death, his half "the land within the rivers and creeks," is called 42½ acres, thus making the whole island 85 acres, the other half having doubtless been before made over to his son Thomas, who succeeded him there. His only other inventoried land was ten acres of planting ground on the other side of the river.

Thomas Boreman's house, which he had already built when his land was recorded in 1635, was probably his dwelling from that time till he sold it in 1647, and was situated at the east end of the High Street, now called East Street, not distant from the landing place on the bank of the Ipswich River. His farm on the island was some ways farther down the river, and on the other side of it. As there was but one bridge, and that farther up stream than either his farm or his house, the way from one to the other was a very round-about one, and if farming was his principal occupation, it would be a wonder that he lived on the High Street so long. It is not unlikely that his business as a cooper was then the important one, the rood of ground he bought in 1639 on the opposite side of East Street, perhaps containing his shop, and on that account a location in the town was desirable. There

is no barn spoken of at any time in connection with his dwelling house, which argues that his farm was an entirely separate concern, probably having buildings of its own, and a farmer (Isaiah Wood?), just as John Winthrop, Jr., his next neighbor on East Street, had a farm in Ipswich, called Castle Hill, very much more remote from his dwelling than Thomas Boreman's.

Wherever Thomas Boreman removed after selling his house on East Street, it is plain that at the close of his life he had retired to live on his farm. Mr. Farley, a well-known Ipswich antiquarian, was of the opinion that there were never dwellings on Boardman's Island. None are there now, and probably any traces of former habitation are entirely obliterated, but we can interpret the description of his home in his inventory only as showing that it was situated on lands within the river and creeks, in other words, on Boardman's Island,* so called after him.

This island had on the east and south only inconsiderable creeks, rising and falling with the tide, but on the north flowed a navigable river, and on the west, separating the island from the town proper, was "the great creek, called the Labour in vayne." To establish communication with the town, a bridge was necessary, and this Thomas Boreman built. The following in regard to it is found in the Colonial Records of Massachusetts. It can hardly be supposed that the bridge referred to here was the first one he had built. More likely it was erected to replace an earlier and less substantial structure. As the road from the town to the Islands, so called, beyond him, lay through his lands, it was natural that he should have felt himself justified in making this petition.

"At a session of the General Court held 6 May, 1657. In answer to the petition of Tho. Boreman for liberty to build a bridge over a creeke about his farme, y^e in consideraçon of his building a bridg so necessary, he might be exempted from county rates, and y^e such as make use of ye sd bridg & not contribute to y^e same, they might be liable to such charge as the Court shall determine &c—the Court doth not judge it meete to exempt the petitioner from rates, but judge it aequall that none make use thereof except it be by the allowance of the petitioner or making contract with him." Further at the same court, "Thomas Boreman of Ipswich desireing to be ratified in reference to his building of a bridg is denied his request, but so far as his pet hath respect to others making use of it, the Court judges it equall that none make use thereof but by his allowance or contract wth him."

The bridge there is to this day called by his name, and the street leading to it, for the most part a country road, is named Boardman Street. The bridge often got out of repair, and provision had to be made for mending it. An entry in the Town Records, Jan. 26, 1670, under the head of "Liberty granted to fell trees," reads, "To Mr Borman for pines to

mend his bridge." In his will it is provided that his son Daniel and his heirs should allow his brother Thomas two days in a year to repair the bridge.

The following evidence given in court, March 25, 1695, and relating to matters at the early date of 1645, is interesting in this connection. The change here already begun in the spelling of the name is noticeable. "Labor-in-vain fields," were the fields on each side of Boardman Street, which led to the bridge and island.

"John Webster aged 63 testified than when he lived with his father at Ipswich 50 years since, the way to Mr. Bordman's Island and Mr. Emersons and Mr. Perkins Island, layd over the lots in labor in vain fields near the bank side* until Mr. Bordman's servant Isaiah Wood † lett ye oxen pull down ye cart of (off) the bank where the oxen were hanged by the neck, one of them till he was dead, and said Wood came to my Father and myself that were in the fields at work to borrow a Hoe to stick the ox, but said Borman's ox being dead then the way was altered to the place where now it lyeth neer the middle of the lotts down to the creek about 20 or 30 rods below ye bridge yt now is, which way was ever after while we lived in town occupied for the owners of ye lands and meadows of and belonging to the proprietors on this side the great Creeke and of the other Side by said Bordman Mr. Emerson and Mr. Perkins—witnes my hand John Webster."

"The testimony of Nathaniel Emerson aged 64 years. Testifies that the occasion of the removing of the above way was ye killing of said Bordmans ox and that the way where now it lyes downe to ye Creeke for the above said occupiers was staked out two rods wide by Mr. Symon Broadstreet late Governor and my father Emerson. The above said Webster's father, Doctor Dane and Daniel Hovey Deceased asking them why they staked it out so wide, they said because carts when they met might not be hindered in passing to & fro, and said way was ever since improved by the above said proprietors till Thomas Bordman** begun to obstruct the same."

Boardman's Island is described in the record as consisting of meadow and upland, and as appears elsewhere there was also salt marsh and "thatch ground," the latter so called because it produced a kind of rushes suitable for thatching houses. Provision was made by the General Court that certain such grounds should "be for the use of the whole town, to be improved for thatching houses." The early dwellings, therefore, of Thomas and Samuel Boreman in Ipswich were probably roofed with thatch like those they had left in Claydon, and such as we may see there to-day.

The amount of Thomas Boreman's inventory, £554. 6s. 6d, does not give a correct idea of his property. There should be added to the account the portion he had given at the time of his marriage to his son Daniel, £225, and the land set off to his other son, Thomas, which was no doubt worth at least as much more; also his two married daughters' portions, probably £100 each, judging from that left to Joanna. A better idea of his estate is obtained from his share in the division of Plum Island in 1665-6, which was distributed as follows: all that did not exceed 6s. 8d. in their country rate were to have a single share; those not exceeding 16s., a share and a half, and all above 16s., together with

* Bank of Ipswich River.

† Isaiah Wood, said to be 41 years old in 1668, married, 26 Jan. 1653. Mercy, daughter of Simon Thompson of Ipswich, by whom he had fifteen children. One of them, Mary, m. 1673, James Chute (grandson of Lionel, the Ipswich schoolmaster), whose maternal grandmother, Martha, widow of Daniel Eppes, Sen., married, 2d, Dep. Gov. Symonds.

** Thomas Bordman, Jr.

*The Island was in the third generation the property of Thomas' grandson, Jacob Bordman, who by a deed of gift, dated June 23, 1748, gave it to his two sons, Jacob and John, when it is described as the "homestead and buildings," with bounds explained at length as beginning at Labor-in-Vain bridge, running south by the Labor-in-Vain creek, then northerly through the ditch which parts Col. Choate's farm, to the bridge leading to Col. Choate's farm, and so on by various ditches to low water mark on the Town River, thence west by the river till arriving at the creek they terminate at the bridge first mentioned. It is thus evident that some members of at least the first four generations of the family had their home on Boardman's Island.

magistrates, elders, Messrs. John Rogers (the minister), and Thomas Andrews (the schoolmaster), a double share. In this division, April 10, 1666, out of 203 commoners, 28 had a double share, 70 a share and a half, and 105 a single share. Thomas Boreman had No. 4 of the double shares.

His position in the community may be gathered from the fact that he is uniformly spoken of as Mr. Boreman, and his wife had the corresponding title of M^{rs}, or Mistress, terms of distinction applied to very few in those days. We obtain a glimpse of the estimation in which he was held, in the following extracts from a letter printed among the Winthrop papers. The letter is without date, and was written by Samuel Symonds, afterwards Deputy Governor of Massachusetts, and then probably in Boston, to John Winthrop, Jr., later the Governor of Connecticut, but then living in Ipswich in his house next to Mr. Boreman's.

"I desire you would talk with Mr. Boreman & with his help buy for me a matter of 40 bushells of good Indian corne, of him or of some honest man to be paid for now in ready money & to be delivered at any tyme in the sumer as I please to use it. I would deale with such a man as will not repent if corn rise, as I will not if it fall. . . . My wife and I desire to be kindly remembered to your good neighbors* Mr. Boreman & his wife & the rest of our friends."

*There seems to be uncertainty among Ipswich antiquarians as to where the home of John Winthrop, Jr., during his residence in that town, was situated. In the published account of the celebration of the 250th anniversary of the town's incorporation, a picture of a house on the south side of the river, on the Essex road, called the "Winthrop-Burnham house," is given, in regard to which the tradition of his having lived there is quoted. The description of Thomas Boreman's house lot on the north side of East St., recorded in 1639 as "bounded on the North East by a House lott belonging to Mr. John Winthrop," together with this mention of the two as neighbors, makes the location certain.

Of the public offices held by Thomas Boreman, not much is known. The year ensuing that in which he was made freeman, "At a General Court houlden at Boston," Sept. 8, 1636, "M^r Boreman" is one of the Deputies. He was then 34 years old. In 1640, "Mr. Bartholomew and Mr. Boreman were appointed to lay out the planting lotts of John Perkins Jun. and Edmund Gardiner"; also of Thomas Clark's meadow. The following proves him to have been one of the townsmen or selectmen in 1635, at the beginning of his life in Ipswich, from which it may be concluded that he was at other times chosen to that office. The record relates to the Grant of a Mill to Mr. Saltonstall (Richard) by the town of Ipswich in 1635, which is signed by

Thomas Howlett John Gage and a mark
Thomas Borman Phillip Fowler and a mark

This Grant with its signatures is cited in the Town Records with the following testimony:

"Thomas Borman, a very old man, being before us at Ipswich, declared upon his oath that he Judgeth the words (Thomas Borman) subscribed among others in the testimony above written to be his hand, and further upon his oath he saith not; dated the last of February 1671 1672."

(Signed)

Samuell Symonds
Daniell Gookin

Mr. Boreman was at this date 70 years and about 4 months old, and of sound mind, as shown by his making a codicil to his will more than a year later. He had lived to an age considerably beyond that of most of his ancestors in Claydon, but he was, according to our present standards, far from being "a very old man." An extract from another letter making mention of him is given in this connection. It was written by Lidia Bankes in London to Daniel Eppes of Ipswich, and was dated, London, 5 Sept., 1672.

. . . . "my service to your father Symonds, my coussen, and not forgetting old Mr. Bourman, Mr. Rogers and their wives if alive; my great respects to them; I should be glad to hear of them."

The provision made by Thomas Boreman for his eldest son, Daniel, appears in the following "testimony of Richard Hutchinson and Nathaniell Putnam of Salem concerning Daniel Borman."

"The sayd Richard Hutchinson and Nathaniell Putnam being at the house of Mr. Thomas Borman att Ipswich about the twelfth month, '61, upon propositions of ye mariage of his sonn Daniell with the daughter of the said Richard do both testify upon the condition of their mariage together. The said Mr. Thomas Borman gave in wrighting to his sonn Daniell the one halfe of his dwelling house, barnes, outhouses, orchyards, upland, & meddows with all the priviledges and appurtenances to be presently possessed & enjoyed without any other condition than this, if he dyed before his father without issue, in which case the sd Mr. T. Bourman was to pay unto Hannah, wife of sd Daniell Bourman an hundred pound Joynture & the whole land to be at his dispose, and further that after the death of the said Tho. Bourman & his now wife that the other halfe of the aforementioned dwelling house etc. were given unto the said Daniel with this proviso that he (Thomas) would have liberty to dispose of £200. in way of legacy where he should think good & that both this half & the other were given to sd Daniel & his heirs & assigns forever & further that the sd Mr. Borman tould us he had a frame of a dwelling house which when he had sett up & furnished that then his son Daniel should have it to live in, or elce the best room in the old, but only he himself would have his choice. The substance of what is here testified, (excepting the new frame) was delivered in wrighting by the sd Mr. to his son Daniel in our presence."

"Taken upon oath 27th 9th 1663
before me William Hathorne."

Daniel afterwards decided to settle in Topsfield, where he bought, December, 1665, for £315, of William Evans, planter, and Agnes, his wife, a farm of 200 acres, with dwelling, etc., having conveyed back to his father all right to the home farm in the following agreement, dated Sept. 27, 1665:

"Daniell Borman for dyvers considerations moving him hath sould unto his father Thomas Borman all his right in his father's farm, in consideration of which sayd Tho. Borman doth agree to give said Daniell Borman the full sum of £225, in manner followeth; the 1st 100£ to be paid in the year 1666, 20£ in horse flesh, 20£ in sheepe & porccke, 30£ in neate cattell, 20£ in corn, 5£ in pork and 5£ in cattle — notwithstanding what is above written Mr. Borman hath liberty to pay 30£ in English goods — the corn to be payd by the 1st of March — the places are the kell, mill, or Mr. Tho. Borman's house; all the rest of the payments to be made by the 10th of November. 50£ to be paid in the year 1667 — 50£ in 1668 — the 25£ to be payd at the end of 7 years. In case Mr. Borman decease before that time, then within 12 mos. after. Mr. Tho. Borman Sen. with his 2 sons, that is Robert Kinsman & Thos. Low give bond for the performance of above. 450£. Mr. Tho. Borman shall not enter upon the land he buys of his son Daniell till the last of Oct. 1666.

Witnessed by us
John Whipple
Symon Tompson & a mark
Thomas Borman

Thomas Borman Sen.
Daniell Borman
Robert Kinsman
Thomas Low
Hannah Borman

LOW-BOREMAN FAMILY (39)

The provision for his remaining son, Thomas, is shown in a marriage settlement dated Jan. 1, 1667, which is substantially as follows :

" Whereas there is a marriage intended between the sonn of Mr. Tho. Borman & the daughter of Sargt. Jacob Perkins—he (Thomas Borman) freely gives all his lands etc. after his decease & that of his loving wife that now is, to his son Thomas. The said Thomas & Elizabeth to have their abiding place at the house of Mr. Thomas Borman and one half of whatever is raised on the farm," etc.

Thomas Borman.

Witnessed by

John Perkins

Francis Wainwright

You will meet the Perkins family later, and be amused to see that our Deacon Thomas Perkins struck just exactly such a deal with our Towne family on behalf of his daughter Phebe. (Lois Towne married Richard Dodge IV.)

Thomas Boreman's will (the original on file in the Probate Office in Salem) was made Dec. 17, 1670, when he was just past his 69th year. He added to it a codicil dated May 3, 1673, and his inventory was taken on the 26th of the same month, showing that he died in May, 1673, at the age of 72 years and 7 months. It is interesting to note that his cousin Samuel of Wethersfield, fourteen years younger, had died in April, about one month before.

Mrs. Margaret Boreman, the widow, died Nov. 25, 1679 (Essex County Records at Salem). The wills and inventories of husband and wife which are here quoted, require no comment, except that particular attention should be given to the important clause in the will of Thomas, providing for his brother Daniel, which, in connection with a similar clause in the will of their mother, Elizabeth Boreman of Claydon, fully proves Thomas Boreman's origin.

WILL OF THOMAS BOREMAN OF IPSWICH.

In the name of god Amen the seaventeeth Day of December in the yeare of our Lord god one thousand six hundred and seaventy I Thomas Boreman senior of Ipswich weake in body, but blessed be god of sound and perfect memory Doe make this my last will and Testament as followeth freely and willingly comending my spirit into the hands of god that gave it, and my body to the earth from whence I received it. And first for my wife my will is that all that part of the land in my farme that I now possesse shee shall enioy and receiue and take the Benefitt thereof During her naturall life And after her Decease to returne unto my sonne Thomas and his heires And likewise all my household stufte and my cattle I give and bequeath unto my wife During her naturall life to dispose of as shee pleases.

Item my will is that my Daughter Joanna at the day of her marriage or after as my wife shall please to dispose of it to her shalle (have) for her porsion to the value of one hundred pounds, and what shall want of such a some my will is that my sonne Thomas shall make good to my

daughter to make up the some as aforesaid ; five and forty pounds of the said hundred pounds my wife shall pay my daughter at the day of her marriage or at the age of two and twenty years, and the remainder of the said hundred pounds my will is that my sonne Thomas shall pay my daughter out of the land that my wife doth possesse during her naturall life after her decease.

Item I give and bequeath unto my sonne Daniell and his heires forever that parcell of land thatch and marsh ground conteyning sixe acres more or lesse from the Bridge to the point of the cove, to witt from the ordinarie highe water marke Provided that the said Daniell my sonne and his heires Doe from time to tyme yearely allow his Brother Thomas two dayes in a yeare to repaire the Bridge And if at any tyme my sonne Daniell or his heires be minded to sell the said parcell of land my will is that my sonne Thomas and his heires shall have the first legall offer of it.

Item I bequeath to my daughter Mary the wife of Robert Kinsman that is to say to her children five years after my wiues decease twenty pounds.

Item to my daughter Martha the wife of Thomas Loe to her children twenty pounds three yeares after the decease of my wife when my sonne Thomas shall possesse the whole farme.

Item my will is that my sonne Daniell shall have eight pounds within one yeare after my wiues decease for the use of his two sonnes at the age of one and twenty yeares and that my sonne their father shall give in securitie to my wiues executor to pay it them at the age aforesaid.

Item my will is that my sonne Kinsman shall have a foote path to goe to his land he bought of me.

Item my will is that (the lands belonging to these two my sonne Daniell and Robert Kinsman, viz ten acres belonging to the said Robert and sixe acres above said given to the said Daniell, only excepted) shall remaine and continue unto my sonne Thomas and his heires to enioy it quietly and peaceably after my wiues decease, paying those legacies aforesmentioned.

Item my will is that my Brother Daniell shall abide with my wiue while she lives, and after her Decease that he shall continue while he lives with my sonne Thomas to be mainteyned by him.

Item I will that if my Daughter Joanna be not disposed of in mariage while I live I shall leave her to my wife and to her wisdom in her mariage to be disposed of

FINALLY my will is that my wife shall be my sole Executor to see my will performed while shee lives and at her decease I leave it to her wisdom to appoint whome shee please to see the pformance of my will that shall or may not then be fully executed or pformed. And I make Simon Tomson and Thomas Burnam my well beloved friends my Overseers to see this my last will and testament duely and truly executed and pformed.

IN WITNES whereof I have heereto set my hand & seale the day and yeare abovesaid.

Sealed and delivered in the presence of us

WILLIAM HUBBARD

JOHN DANE

Anno 1673 May the 3

Memorandum whareas in the forth lyne I have thare expressed concerning my wife what she shall enioy dewring her natrall lyfe uppon good and waitie considerations I have here added a sirtten confirmation and adishon namely that my loving wife shall not only enioy cattell housall goods and lands but that if she shall ned she may also dispose of part of them as ned shall require eyther cattell mouables or land and here two I set my hand.

witnes JOHN DANE

JOHANAH B. BORMAN (illegible)

THOMAS
BORMAN
senior

Thos Borman

The 19th of June 1673 this will was opned before the worshipfull M^r Samuell Symonds dept go^r & maior Gen^l Daniell Denison the clarke being p^rsent to be the last will & testament of Thomas Borman by the oath of the wittnesses subscribed to both will & poscript & that he was of a disposing mynd as attest
ROBERT FORD Cleric

A True Inventory of the Estate of Mr. Thomas Borman of Ipswich lately decesed taken this 26th of May 1673.

Imp	The dwelling House Barne & outhouseing with all the Lands adjoyning thereunto w th is by estimation 42 Acres & halfe more or Less which 42 Acres is halfe the Lands within the river & creekes y ^t was sometime Franklings & his owne grant which wee vallew at	280-00-00
It	Ten acres of planting land on that side ye river called Buttons poynt	70-00-00
It	Neat Cattle 4 Oxen & two steers 4 yeare old	30-00-00
It	6 Cowes, 4 heyfors, 3 thre yeare olds, two yearlings, 3 calves	37-00-00
It	23 Sheep & nine lambs	13-10-00
It	one mare and young Coult & a yearling Coult	6-00-00
It	three swine	3-00-00
It	his wearing cloathes	12-00-00
It	Bedding vid: beds, bowlisters, pillowes, Ruggs, blankets & bedsteads	27-16-00
It	Linin of all sorts	16-07-00
It	in yarne	1-10-00
It	pewter & tin	4-02-00
It	in brass and Spoones	3-16-00
It	in Iron ware	3-04-00
It	in Lumber	3-05-00
It	in Bookes ¹⁴ , wheele & cards ¹⁰⁰	1-10-00
It	earthen ware	10-00
It	Corne upon the ground at	10-00-00
It	in corne & mault	7-13-00
It	Coopers tooles	5-00-00
It	Caskes, keelers, trayes & wooden dishes	1-13-00
It	Meat	1-10-00
It	guns with there furniture	2-00-00
It	a Cart, plow, Harrow and other Oxe tackling	5-00-00
It	a Fan, grinstone & Sled	16-00
It	in debts due to M ^{rs} Borman	5-19-06

The Sum totall is 553-06-06

some small things y^t were forgotten about 1-00-00

L contra the Debts owing that are knowne of besides the Legacies ordered by Will is 30-00-00

Aprized by us whose hands are underwritten

DANIELL EPFS

JOHN DANE

the marke of SIMON THOMPSON

his wife no doubt considerably younger; her surviving him some seven years indicates this. She was, of course, born in England, and may have been a daughter or sister of one of the Ipswich settlers. Her title of M^{rs} or Mistress implies the respectability of her family. If their children all lived to grow up, their number was not a large one for that day. It should not be forgotten that their family included also Thomas Boreman's brother Daniel, who lived to be at least 65, and who, though he makes no figure in Ipswich records, is to Thomas Boreman's descendants a most important personage, without the knowledge of whose existence they would have had no certainty of their English ancestry.

"THE LAST WILL & TESTAMENT OF THE WIDDOW BORMAN."

I Margret Borman bequeath to my doughter Kinsman one fether bed & boulster & a paire of shetes & a red Rugg one pillow one pare of cotten pilo beres one course shete

To my doughter Loe all my peuter & a pare of fine shetese & half a dason of napkines, two cowes that are in there handes & a black gounce & a red petticot only one pint pot reserved.

To my doughter Fellowes all my corse lining, sauving one shete, & a spit & a chafing dish, a sarge gounce & one petticote & a silke scarfe & a hud & all the lining she hath in hur hands of myne & one bead blancut & also a pint pot I resarved out of my daughter Loes.

To my sonne Dannill a trundle bead, the bead & a ruge & a blancut & his wife a cloth petticot and a sarge petticot & a wastecote & a great Chest & foure chayres & a cow he hath in his handes, & a debet he owes me I give it him & half a dason of shepe he hath in his handes & to his wife a new hat.

I give to my sonn Thomas thre shepe and the bedsted & tabell I give him a payer of cobirnes & will leave in his handes thre cowes, one heffer, two oxen, and two steres for seaven yeares & the seaven yeres end what is left besyds klering my debtes is to be deuided as foloweth, thre parts to my doughter Kindsman & the forth part between Martha & Johana & to this my last will I leave my sonn Thomas to be my soule exceceter the night day of August in the year of Grace 1679

I give to Dinah my sonne mayd two trayes, a milk keler & a payele.

JOHN DANE

MARGRET BORMAN

JONE GIDINS

and a marke

In the margent thus half a duson arpurns & half a duson shifts equally to be devyded betwene my doughters.

An Inventory of all the goods & chatels of Mrs. Margerit Borman Late of Ipswich desseased taken & aprised by us whos names are underwritten this 19th March 1679: 80

it	All her wareing clothes Linon woollin	15-00-00
it	a fether beed & boalster, one payer of sheets, one rede rugg, one pillow, one payer of pillow beers, one sheet	7-06-00
it	a payer of blankits, a sute of curtins w th rodes	2-00-00
it	in peuter	3-00-00
it	a payer of sheets, a duz napkines	1-15-00
it	a pillion cloth	12-00
it	one iron pott, a brase pott, one Irone mortar	1-02-00
it	one chest, one boxe	11-00
it	in Linon table cloths, napcins, & sheets	8-00-00
it	one spitt, a brass chafin ditch,	15-00
it	a beed, one rugg, two blankets	2-15-00
it	a large chest, 4 chayers	18-00
it	one bedstead, one table, a payer of cobirons	2-10-00
it	paille, trayes & tubes	10-00
it	two oxen, two steers	17-00-00
it	one hayfor	2-00-00
it	five cowes, two of them in Tho. Loo his hands & one in Daniell Borman's hands	2-14-00
		84-08-00
it	depts due to the estat	4-00-00
		88-08-00
	also depts due from the estat	18-01-00

JOHN WHIFFLE

DANIELL HOVEY Jun.

After having such beautiful English vital statistics, it is a shame to have to report to you that either early Ipswich records did not survive or were not well recorded. The children's birth years are pretty close. It appears that all of the marriages were in Ipswich. It is possible there were other children who died young.

Children of Thomas and Margaret (Cffin) Boreman:

Mary (ca 1633-17--)	m.	ca 1656	Robert Kinsman Jr (1629-1712)
Daniel (1637-27 Apr 1708)	12 Apr 1662	Hannah Hutchinson (1639-	
+Martha (1641-22 Jan 1720)	4 Jul 1660	Thomas Low, Jr. (1631-1712)	
Thomas (1643- 3 Oct 1719)	1 Jan 1667/8	Elizabeth Perkins (1649-1718)	
Joanna (1646- 1732)	29 Jan 1671/2	Isaac Fellows (1635-1721)	

Robert Kinsman, Jr. was a glazier. He is renowned in history as one of the 6 men who voted in 1687 that Andros had no right to tax the people without consent of the Assembly. They were fined and spent 21 days in jail. They had 9 children. He was later a Quartermaster.

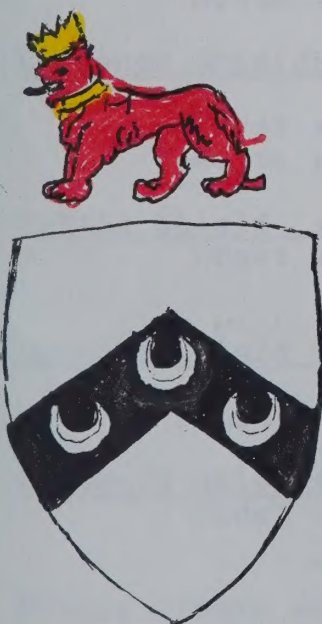
It was Thomas and Elizabeth who had the son Offin and at least four others. See page 33 for notes about him. Daniel and Hannah, who was from Salem Village, bought a large farm in Topsfield and were a successful farm. "History of Topsfield" page 33 has a couple of paragraphs about them. Oh yes, Thomas Boreman II was a miller. His widowed mother, Margaret, lived with Thomas and also his handicapped Uncle Daniel. He was public spirited, serving on various committees. In March 1697, he was before the court because of some kind of an altercation with a Lt. Thomas Hart. whom he evidently insulted.

We follow Martha who married Thomas Low, Jr., and have read about that couple on pages 11 through 13 of this section.

ANTROBUS.



Lawrence.



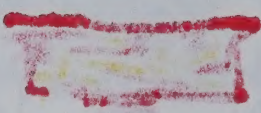
Tuttle



Burnham



Cogswell



Coat of Arms of the City of London

London



Coat of Arms of the City of London



Coat of Arms of the City of London



Coat of Arms of the City of London



Coat of Arms of the City of London



Coat of Arms of the City of London

ANTROBUS-LAWRENCE-TUTTLE-BURNHAM-COGSWELL

Our Dodge-related ancestral families on the bottom half of Chart No. 2 were so closely allied that it is hard to tell about one of them without relating to several of the others. The central figure, the one who tied them all together, was a remarkable lady by the name of Joan Antrobus. We are descended from her and both of her husbands, Thomas Lawrence and John Tuttle, also their children Marie Lawrence who married Thomas Burnham; and Simon Tuttle who married Sarah Cogswell.

As you can see, all five families were members of the upper crust, especially the Lawrences who previously had royal connections. (As a matter of interest, George Washington shared part of our ancestral line--that is why his older brother's first name was Lawrence.) This will have to be broken down into segments so it will not be too long, but don't you think the group of coats-of-arms makes a nice display?

Antrobus Shield: Lozangy or & azure on a pale gules three estoiles of the first

Crest : Issuing out of rays proper a unicorn's head couped argent, horned & maned or, gorged with a wreath of laurel vert

Supporters: Two white horses proper

Motto : Del memor, gratus amicis

Lawrence Shield: Argent a raggedy cross & chief gules - on the shield a leopard gold

Crest : A demi-turbot in pale gules, the tail upwards

Motto : In cruce salus

Tuttle Shield : Or on a chevron sable three crescents argent

Crest : A lion standant gules ducally crowned and collared or

Burnham Shield : Gules a chevron or, between three lion's heads erased argent

Crest : Not mentioned

Cogswell Shield: Argent, a cross between four escallops sable

Crest : A stag lodged sable attired or

Notes: There were a number of Tuttle families by various spellings, it seems the majority of them in Ireland. Which ones came from which original stock is uncertain. The arms used here belonged to the Hertfordshire Tuttle family. The Burnham arms used here are the ones writer has encountered in the literature, which said they are ours. At this point I can neither prove nor disprove that. The Cogswell arms here were definitely those used in Ipswich by John Cogswell (same as those used by Cogeshall family). Much earlier They used different arms which will be shown in the text.

